

# **UFO ALIENS:**

*the deadly secret*

**Jonathan Gray**

## **About the author**

Jonathan Gray has travelled the world to gather data on ancient mysteries. A serious student of the paranormal and pre-history, he has investigated numerous archaeological sites, and has also penetrated some largely un-explored areas, including parts of the Amazon headwaters. Between lecturing worldwide, the author has hosted newspaper columns and contributed to various magazines.

## **Illustration Credits**

If I failed to credit any illustrations reproduced in this book, I offer my apologies. Any sources omitted will be appropriately acknowledged in all future editions of this book.

*Cover design: Jim Pinkoski*

### Other books by Jonathan Gray

Dead Men's Secrets  
 Sting of the Scorpion  
 The Ark Conspiracy  
 Curse of the Hatana Gods  
 64 Secrets Ahead of Us  
 Bizarre Origin of Egypt's Ancient Gods  
 The Lost World of Giants  
 Discoveries: Questions Answered  
 Sinai's Exciting Secrets  
 Ark of the Covenant  
 The Killing of Paradise Planet  
 Surprise Witness  
 The Corpse Came Back  
 The Discovery That's Toppling Evolution  
 Stolen Identity: Jesus Christ – History or Hoax?  
 The Da Vinci Code Hoax  
 Who's Playing Jesus Games?  
 The Sorcerers' Secret  
 Was This a Miracle?  
 Welcome, Then Betrayal  
 The 2012 Prophecy  
 Update International Volume 1  
 Update International Volume 2  
 Update International Volume 3  
 Update International Volume 4  
 Update International Volume 5  
 Update International Volume 6  
 How Long Was Jesus in the Tomb?

### E-books from

[http://www.beforeus.com/shopcart\\_ebooks.html](http://www.beforeus.com/shopcart_ebooks.html) :

In Search of Lost Cities  
 Into the Unknown  
 In a Coffin in Egypt  
 What Happened to the Tower of Babel?  
 The Magic of the Golden Proportion  
 4 Major Discoveries  
 The Big Dating Blunder  
 Curse of the Pharaohs

First published 2006

Second printing 2007

Third printing 2009

Copyright © Jonathan Gray 2009

All rights reserved

Limited portions of this work may be copied  
for study or review purposes without written  
permission, provided that the source is duly  
credited.

# CONTENTS

<i>Chapter</i>	<i>Page</i>
PROLOGUE.....	9
<b>Part 1: ALIEN CONSPIRACY?</b>	
1 <i>Are “space beings” visiting us? – “THE ALIEN RAPED ME”</i> .....	15
2 <i>Drawings and artefacts - ALIEN RELICS?</i> .....	20
3 <i>Abductions and other outrages – HOSTILE INTRUDERS</i> .....	28
4 <i>The Roswell incident – CRASHED UFO, ALIEN BODIES?</i> .....	37
5 <i>ET crop circles? – MYSTERY RINGS</i> .....	52
6 <i>From another dimension? – WHO ARE THE ALIENS?</i> .....	56
7 <i>ETs and DNA – DID ALIENS CREATE US?</i> .....	65
<b>Part 2: THE INTELLIGENCE REPORT</b>	
8 <i>Archaeology’s verdict – THE BOOK ALIENS HATE</i> .....	85
9 <i>Prophecies - THE CITY THAT VANISHED INTO THE SEA</i> .....	105

10	<i>Prophecies –</i> <b>UNCANNY PROPHECIES OF EGYPT.....</b>	<b>118</b>
11	<i>Prophecies –</i> <b>SEVEN FATEFUL WORDS.....</b>	<b>128</b>
12	<i>Prophecies –</i> <b>BABYLON’S LAST NIGHT.....</b>	<b>136</b>
13	<i>Prophecies –</i> <b>FAILED ALIEN PROPHECIES.....</b>	<b>153</b>
14	<i>Accuracy of transmission -</i> <b>THE FORGETFUL PROFESSOR.....</b>	<b>160</b>
15	<i>Secret code -</i> <b>YOU CAN’T WRITE THIS BOOK!.....</b>	<b>172</b>
16	<i>One versus the other -</i> <b>ALIENS AND THE INTELLIGENCE REPORT.....</b>	<b>186</b>

### **Part 3: LEGION OF LUCIFER**

17	<i>Life in deep space? -</i> <b>ARE OTHER WORLDS INHABITED?.....</b>	<b>195</b>
18	<i>The original “star wars” -</i> <b>REBELLION IN OUTER SPACE.....</b>	<b>199</b>
19	<i>The sinister Legion of Lucifer -</i> <b>PLANET HIJACKED.....</b>	<b>210</b>
20	<i>The Big Picture –</i> <b>MOVES AND COUNTER MOVES.....</b>	<b>221</b>
21	<i>ETs and the occult -</i> <b>ALIENS AND SÉANCE SPIRITS.....</b>	<b>227</b>
22	<i>ETs and the occult –</i> <b>DEAD LOVER RETURNED?.....</b>	<b>239</b>

23	<i>ETs and the occult –</i> <b>CLINCHING CLUES</b> .....	243
----	---	-----

## **Part 4: WHICH SOURCE IS OLDER?**

24	<i>Pre-Flood world under threat -</i> <b>NO WAY OUT</b> .....	259
25	<i>The Deluge -</i> <b>THE DAY OF THE DEAD</b> .....	263
26	<i>Enki and the Sumeria cover-up –</i> <b>THE LUCIFER LIE</b> .....	272
27	<i>Dating the Flood -</i> <b>TEN SURPRISE WITNESSES</b> .....	290
28	<i>Independent family trees –</i> <b>NOAH WHO?</b> .....	305
29	<i>The language break-up incident –</i> <b>THE BATTLE OF DRIPPING GARMENTS</b> .....	314
30	<i>Dating shocks –</i> <b>HISTORY ARTIFICIALLY LENGTHENED</b> .....	324
31	<i>Dating shocks –</i> <b>SCHOLARS IN CONFUSION</b> .....	331
32	<i>Origin of the races –</i> <b>SO MANY RACES – HOW LONG?</b> .....	342
33	<i>Genesis: who wrote it and when? –</i> <b>THE GENESIS MYTH?</b> .....	349
34	<i>Genesis: compared to others -</i> <b>CRITICS CONFOUNDED</b> .....	358
35	<i>Genesis: the table of nations –</i> <b>“INSTANT” SNAP-SHOT IN TIME</b> .....	368

## **Part 5: FINAL POWER PLAY**

36	<i>Incredible safety in a name –</i> <b>HALTING A UFO ABDUCTION.....</b>	<b>379</b>
37	<i>The Jesus feud -</i> <b>ETs AND SPIRITISM TODAY.....</b>	<b>387</b>
38	<i>Mind programming –</i> <b>ABSOLUTE POWER.....</b>	<b>402</b>
39	<i>A showdown looming -</i> <b>CAN YOU SURVIVE IT?.....</b>	<b>411</b>
40	<i>The power is with you -</i> <b>INVINCIBLE MESSENGERS.....</b>	<b>417</b>
	<b>EPILOGUE.....</b>	<b>426</b>
	<b>APPENDIX.....</b>	<b>427</b>
	<b>INDEX.....</b>	<b>445</b>



# PROLOGUE

“He forced me!” cried Angie.

“I’ll get that alien b.....!!! He’s invaded our marriage!” roared Roland Brown.

The enraged engineer set his mind to track and avenge himself on the intrusive alien. Had it physically happened? At first he wasn’t sure. Real or not, what mattered was that Angie had genital bruises. She believed the event had happened. Now Roland did too. And now he was madly obsessed.

Those cattle mutilations on August 17 and the sexual abuse of his wife – were they linked?

His tortured mind was boiling with questions. Roland Brown needed answers. He would not rest until he got them. Who were these brutes? Why did they claim Angie belonged to them? What was their plan? What would happen next? How could he – Roland Brown – stop them?

According to writers like Erich von Danicken and Zecharia Sitchin these aliens had been coming here for a long time... and even brought civilization to Planet Earth. Civilization? No, barbarism, cursed Roland.

Today, with millions of claimed UFO sightings... encounters with aliens... alleged kidnappings... investigators everywhere were coming right out and calling it an *epidemic*.

So what *was* going on here? Were governments really covering up hard core evidence of “other world” visitors – evidence of a crashed flying saucer and dead alien bodies from the “Roswell incident”? And what about crop circles? Or was it all just a hoax?

Frankly, now, have you yourself ever wondered about these alleged visitors? Whether they’re from other planets... from inside the earth... or just plain imagination? Just who or what are they... these alleged intruders?

***“You will never know the answer unless you read the Intelligence Report,”*** archaeologist Brad Sheed had told Roland. ***“The Intelligence Report?”*** **“Yes, but you must first satisfy yourself that the *Intelligence Report* is reliable. Because it’s either the most valid information source on our planet concerning aliens – or the most fraudulent con job ever foisted on mankind.”**

Over recent years there had been a feverish campaign to discredit the *Intelligence Report*. In fact, there appeared to be an obsessive hatred against it. Why? Could it contain something so explosive that certain people were desperate for us never to know? Roland pondered.

Whatever, because the stakes are so high in regard to the extraterrestrial phenomenon, we shall subject that “Report” to the most rigorous scientific tests. You will see *The Intelligence Report* and the Sumerian *Lost Book of Enki* clash head on! Only one holds the key to the alien identity. But which?

As for the *Intelligence Report*, its credentials can be established or shattered by testing it on these four counts:

- its historical truthfulness (or otherwise)
- Its key claim: the “ability” to foretell the future
- The reliability of its transmission to us
- The self-checking code it is claimed to possess

If the *Intelligence Report* FAILS to pass these tests, then by all means dump it. But if it DOES survive these integrity checks, then the ***inside information*** it holds may have the potential to blow our entrenched Western Establishment sky high. As well as the deadly alien secret.

In any case, Roland Brown was determined to know the truth.

So who are these aliens - really? Why do they claim to own not just Roland’s wife, but each of us - you, me and even our children?

And what are they planning?

Even more frightening... is somebody close to you being programmed for something too horrible to contemplate?

What is the Legion of Lucifer... What is their diabolical agenda? What mind-shocking revelation did the CE-4 team of Florida uncover?

Are you ready for this? Is it possible that your life could depend on it?...



**Part 1:**

**ALIEN CONSPIRACY?**



# 1

*Are “space beings” visiting us? -*

## **“THE ALIEN RAPED ME!”**

*“I’ll get that b.....!”* exclaimed Roland Brown. “He has wrecked my marriage.”

Roland Brown slammed his hand across the sink. Utensils smashed to the floor. The robust, solidly-built engineer was shaking with rage and desperation.

For five months his wife Angie had suffered painful marks around her genital area. A tumor had developed. But worse, she was no longer the woman he had married.

Back in August, Angie, a dental nurse at Thornton High School, and normally a happy, bubbling person, had started complaining of nausea. And she seemed to dread coming to bed. In fact, her whole personality had changed.

She agreed to visit a psychiatrist, then a hypnotist. But neither she nor her husband were prepared for the shock...

Under hypnotherapy Angie described having been abducted and raped by an alien. Whether the experience was real or not, this “rapist” was now controlling her.

As time passed, Angie gave herself over completely to her alleged captor. She became strangely obsessed in the occult. Roland felt locked out of her life. And he could take no more.

Her emotions were hijacked. His wife was in love with her “abductor”.

This intruder now controlled both their lives.

He had to get to the heart of this. Or it would drive him insane.

A tough skeptic, Roland Brown began to recall something else quite weird that had happened about the same time.

On August 17, he and some others had been called out to Jim Breech's farm in the valley. He remembered the date, because it was the night after the monthly school board meeting.

Four of Breech's cows lay dead. Precise "laser-precision" cuts were observed in the cattle. They had been totally drained of blood, yet there was no trace of blood. And certain organs had been surgically removed from their bodies. Their bones were also clearly cut, with no bone fragments around the cut.

The marks found on the animals were not consistent with attacks by predators such as wolves or coyotes. Neither were there any signs of a struggle, footprints, or tire tracks found anywhere on the ground around the bodies.

Oh yes, there was one other thing. For what it was worth, the local news had reported the sighting of a UFO (Unidentified Flying Object) that same night. About the same time that Angie...

Brown's head began to spin. The UFO... the cattle mutilations... Angie's abduction and rape... was there some link?

But what most enraged Roland was Angie's assertion that this "alien" – son of a bitch – claimed he had every right to kidnap her because "she belonged to them".

The next morning Roland took two weeks' break. His first visit was to the town library. He returned home with an armful of books on so-called "space visitors" and "alien abductions".

Roland had always dismissed UFOs and extraterrestrials (ETs) as a crackpot idea. But he was also aware that belief in the reality of UFOs was growing rapidly at all levels of society, throughout the world.

## **Claimed sightings worldwide**

Numerous polls (Gallup, Roper, PBS/Nova) were claiming that up to 20 million Americans had seen a UFO. And shockingly, more than 4 million even claimed to have been physically abducted by "space beings".



Sightings of UFOs all over the world were almost countless. Many famous people – including Jimmy Carter and astronaut Gordon Cooper – claimed to have seen a UFO.

Sightings were so numerous that now many organizations were dedicated especially to the investigation of such reports.



*UFO photographed over Mexico*

Roland began to pore through the facts. He was not surprised to read that impartial investigations concluded 90 to 95 percent of sightings to be mistakenly identified, and explainable as natural phenomena or man-made technologies.

Mistaken objects included satellites, meteors, rocket launches or vehicles, weather balloons, glowing crystal clouds, lens shaped clouds, lightning, flocks of birds, aircraft, reflections of the sun on various objects, car headlights, street lights, kites, parachutes and insect swarms.

Of course, as expected, some others had proven to be outright lies or imaginary events.

## **Abduction reports**

But it was the reported abductions that grabbed his

interest.

This he must research carefully. Roland laid down the book and went and got himself a drink.

Abductions... reported abductions... Pulling a rug around his legs, Roland studied earnestly. A large percentage of these might simply be psychological delusions, said the experts. Or hoaxes or shallow attempts to gain attention and fame. But that didn't fit Angie. He knew her too well for that.

Roland's eyes popped wide as he read what followed. According to the research, too many ordinary people with nothing to gain, but more to lose, go to their graves never swerving from their accounts of such events.

Angie... she fitted that profile. The anger again welled up inside him.

Yes, the evidence suggested that 5 to 10 percent of reported experiences might have some substance in fact. Beyond question, something mysterious, quite real and very serious was going on.

A deep compassion swelled within him, as he read of other people who had experienced either inexplicable sightings or even terrifying "abductions" – just like Angie – often with distressing consequences, without ever finding out why.

## **So, what are these UFOs, and where are their occupants from?**

He had to get answers. These so-called "aliens" who were appearing and disrupting decent peoples' lives... who were they? Where were they coming from?

What was going on here?

Roland wiped the sweat from his brow. He felt enormously agitated. The question was torturing him. Who? Who? Who were these intruders?

Because of movies such as "ET", "Close Encounters", "Star Trek" and "Star Wars", some folk he knew believed UFOs to be from somewhere out in space.

Others were convinced they were part of a United States secret military project working in conjunction with aliens.

And others believed that the earth, below the crust, was hollow, with its own sun, and that was where these craft and their aliens were coming from.

And yes, Roland recalled, still others thought the “aliens” were angels who had come to warn the world of impending doom.

Then there was some research that suggested ancient high tech man (of this earth!) had once made machines utilizing mercury and/or vortex implosion in their propulsion systems. (Jonathan Gray, *Dead Men's Secrets*, pp. 303-304. <http://www.beforeus.com> )

Roland thought about that. Some might say their accomplishments had paralleled the work of the Nazis in developing flying saucers at the end of World War II and the allies' further development of the technology in “black programs”.

Of course, Roland was aware that a top secret aircraft programme had been underway for decades. Undoubtedly, some UFO appearances were related to this.

But by no means did this explain all the evidence. It was now apparent that “aliens” of some sort were also interacting with mankind.

The question still remained, who were these intruders... these beasts, one of whom had raped Angie?

Roland was seething. He wanted to scream at what had happened to his wife.

## 2

### ***Drawings and artefacts -***

## **ALIEN RELICS?**

Again, Roland rested his head back on the couch as the thoughts came streaming.

He'd heard of Erich von Danicken, that writer who created a sensation back in the 1970s when he claimed aliens had been visiting this planet for a long time... and had even created the ancient technology now being discovered.

Then, more recently, Zecharia Sitchin was saying that the reason ancient Sumerian culture had been able to spring up suddenly, out of nowhere – was because of aliens from outer space.

According to Sitchin, those extraterrestrials were known as Anunnaki. A group of 50 astronauts from a planet called Nibiru, with their leader called Enki, splashed down in the waters of the Persian Gulf. Some Anunnaki were sent to mine gold in Africa. When the toil became unbearable, Enki 'created' 'primitive workers' by mixing the genes of male Anunnaki with the eggs of early female hominoids, to bring about *Homo sapiens* - you and me.

Roland also recalled having read somewhere about a group of alleged ancient astronauts dropping out of the sky and leaving behind some pulsating discs in caves over in Asia. He had read that only recently...

### **Are the Dropa discs extraterrestrial?**

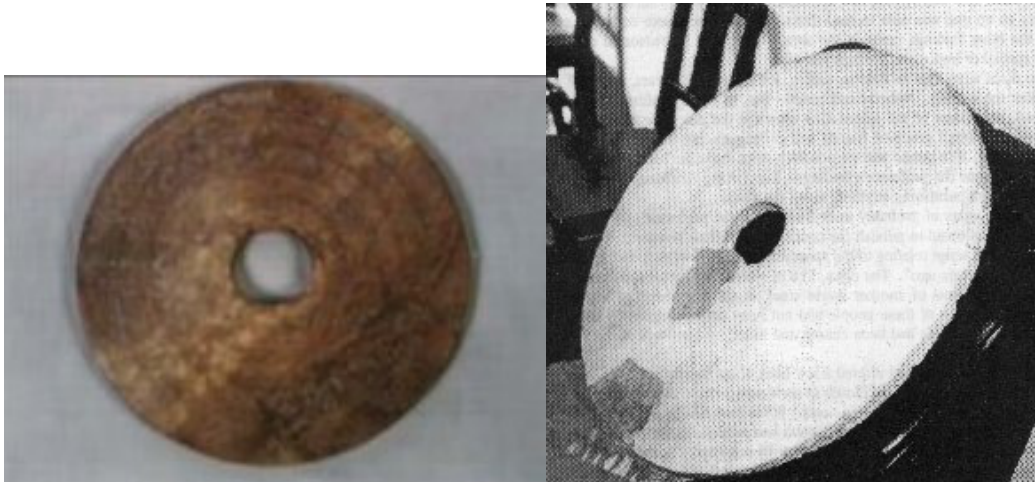
It was in 1938, high in the mountains of BayanKara-Ula, on the border of China and Tibet. Archaeologists were surveying a series of interlocking caves.

They came upon a cache of 716 stone discs. Each had a hole in the center, like that on a gramophone record. And from the hole a double groove traced out a spiral to the

circumference. These, however, were not sound tracks but some kind of writing. The discs contained large amounts of cobalt and were said to rhythmically pulsate as though they had electric charges in them, or were part of an electric circuit.

Some of the discs were given by the discoverer, Chi Pu Tei, a professor of archaeology at Beijing University, to the University and kept there for 20 years, from 1942 to 1962. Although their present whereabouts are uncertain, they might still be at Beijing University.

An Austrian engineer by the name of Wegerer had taken some photographs in 1974, when he was on a guided China tour. In Banpo-Museum in Xian, the capital of the Province of Shensi, China, he came across two discs which exactly met the descriptions known from the Bayan-Kara-Ula of 1962. And he could even recognize hieroglyphs in spiral-like grooves, although they were partly crumbled way.



*Ancient discs. Photos: M. Wegerer*

According to the translator, Dr Nui, one of the lines of the hieroglyphs read:

*The Dropas came down from the clouds in their aircraft. The men, women and children of the neighboring peoples (Ham) hid in the caves ten times before sunrise. When at last they understood the sign language of the Dropas, they realised that the newcomers had peaceful intentions...*

Roland smiled to himself. “Obviously some people don’t know about the amazingly high man-made civilization of the past,” he chuckled. “So they like to think of the discs as evidence of visitors from outer space.”

However, Roland knew better. He had become familiar with evidence for ancient mathematics, metallurgy, megalithic construction, mechanical devices, advanced medical practice, electricity, weaponry, flight, and so on. (For such evidence, see Jonathan Gray, *Dead Men’s Secrets*. <<http://www.beforeus.com>>) Yes, the ancients were quite capable of making those discs. And flying, too.

Ancient flight? The evidence was more substantial than many folk realized. So it was natural that folk unaware of such ancient knowledge would find it difficult to explain the Dropa discs in terms of earthly experience. Therefore they would find it tempting to suggest that the discs – and the Dropa - had come from outer space.

Yet truth is often very simple. Memories of “gods’ from the skies are explainable as the recollection by primitive people of visits from contemporary civilizations who had aircraft. Similar reactions have occurred in our day.

Roland remembered a report from Vietnam. A helicopter made an emergency landing in a remote village. The natives greeted the crewmen as gods and offered sacrifices to them!

And during World War II, in Papua New Guinea Allied airmen were mistaken for gods landing with gifts from the sky.

As for those skeletons found near to the Dropa disc find – there were similar looking people living today in the vicinity! No good reason for stating them to be non-human.

From all the research worldwide, Roland suspected these discs could well belong to the man-made high technology era of 2200 to 900 BC.

In any case, none of the ancient artefacts found on earth was composed of material unknown to earth. And significantly, their technological makeup conformed with the development of our own modern civilization.

## Are “space men” drawings evidence of ETs?

With a smile, Roland looked over a set of drawings known as the Lightning Brothers, found at Delemere in Australia’s Northern Territory – and interpreted by von Danicken as evidence of space visitors.

These drawings showed two men wearing tight-fitting zippered suits. One, four meters tall, seemed to have a grid of radiating wires around his face, like a space helmet. The other, five meters tall, seemed to be wearing a round helmet with an antenna, and was carrying a weapon.

Strange, for such supposedly ancient drawings.

Except, as it turned out, they were not ancient at all. According to elders of the Wardaman tribe, they were painted over a period of 15 years at the beginning of the 20<sup>th</sup> century!

Roland chuckled.

The story behind the brothers was that they are fighting over a woman.



The small one is carrying an axe, and the taller brother's helmet is a headdress. The zippers represent the men's backbones.

The object around the head of a person in the drawing looked something like a space helmet.

Roland raised himself up and reached for the bookcase. He pulled down von Danicken's "gods in chariots" book and looked through it again.

Among a number of similar drawings there was one which von Danicken said was an astronaut about to be blasted off into space. He described one of them as being like a racing motorcyclist bending forward while manipulating a number of different controls.

Was this a picture of an ancient space man? Oh, come on!

Roland had shown these pictures to Al Coster at Thornton High. Al was a top notch researcher. And Al had pointed out that this had nothing to do with an astronaut. It was simply a picture of a ruler or noble person being carried around in a chair. Among the Incas and other South American nations, this was a common practice, where teams of men carried their rulers and kings over long distances.

In this picture, the man is sitting sideways, with his feet sitting on the side of the chair or throne. He is naked and barefoot, except for a loincloth (hardly appropriate for a technologically advanced alien to be flying around the galaxy in). The alleged mask on his face is merely an ornament. And two snakes are sticking out near his head. The national bird of Guatemala also figures prominently in the picture.

And the strange markings that supposedly indicate flames and gases shooting up from the unit? Just the legs of the chair, nothing more. In fact, Roland could easily trace the arms, legs and backrest of the chair. And the pedal? Just a seashell (a Mayan symbol associated with death). And the alleged exhaust? Nothing but a representation of a sacred maize plant.

The whole thing was just a religious depiction to decorate the tomb of a deceased ruler.



So what about other pictures in which von Danicken saw helmets and antennae? Again, these had turned out to be common things like masks, hair pieces and even bows and arrows.

Roland Brown grinned. It seemed that von Danicken saw what he wanted to see.

But all this did not cancel out the fact that there had been authentic reports of encounters with UFOs and aliens from ancient times until now. These aliens had been written about. And some pictures drawn of them.

Indeed, someone had been in contact with human beings on this planet since the very beginning of time.

### **Today's UFO phenomenon**

Roland the skeptic had always focused on the UFO hoaxes. And those were many.

But now he saw that in numerous other cases, something real was involved. These objects –whatever they were - had even been caught on radar and film.

And were those who saw UFOs – or reported abductions - irresponsible or mentally unbalanced? Not at all. Reports were consistently coming from men and women who were balanced, mentally sound people.

Angie was as balanced as they come.

Reports were *not* coming from mental institutions.

Roland suddenly pulled himself up. “Wait a minute! What on earth’s happening to me? Here am I, a skeptic, admitting that many alleged encounters between humans and UFO aliens are real.”

But they are. Look what’s happened to Angie!

And Roland wasn’t the only one. He was discovering that many others who investigated the subject, including experts in their field, who started out as skeptics, usually end up quite convinced that there are non-human entities in deliberate, intelligent communication.

Roland felt sick as his mind returned to those aliens... those profaners of his marriage... those rapists. The anger inside him surged, ready to explode.

Where are these intruders from? Other planets? Or where?

## **Who are they? Why are they here?**

They claim to be benefactors. Benefactors? That's a sick joke!

If they are NOT benefactors, then why are they showing themselves? What do they want?

Roland was now so immersed in the subject, he couldn't eat.

These ETs claimed to be from planets of various star systems. They claimed to be from the Pleiades, Orion, Zeta Reticuli, Sirius or its dark companion, Ganymede – or even from elsewhere in our own solar system, places like Venus or Mars.

He downed a glass of water, and studied on.

Well, of all things! Roland's eyes widened. So some actually claim that their ancestors were humans, but that they have evolved to a higher state on another planet. And others claim they are reincarnated humans!

The engineer found himself building up a profile of these intruders – and their claims. He was captivated.

They were describing in detail their supposed lifestyle. They were speaking of alien beings on other planets who are evil. And of problems encountered in outer space. Problems in their evolution, just like we experience on earth. And they talked of good and evil ETs.

ALL of them, it seemed, were claiming to serve a Higher Being, a Master who controls the universe.

They were saying they had come to warn earthlings about the course humans had taken, especially with respect to nuclear warfare and pollution.

“Oh, come on,” Roland heard himself saying. “What is going on here?”

He rolled off the couch and stood up to stretch.

“Well, it seems we’re not alone...” Was he – Roland Brown – admitting this? He shook his head. A stroll outside in the crisp air. That’s what he needed.

Okay, who were they... these perverts, these intruders, these rapists?

### 3

#### ***Abductions and other outrages -***

## **HOSTILE INTRUDERS**

Roland just couldn't sleep that night for thinking about Angie... and that alien.

This was the eighth day of his research. He had been mulling over the report of a certain woman who allegedly had been abducted by aliens.

Under hypnosis, she recalled the event. She believed she was beamed up to a space ship.... And even given a tour. The alleged 'incubatorium' startled her. It was a special room. And in it were containers of liquid containing fetuses of hybrids. She was told that one of the fetuses belonged to her.

Another abductee believed she had been shown rooms containing hybrid babies. She was forced to hold one of them. And she was told it was her own child, who needed its mother's contact. She even remembered breastfeeding it, even though she was not actually pregnant or lactating at the time.

These news stories haunted him. Roland tossed and turned. The harder he tried to sleep, the more sleep shrank from him.

Nowadays, this was the most controversial aspect of UFOlogy, the claim that humans were being abducted by aliens.

But reports of claimed abductions were coming in from all over the world. If true, such terrifying abduction experiences were almost at plague proportions.

Roland's mind wouldn't rest. He lay awake recalling various UFO reports.

There was one thing that seemed odd. During an experience, a surprising number of abductees encountered *more than one type* of alien. On the same single spaceship. What could that mean?

There was one group known as the greys. Yet not just the greys, but every possible combination of grey; as well as blond,

widow's peak, insectoid and reptilian. And all *during a single abduction*, aboard the same craft or in the same facility!

First time abductees had reported being taken to facilities underground where they saw grotesque hybrid creatures. They had reported seeing nurseries of hybrid humanoid fetuses, as well as vats of colored liquid crammed with parts of human bodies.

In those facilities, they had seen other humans being drained of blood. They reported seeing them mutilated, flayed, their arms and legs being taken off, and the lifeless victims being stacked like cords of wood.

Some abductees had reported that they were threatened with the same fate if they didn't cooperate with their captors.

They reported being jeered at, scoffed at. And some abductees had been injected with unknown fluids.

Abductees had been subjected to extremely painful experiments or procedures. These acts were necessary, the aliens had said, but with no explanation why. Adults and children alike had been subjected to painful genital and anal probes.

As Roland was discovering, reports of such bizarre acts were not a rarity. They were common. Multiple reports from unrelated cases confirmed that these were not the product of a single deranged mind. And contrary to the claims of many UFO researchers, experiences of abduction were not limited to a uniform pattern of events.

## **Physical aftermath**

Initially an abductee may have no conscious recollection of what has occurred. However, he or she may suffer significant after-effects for weeks, or even years later.

Nausea is felt, as well as pain or lesions in various parts of the body, particularly in the genital region.

Often there will be found marks on their bodies. Not just the well known scoops or straight line scars, but single or multiple punctures, sizeable bruises, triangles of various sorts, and three and four fingered claw marks.

Female victims of alien encounters frequently suffer gynaecological problems. These often lead to cysts, tumors, breast and uterus cancer, and to hysterectomies.

Quite a large number of abductees succumb to serious illnesses which they did not have prior to the abduction. The result has been surgery or debilitation, and even death from causes which doctors are unable to identify.

The bottom line is this: Many people have been hurt by UFO aliens. The number of people killed is unknown.

## **Mental aftermath**

Whether their experiences are real or not, abductees are never the same again. Their personalities and their perception of the world are both forever altered. The majority of researchers have noticed that the person undergoes a belief change. It is suggested that this may be the very reason for the abductions of so many humans.

Donna Higbee, abduction researcher and hypnotherapist, became alarmed as she saw dramatic attitude changes in patients who had experienced an alien abduction. She writes:

I noticed a drastic change... in the attitudes of several of the abductees from one meeting to the next. People who had been traumatized all their lives by ongoing abductions and had only anger and mistrust for their non-human abductors suddenly started saying they had been told/shown that everything that has happened to them was for their own good, that the abductors are highly spiritual beings and are helping them (the abductee) to evolve spiritually. By accepting this information, the abductees stopped fighting abduction and instead *became passive and controlled*. When I checked with other researchers, I found that this was a pattern that was repeating itself over and over again around the country. ("New Abductee Trend", <[users1.ee.net /pmas\\_on/new\\_trend.html](http://users1.ee.net/~pmas_on/new_trend.html)>, August 27, 2003. Emphasis mine)

Strange as it may seem, some abductees eventually begin to welcome their ordeals. The same effect has sometimes been

seen with kidnap victims or terrorist-held hostages. A prisoner starts to sympathise, and even cooperate with his captors.

There has been seen a pattern of repeated abductions where the victims give themselves over completely to their abductors. Many develop a strange interest in the occult. Surveys overwhelmingly reveal that the majority of alien abductees subsequently develop an interest and open participation in New Age/occultic and Eastern-type mystical religions. ("UFOs and Alien Abductions," [www.christianinformation.org/ufo2.html](http://www.christianinformation.org/ufo2.html), December 20, 2002)



Researcher John Keel, a life-long UFOlogist and author of some of the biggest-selling UFO research books of all time, reveals:

Millions of people have been affected at least temporarily by UFO contact, [and] thousands have gone insane and ended up in mental institutions after their experiences with these things began. (John Keel, *Stranger Creatures From Time and Space*. Greenwich, CT.: Fawcett Publishing, 1970, p. 189. Cited in John Ankerberg and John Weldon, *The Facts on UFOs and Other Supernatural Phenomena*. Eugene, OR.: Harvest House Publishers, 1992, p. 16)

These experiences have left a trail of shattered lives and wrecked emotions.

### **Kidnapped against their will**

If these aliens are benevolent “space brothers”, Roland asked himself, why do they avoid revealing themselves openly? Why, instead, do they rely on “middle of the night” kidnappings to interbreed with humans?

In America alone, according to research polls such as the Roper poll, as many as 4 million citizens from all walks of life claim to have been kidnapped against their will and to have suffered medical and examination procedures – and even bizarre sexual assault – aboard alien spacecraft.

According to numerous reports, aliens come into homes and temporarily kidnap young children.

The parents are left distraught, paralysed and helpless. On occasions when a parent has been able to protest, the aliens simply respond that “the children belong to us.”

Often, when an abduction occurs, the aliens flash “screen memories” onto the victim’s “mind screen”, to mask real memories. They use virtual reality scenarios to implant images into abductees’ heads. They manipulate and abuse.

### **For what purpose?**

Why are they doing this? Many researchers, such as Jacques Vallee and J. Allen Hynek, feel that it might be a step by step conditioning process. (J. Allen Hynek, *Today’s Student*, April 3, 1978, cited in Ronald D. Story, editor, *The Mammoth Encyclopedia of Extraterrestrial Encounters*. London: Constable & Robinson, 2002, pp. 739-740)



This is a common view among UFO researchers. As Ankerberg and Weldon note:

These researchers believe that the UFO entities are deliberately programming the human observers with false information in order to hide their true nature and purpose. (John Ankerberg and John Weldon, *The Facts on UFOs and Other Supernatural Phenomena*. Eugene, OR.: Harvest House Publishers, 1992, pp. 10,11)

Vallee agrees that “human belief... is being controlled and conditioned.” (Jacques Vallee, *The Invisible College*. New York: E.P. Dutton, 1975, p. 207)

The alien entities can project thoughts into peoples’ minds, so that they believe they have seen laboratories and fetuses, for example.

### **Why this step by step programming?**

This one by one programming - why? That puzzled Roland. If they really want to alter our world, then wouldn’t it be more effective to stage a mass landing in full view of TV cameras?

Oh yeah? According to the aliens themselves, humans were “not ready” for such an event. The aliens would first need to program a sufficient number of contactees with their new belief system.

Did these “ETs” *have something to hide*? Roland was discovering that almost all serious UFO researchers believed so.

### **Why the desire to change our beliefs?**

These aliens had a clear teaching agenda. But why was it so important for these aliens to change our traditional spiritual beliefs?

### **Why the abusing of humans?**

Roland continued to toss on his bed. And throbbing through his heart was the tormenting question, If the aliens are here to help us, then why do they treat humans so terribly?

After so many encounters over so long a period, don't they know the tragic effects of forced sex upon humans? Whether this is really physically occurring or whether the victims are merely programmed to believe it is occurring, thought Roland, that was not the point. It's as bad as if it's been done. Angie believes it's occurred and the trauma she's suffering is horrendous.

Roland mulled over the questions posed by Dr Karla Turner concerning abductions, which he had read that afternoon. Turner had said:

This phenomenon simply can't be explained in terms of crossbreeding experiments or scientific research into the human physiology.... Before we allow ourselves to believe in the benevolence of the alien interaction, we should ask, do enlightened beings need to use the cover of night to perform good deeds? Do they need to paralyze us and render us helpless to resist? Do [they] need to steal our fetuses? Do they need to manipulate our childrens' genitals and probe our rectums? Are fear, pain, and deception consistent with high spiritual motives? (Dr Karla Turner, "Aliens – Friends or Foes?" *UFO Universe*, spring 1993, cited in "The Premise of Spiritual warfare," <[www.alienresistance.org/ce4premise.htm](http://www.alienresistance.org/ce4premise.htm)>, March 7, 2003)

Vallee and other researchers are right, thought Roland. These beings do act deceptively... and dishonestly. They speak about doing good – yet behave abominably. Their human victims are scarred for the rest of their lives – emotionally and physically. These aliens say one thing and do another.

Here for our good? Quite the opposite.

How could anyone feel safe in trusting the claims of such deceptive beings to be our rescuers? Beings *with questionable origins* who abuse people and treat them with disdain?

Roland stared at the ceiling. Tonight he felt so gloomy, so alone... He was passing through hell. Angie had changed so much.

\* \* \* \* \*

One factor common to alien abductions is that the human subjects are emotionally and religiously transformed. But the

experience is often unpleasant, leaving the abductee with a sense of being violated and depressed.... even suicidal.

If you have been an abductee, then think seriously about what you are accepting as truth. And do so in the light of the *evidence* I shall soon present, and not the explanations offered by these non-human entities.

It is a tragic fact that so many researchers – and abductees – fail to determine the true nature of an encounter with a “space brother”. They fail to see through the charade. And worse, they can become very much aligned with the “mission” of these “ETs”.

I certainly have respect for people involved in genuine UFO research.

Sadly, the situation is also being exploited by others who have their own agendas. When a lie is grand enough, it draws people in on the basis that it is so far-fetched, “it must be true.” And often exploiters use biblical language, offering just enough familiar-sounding truth to make their ideas enticing.

Again, I feel deep compassion for those who have been caught up in situations where distressing consequences have resulted.

## **Abductions to other planets?**

You might ask, Have people really been taken off to Venus and other planets?

In physical fact? Of course not! In belief? Yes. It is true that some good folk *think* they have been taken to some such place. People have been deluded, even hypnotized, into believing that they have experienced it.

Were you aware that hypnotism and temporary paralysis are commonly associated with UFOs? That’s a fact.

## **Programmed?**

And if people are being hypnotized, is it possible that some are actually being “programmed” for something too horrible to think about?

That very thought kept intruding upon Roland's mind throughout the night, as he lay helpless, unable to sleep.

And then the Roswell incident began pressing on his mind.

Dead aliens from a crashed UFO? Oh man!... It seems, Roland Brown, you are meant to stay awake.

He slid into his dressing gown and shuffled to the lounge room...

## 4

### *The Roswell incident -*

# CRASHED UFO, ALIEN BODIES?

Did a flying saucer crash in New Mexico in June, 1947? And did the U.S. Air Force retrieve alien bodies?

The story of a flying saucer being captured did appear in the July 8, 1947, edition of the *Roswell Daily Record*. And since then it has been the subject of numerous books, movies, and television shows – and the most written about, watched and talked-about account of a UFO in history.

Something did fall onto a ranch operated by W.W. “Mac” Brazel, about 75 miles northeast of the town of Roswell. And he first came upon the debris on or around June 14.

On a trip into Roswell a few days later, he carried with him several pieces of the debris. When Sheriff Wilcox inspected the material, he thought it might have some military significance. So he phoned the local Roswell Army Air Base, and spoke to Major Jesse Marcel.

Marcel’s commander, Colonel William Blanchard, at first surmised it might be a downed aircraft, so he ordered Marcel and counterintelligence officer Sheridan Cavitt to visit Brazel’s ranch. After inspecting the wreckage, Cavitt instantly suspected it was from a weather balloon.

Nevertheless, Marcel had other ideas. And on July 8 the public information office at the base announced that they had recovered a flying disc. Newspaper headlines whipped it up into a sensation!

However, Brigadier General Roger Ramey, who had also inspected the wreckage, intervened, calling a press conference that included Marcel. The announcement was made that the pieces of wreckage were of nothing more than a weather balloon. And pieces of it were placed on display.

But Marcel disagreed, most likely because this was unlike any other weather balloon he had seen. Clearly he thought it was a UFO.

Significantly, a weather officer by the name of Irving Newton, had, prior to the press conference, seen pieces of what he recognized as a weather balloon laid out in Ramey's office. In the 1990s, he would inform investigators:

I remember Major Marcel chased me all around that room.... He kept saying things like, 'Look how tough that metal is. Look at the strange markings on it.' While I was examining the debris, Marcel was picking up pieces of the radar target sticks and trying to convince me that some notations on the sticks were alien writings. But I was adamant that it was a weather balloon with a RAWIN [radar] target. I think he was embarrassed as crazy and he would like to do anything to make that turn into a flying saucer. (Ronald D. Story, editor, *The Mammoth Encyclopedia of Extraterrestrial Encounters*, in an article by Randall Fitzgerald. London: Constable & Robinson, 2002, pp. 606-618)

## **The ET theory revived**

For the next 31 years the Roswell incident would remain a dead duck. Then in 1978, Stanton Friedman, world-famous proponent of extraterrestrials, met Marcel. When Marcel revived his crashed saucer theory and asserted that weather balloon material had been substituted for flying saucer wreckage for the 1947 press conference photos, Friedman believed he finally had proof of a cover-up.

But more startling revelations were to follow.

Two years later, Charles Berlitz and William Moore released a book which they called *The Roswell Incident*. This expanded on the ideas of alleged hoaxer Frank Scully, who had written a book in 1950 claiming that the government was concealing several flying saucers and over 30 alien bodies recovered from various areas of the United States.

Undoubtedly, Berlitz and Moore were inspired by Scully's embellished works as well as by the huge sales potential of such subject matter. With the early chapters of their book Berlitz and

Moore received assistance from Friedman. Berlitz, an occult writer, had fashioned a career out of embellishing stories and making them into books.

Some of the claims Berlitz and Moore were making for their Roswell book were investigated by UFO researcher Kal K. Korff. Claims such as these, for example:

1. That over 75 witnesses had been interviewed in the book. But careful research of their book revealed only 25, of whom 7 only were firsthand witnesses of the wreckage.
2. The book also claimed that pieces of wreckage recovered were of an unknown and unbreakable material – it would not tear, break or burn.
3. That there were alien markings on the wreckage, maybe writing or hieroglyphics.
4. That from the crash site alien bodies had been recovered.
5. That crashed saucers were stored in a facility at Wright Patterson Air Force Base, known as Hangar 18.

Since that time, even more spectacular claims have been made in different books. Suddenly, new witnesses have surfaced, and even secret documents turned up on one UFOlogist's doorstep, with startling information about a top-secret government organization with the title Majestic 12 (styled also Majic 12 or MJ- 12).

And as recently as the 1990s, half a century after the event, official government investigations have been conducted into the Roswell incident. Congressman Steven Schiff, who had a keen interest in UFO matters, generated an inquiry in 1994 by the U.S. General Accounting Office (GAO). The purpose was to conduct an independent audit of the Department of Defense's policies and procedures with regard to the Roswell incident. In this inquiry, text was reproduced from the *Roswell Daily Record* of July 8, 1947, which cited Brazel's recollections concerning the discovery on his farm:

[The object] ... might have been as large as a table top. The balloon which held it up, if that is how it worked, must have

been about 12 feet long, he felt, measuring the distance by the size of the room in which he sat. The rubber was smoky gray in color and scattered over an area about 200 yards in diameter. When the debris was gathered up, the tinfoil, paper, tape, and sticks made a bundle about three feet long and 7 or 8 inches thick, while the rubber made a bundle about 18 or 20 inches long and about 8 inches thick. In all, he estimated, the entire lot would have weighed maybe five pounds. There was no sign of any metal in the area which might [sic] have been used for an engine and no sign of any propellers of any kind. Although at least one paper fin had been glued onto some of the tinfoil. There were no words to be found anywhere on the instrument although there were letters on some of the parts. Considerable scotch tape and some tape with flowers printed upon it had been used in the construction. No string or wire were to be found but there were some eyelets in the paper to indicate that some sort of attachment may have been used. Brazel said that he had previously found two weather balloons on the ranch, but that what he found this time did not in any way resemble either of these. ("Report of Air Force Research Regarding the Roswell Incident 1994," <[www.af.mil/lib/roswell.html](http://www.af.mil/lib/roswell.html)>, December 10, 2002)

You will notice that Brazel's original description in 1947 is consistent with something more benign, such as a weather balloon as claimed, although it differed from those he had seen previously.

Follow up interviews revealed that not one of the witnesses ever claimed the material was unbreakable. And the hieroglyphics? They were discovered to be nothing more than flower patterns and other markings on scotch tape manufactured by a toy company.

In 1989, that is, 42 years after the event, a new witness came forward. His name was Glenn Dennis. He claimed to have been working as a mortician the day the "saucer" wreckage arrived. This sudden revelation staggered his friends. They commented that he had made no previous mention of this in all the 30 or so years they had known him.

Dennis asserted he had seen the bodies of dead aliens. He claimed he had taken part in an autopsy of them. It is



noteworthy that Dennis came forward with this story only after the Roswell incident had achieved some celebrity status.

However, a considerable number of holes were found in his story. For one thing, he spoke of people at the time of the incident who never worked on the base until after the events of 1947. He also talked of a nurse assisting at the autopsies. However, her name has never appeared on any records, neither has she been found to this day. So she has been dubbed the “disappearing nurse”.

Dennis’ memory, apparently, is not quite as good as it ought to be. Discredited, he now declines interviews by skeptical investigators.

Another key witness was a man by the name of Frank Kaufmann. Kaufmann claimed he saw a UFO explode while he was monitoring a radar screen. He claimed also to have been part of the military team that went to collect the wreckage and alien bodies. However, years later, under interrogation by famous skeptic Philip Klass, Kaufmann confessed that he never trained as a radar operator.

In subsequent years, a number of retired Air Force colonels who were stationed at Roswell have also been interviewed. Not one of them knew anything about the storage of UFO debris or alien bodies. (Ronald Story, *The Mammoth Encyclopedia of Extraterrestrial Encounters*, in an article by Fitzgerald, pp.606-618)

Back now to Major Jesse’s role in this incident. Here is the conclusion reached by UFO writer Randall Fitzgerald:

For a sad case of apparent exaggeration we need look no further than Major Jesse Marcel. UFO researchers Robert Todd and Kal Korff independently obtained Marcel's nearly 200-page long military service file and found, in Korff’s words, a pattern of Marcel ‘exaggerating things and repeatedly trying to write himself into the history books.’ Marcel had told book authors that he held a college bachelor's degree, had been a pilot of B-24s in World War II, received five air medals for shooting down five enemy aircraft, and was himself shot down. Yet absolutely none of this was true according to his own service file! Marcel

frequently changed his testimony about the Roswell debris. First he said he had heard about someone trying to dent the metal with a hammer, then later he said ‘we even tried making a dent in it with a 16-pound sledge hammer, still no dent in it.’ Sometimes he said the debris ‘didn't burn very well,’ and then other times he claimed it would not burn at all. Marcel's career lasted less than three years after his humiliation at Roswell, when he resigned to open a small-town TV repair shop. (*Ibid.*)

## **The real truth of the matter**

After World War II, there was a rapid growth in technology and nuclear rivalry between the United States and the Soviet Union.

We now know, from official documents released only in recent years, that a sensitive project, classified TOP SECRET 1A, was being conducted. Known as Project Mogul, it entailed an array of 23 balloons designed to reflect radar, as well as monitor acoustic emissions from around the world. For this reason, it was required to float high in the stratosphere. Its primary purpose, of course, was to detect suspected Soviet nuclear tests.

Basically, the radar reflectors were huge metal foil kites, made with sticks, called RAWIN targets. And the toy company that made the “kites” also used reinforcing tape to hold them together. The balloons themselves, fashioned from neoprene rubber, were equipped with low-frequency microphones, a sonobuoy, aluminium tubes, rings, and battery packs.

And so, on June 4, 1947, from Alamogordo Army Air Field, New Mexico, Mogul flight 4 was launched. This was not very far southwest of Roswell. As a result of exposure to the sun, some of the balloons burst. Then, as the battery power ran down, the military lost contact with the array only 17 miles from its eventual crash site.

Information about this top secret Project Mogul remained classified for more than 40 years. (*Ibid.*)

At that time, rocket and satellite technology did not exist. So Project Mogul was used to listen to the “enemy”.

## Why top secret?

You might wonder, since it was not advanced technology, then why was it top secret? Couldn't the government have revealed the truth and avoided the massive flood of speculation? The answer is quite simple. The United States authorities were concerned that if the Soviets discovered they were being spied upon, they would move their nuclear testing underground.

## Why mistaken for a flying saucer?

You might also wonder how on earth a collection of paper, sticks, foil, and rubber could ever be mistaken for a flying saucer?

Maybe the answer lies in the official Government Accounting Office report:

Adding some measure of credibility to the claims that have arisen since 1978 is the apparent depth of research of some of the authors and the extent of their efforts. Their claims are lessened somewhat, however, by the fact that almost all their information came from verbal reports many years after the alleged incident occurred. Many of the persons interviewed were, in fact, stationed at, or lived near Roswell during the time in question, and a number of them claim military service. Most, however, related their stories in their older years, well after the fact. In other cases, the information provided is second or thirdhand [sic], having been passed through a friend or relative after the principal had died. What is uniquely lacking in the entire exploration and exploitation of the 'Roswell Incident' is official positive documentary or physical evidence of any kind that supports the claims of those who allege that something unusual happened. ("Report of Air Force Research Regarding the Roswell Incident 1994," <[www.af.mil/lib/roswell.html](http://www.af.mil/lib/roswell.html)>, December 10, 2002)

UFOlogist John Keel suggested a number of years later that dummies (like crash test dummies) were thrown from high altitudes in the course of research, and that this could offer an explanation for the alien bodies myth.

There is now a considerable volume of historical documentation. It reveals a *total lack of physical evidence* for

- (a) a crashed UFO at Roswell
- (b) alien bodies at Roswell.

On the other hand, this *substantial body of* documentation provides *straightforward evidence* of what did happen.

There is a common occurrence that manifests whenever mysterious elements appear in a story. Individuals seem quite able to concoct fantastic stories to embellish something they want to be true.

As it happened, the Roswell case refused to die. “The faithful” desired to keep the Roswell legend alive, and the tale spinning went on.

A claim is still made that the Roswell “bodies” were kept in a secret place known as Hangar 18. Said at first to be located at Wright Patterson Air Force Base, this mysterious hanger has “resurfaced” in various locations. Because the U.S. government has always denied its existence, the mention of Hangar 18 raises implications of a cover-up.

## **The “secret” film**

In 1984, UFO researcher Jaime H. Shandera found a roll of unprocessed film anonymously planted at his door. He called William L. Moore (co-author of *The Roswell Incident*), and they had the film developed.

On the film were photos of what were claimed to be top-secret government documents allegedly proving that the government had collected crashed flying saucers from Roswell and elsewhere. Shandera and Moore later added that they had acquired further documents of the same kind from government archives.

In 1994, still another roll of film came into the hands of Don Berliner, co-author of another Roswell conspiracy book. This film allegedly contained a Special Operations Manual (SOM 1-01) on how to handle UFO incidents. (Ronald Story, *The Mammoth Encyclopedia of Extraterrestrial Encounters*, in an article by Joe Nickell, pp.387-390)

So here was “proof”, it was said, that not only did the government know about the UFOs but that they had conspired to cover up the truth.

UFO researcher Gary Bates picks up the story here:

The most startling revelation to come out of these documents was that former President Harry S. Truman, on the basis of events at Roswell, authorized the formation of Operation Majestic Twelve (MJ-12). This was supposed to be a covert military group that operated above the law, and it is claimed that, over the years, MJ-12 operatives used intimidation and disposed of evidence (and even of witnesses) to conceal the truth about UFOs. These operatives became known as the 'Men in Black' (MIB), which seemed to tie in with another conspiratorial idea. In common UFO lore, the mysterious MIB had, for many years, been turning up after UFO sightings, harassing and following witnesses, as well as UFO investigators. It was a description that became popular in books and movies over the years, including two recent Hollywood blockbusters of the same name. In reality, the MIB notion could probably be traced back to a scary 1953 book by Gray Barker, called *They Knew Too Much about Flying Saucers* - another story that somehow became 'truth.' (Gary Bates, *Alien Intrusion*. Green Forest, AR.: Master Books, Inc., 2004, p. 189)

## **Alleged government documents**

Crucial evidence for the MIB claims was in a memo allegedly prepared by Truman for Defense Secretary James Forrestal, bearing the date September 24, 1947, and authorizing the creation of MJ-12. ("The New Bogus Majestic-12 Documents," <[www.csicop.org/si/2000-05/majestic-12.html](http://www.csicop.org/si/2000-05/majestic-12.html)>, June 1, 2003)

Enter the well-known British UFO researcher Timothy Good. In a bid to support the conspiracy idea and rehabilitate Frank Scully's reputation and earlier claims, Good launched in 1987, his big-selling book, *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover-up*. His ace in hand was an alleged briefing document prepared for (then) president-elect Dwight D. Eisenhower. Allegedly, this confirmed the history of Roswell and MJ-12. (William T. Alnor, *UFOs in the New Age*. Grand Rapids, MI.: Baker Book House, 1992, pp. 82-84)

Proof at last of the Roswell incident. Who could refute it?

Yeah, sure it was. Once again, these claims turned out to be hoaxes. Intense criticism fell on Moore and Shandera in particular. The Eisenhower briefing document? It proved to be a forgery.

A linguistic expert uncovered distinct differences in style between the forgery and other original documents by the alleged author. One example of this was that the way the date was written was not consistent with other documents by the same author. However – and this was damning evidence - the date format was characteristic of William Moore's style in his own personal letters. (“The New Bogus Majestic-12 Documents,” <[www.csicop.org/si/2000-05/majestic-12.html](http://www.csicop.org/si/2000-05/majestic-12.html)>, June 1, 2003)

Gary Bates reports further:

The ‘Truman memo’ also came under critical analysis. Under a microscope the document was shown to be a composite: typed words, characters, and numbers did not align correctly on the page as would be expected if they were typed on a single typewriter. Truman's signature was an exact copy from another document that he had signed. The original document, from which the signature was lifted, has even been located and identified. Because no two signatures are ever exactly alike, this was damning evidence.

Furthermore, the Eisenhower memo (which Moore and Shandera claimed to have found in government archives) was supposedly written by his aide, Robert Cutler, but he was out of the country on that date. UFO debunker Philip Klass hints that the memo, which was found in an unlikely archival location, could have been smuggled into the archives by Moore or Shandera. The document apparently had a double fold, unlike other filed documents, and would have fit nicely into a coat pocket.

And finally, Berliner's SOM 1-0 operations manual contained many inconsistencies. Supposedly printed in April 1954, it said that any recovered extraterrestrial craft should be sent to ‘Area 51 S-4.’ Yet that portion of Nellis Air Base did not become known as Area 51 until many years later. This suggests that many UFOlogists who ‘shout’ the loudest about government conspiracies are in fact involved in acts of

conspiracy themselves. (Gary Bates, *Alien Intrusion*. Green Forest, AR.: Master Books, Inc., 2004, p. 190)

## Why the forgeries?

You may wonder, why do folk put in so much effort to create forgeries and to lie? Perhaps Philip Klass has identified one motive:

Less than two years before Moore made public the initial MJ-12 papers on April 16, 1983 – he had confided to then-close friend and UFOlogist Brad Sparks that he was contemplating creating and releasing some hoax Top Secret documents.... Moore explained to Sparks that he hoped such bogus documents would encourage former military and intelligence officials who knew about the government’s (alleged) UFO cover-up to break their oaths of secrecy. Sparks strongly recommended against the idea. (“The New Bogus Majestic-12 Documents,” [www.csicop.org/si/2000-05/majestic-12.html](http://www.csicop.org/si/2000-05/majestic-12.html)), June 1, 2003)

It seems that for some UFO believers, the end justifies the means. In this case, through orchestrating deliberate frauds, they were attempting to get the authorities to “tell the truth”.

## Meier’s beautiful aliens and UFO pictures

Over the years Eduard “Billy” Meier claimed to have met with aliens on numerous occasions. They bore names like Sfath, Asket, Semjase and so on. Semjase apparently came from the constellation Pleiades.

Meier’s ET friends taught appealing concepts: “Look after mother earth, don’t spoil the environment, we are here to help you, and be good to your parents.” The same type of messages aliens have been presenting for decades. They combined traditional values with New Age concepts.

The alien gave Meier instructions on how to find an ancient Aramaic document, unearthed from a tomb in Jerusalem. It is claimed that this text contains the original teachings of Immanuel, or Jesus. It is claimed that these were later corrupted as the Christian Bible. Talmud Immanuel, as the document is

now called, has in effect become a new “Bible” for followers of Meier.

When skepticism arose due to the frequency of Meier’s supposed ET contacts, Meier claimed that Semjase provided him with “proof”. She had permitted him to take about 1,000 photographs and 12 movies of visiting spacecraft.

The pictures had astonishing clarity. They showed the “beamships” performing various maneuvers.

Meier's pictures and photos were even sold to television stations and many publishers bought them. After scant pictorial evidence over so many years, Meier’s breakthrough seemed almost too good to be true.

It was.

Not so long ago, Underground Video, who had been marketing Meier's materials, launched a class action suit against Meier and his associates, alleging fraud.

In response, Meier defenders claimed that scientists had verified that the pictures could not be duplicated artificially, and that others supported their authenticity.

However, a spokesman for Underground Video wrote:

Our investigation first began as a supportive effort to verify the known facts of the Meier case to present the truth of alien-human contact to skeptics. With the assistance of members from the Hollywood special effects team of the Ultra-Matrix Corporation, we studied the Meier photographs and claims. . . . After six months of intense inquiry, with the assistance of cinematographers, physicists, and computer analysis from Total Research [another UFO research group], we found the claims of the representatives of the Meier case to be absolutely untrue. We discovered miniature models and a variety of deceptive methods used to create this hoax. (“The Meier Hoax,” <[www.virtuallystrangenet/ufo/updates/2000/sep/m21-006.shtml](http://www.virtuallystrangenet/ufo/updates/2000/sep/m21-006.shtml)>, June 17, 2003)

Underground Video was one of the foremost defenders of the Meier material. We are DISAPPOINTED to now learn the ENTIRE case is a hoax. Representations of any authenticity with regard to this case made by alleged scientific examination has [sic] proved to be totally



unreliable and misleads [sic] the general public into believing a carefully fabricated lie. The persons who authenticated [sic] the Meier case are not credible scientists nor [sic] investigators.

Along with Underground Video's statement is a photograph showing one of Billy Mciers [sic] alleged Pleiadian beamships taken in 1981. After computer enhancement and careful scrutiny, it has been shown the Beamship is really a miniature model made out of an upside-down cake pan, disconnected copper hose fitting, a bracelet, carpet tacks and various other identifiable objects. (Billy Meier Hoax," <[www.geocities.com/Area51/Corridor/8148/scam.html](http://www.geocities.com/Area51/Corridor/8148/scam.html)>, June 16, 2003. Emphases in original)

The Total Research Group mentioned above is run by investigative journalist Kal K. Korff. Korff traveled to Switzerland undercover to investigate Meier. He claims to be not a UFO debunker but rather wants to encourage serious study of the UFO phenomenon. In Switzerland, Meier's ex-wife, Kalliope (or Popi), "blew the whistle" on Meier. She claimed that for the Pleiadian beamships, Meier used crude models and strings, which he then superimposed onto the Swiss countryside.

In his 400-plus-page book, Korff exposes Meier's criminal background. Former friends and supporters were interviewed, who claimed that Meier launched the hoax for financial gain. (Ronald Story, *The Mammoth Encyclopedia of Extraterrestrial Encounters*, in an article by Randall Fitzgerald, p. 671)

Dennis Stacy, editor of the *MUFON* (Mutual UFO Network) *UFO Journal*, likewise noted:

Photographic analysis [of Meier's photographs] ... reportedly revealed that Meier's amazing array of flying saucers consisted of small models suspended from strings. (Dennis Stacy, "New Books," *MUFON UFO Journal*, February 1987, p. 11)

Photographs of the pretty, blond aliens Asket and Nera were subsequently found to be a blurred photograph of a TV screen featuring girls from an episode of the Dean Martin Show.

Likewise, a photo of the alien of Semjase was discovered to be a photocopy of a model from a Sears catalog.

Bill Alnor notes that "The scientific UFO community with few exceptions has thoroughly trashed the Meier claims." (*Ibid.*)

Despite the substantial weight of evidence against Meier, a large organization and even a cult following has built up around him.

\* \* \* \* \*

Roland had been aware of hoaxes such as these. So he hadn't even believed in aliens – until Angie's experience.

But, come to think of it, there had been some evidence... crop circles.

Crop circles... yeah. Roland crept back to bed. The full moon shone right through the window. He glanced at Angie, lying there beside him... so serene... so still... so oblivious to her husband's insomnia.

Crop circles. Now, they'd be hard to fake, right?...



# 5

## *ET crop circles? -*

# MYSTERY RINGS

In a Southampton pub one evening in 1976, two Englishmen, Doug Bower and Dave Chorley, were drinking a pint of stout. There had been reports of a UFO saucer nest seen in Australia.

“Why don’t we have some fun and create some here in England?” suggested Doug, with a twinkle in his eye.

“Brilliant!” grinned Dave.

So was hatched the idea of recreating crop circles.

Initially, using a steel bar, they created some simple circles. As people came up with various ideas to explain their origin, the men started to create more and more complex designs. Other hoaxers obviously had no problem in guessing these designs were man-made. They caught on to the “gag” and copied them. Crop circles eventually appeared in many places.

One man in particular, UFO buff Pat Delgado, had other ideas. He began to champion an extraterrestrial connection for the crop circles, through the media. Then he and Colin Andrews got together to produce a best-selling book called *Circular Evidence*. (Ronald Story, *The Mammoth Encyclopedia of Extraterrestrial Encounters*, in an article by Jenny Randles. London: Constable & Robinson, 2002, pp. 175-178)

However, Bower and Chorley, now in their sixties, confessed to being the original crop circle “engineers”. By this time, 15 years had passed since they started their game. They claimed responsibility for more than 250 circles.

Delgado and Andrews denounced them as hoaxers.

Nevertheless, Bower and Chorley had the last laugh. Followed by video cameras, they created an elaborate crop circle using just rope and planks. Unaware of the filming session, Delgado and Andrews, by now “world” authorities, inspected the circle and announced it as a construction by an

outside intelligence that no hoaxer could have made. (“Circlemakers,” <[www.circlemakers.org/mythmen.html](http://www.circlemakers.org/mythmen.html)>, April 19, 2004)

To this day, the pro-UFO camp claim that there are telltale signs which differentiate the man-made ones from so-called “genuine” ET-crafted ones. But, may we ask, if “experts” were tricked so easily before, why should we treat their claims differently now?

Some years ago, a famous video clip was shown of supposed flying saucers hovering over a field, miraculously creating crop formations in mere seconds. And although this has likewise been established as a hoax, yet it still does the rounds on the Internet.

And now a group known as Circlemakers have an Internet website (<[www.circlemakers.org](http://www.circlemakers.org)>). In the darkness of night and undetected by others, they have repeatedly fashioned complex crop circles under the gaze of TV cameras and press. Companies like Weetabix and Mitsubishi have even hired them to create crop circle logos to advertise their products.

It was said to be impossible to create such designs in one night. But Circlemakers say they produced 100 circles in 100 minutes, with this feat being filmed by the BBC. (“Circlemakers,” <[www.circlemakers.org/freddy.html](http://www.circlemakers.org/freddy.html)>, June 10, 2003)

Something else. Throughout the 1950s and 1960s, Swiss scientist Hans Jenny carefully captured on film the effects of sound waves and their interaction with physical substances. He noticed how sound vibration created geometric shapes. A low frequency produced a simple circle encompassed by rings. A higher frequency increased the number of concentric rings around a central circle. As the frequencies rose, so did the complexity of shapes, such as tetrahedrons, mandalas and other geometric forms. Ultrasound can cause certain kinds of molecules to vibrate while others nearby are left unmoved – and may well be able to coax plants to bend and lie down and may thus be one energy source capable of creating crop circles. (*Nexus* magazine, August-September 2005)

In a comic response to copycats who were imitating their “hoax”, Bower and Chorley spelled out a crop circle message, “WE ARE NOT ALONE”. Amazingly, this was taken by some

to be evidence of ET involvement. A little thought, however, and it would have been obvious that “someone from out there” would have worded it “YOU ARE NOT ALONE”.

During efforts to halt the foot-and-mouth epidemic in 2002, when the British government introduced strict rules about crossing the countryside, the occurrence of crop circles came to a virtual halt. With a smile, one might ask, were aliens obeying a man-made rule?

Interestingly, Circlemakers have reported strange phenomena occurring during and after their crop circle construction:

Our crop formations are intended to function as temporary sacred sites in this landscape. Whilst constructing crop formations in the fields we have experienced a series of aerial anomalies including: small balls of light, columns of light, and blinding flashes. All apparently targeting ourselves and our crop formations. We are unsurprised at the numerous visitors who have reported a diverse assortment of anomalies associated with our artworks. These have included physiological effects, such as headaches and nausea. Healing effects such as one report of a cure for acute osteoporosis. Physical effects such as camera and other electronic equipment failure. We are certain that our artworks are subject to the attention of paranormal forces and act to catalyze other paranormal events. (“Circlemakers,” <[www.circlemakers.org/press.html](http://www.circlemakers.org/press.html)>, June 10, 2003)

UFO investigator Gary Bates asks:

Have hoaxers discovered and provided an opportunity or portal for supernatural ‘forces’ to manifest themselves? (Gary Bates, *Alien Intrusion*. Green Forest, AR.: Master Books, Inc., 2004, p. 218)

\* \* \* \* \*

Roland slipped out of bed again to check the time. He dared not switch on the bed lamp. That might disturb Angie. With her dental clinic job, she needed the sleep.

Only two in the morning? This was a long night. Back to bed.

The questions kept repeating...

Who are these crooks? Are they really from outer space... or – the thought suddenly made his body tingle – might they even be from another dimension?

## 6

*From another dimension? -*

# WHO ARE THE ALIENS?

Roland eased out of bed and headed for the bathroom. Again he looked at his watch. It was only four twenty five. Bother it! He hadn't even been asleep.

In one way he envied Angie, so cosy, slumbering away. He got himself a glass of water and rolled back into bed to cuddle her.

But sleep still eluded him.

So he lay back, thinking about Project Blue Book.

For over 20 years, J. Allen Hynek was a scientific consultant for the U.S. Air Force on Project Blue Book. His instructions were to study UFO reports and determine whether an astronomical object, such as the moon or the planet Venus, might explain them.

Whilst Blue Book listed 12,618 reports (of which 701 could not be explained) it concluded that UFOs did not pose a threat to national security. Without saying what they were, the government by this means got itself "off the hook". The later Condon Report announced the same conclusion.

Although a UFO skeptic at the start, Hynek became convinced that a certain percentage of claimed sightings were worthy of serious study.

In 1973, he founded the Center for UFO Studies (CUFOS) along with the now noted UFO researcher Jacques Vallee.

There was, by this time, some collateral physical evidence that seemed hard to explain. This included depressions in the ground, scorch marks and burnt or damaged plants that might take longer than normal to recover.

Hynek and Vallee considered that where there was smoke there was fire.



In 1976, Hynek made this observation:

The conclusion I've come to after all these years is that first of all, the subject is much more complex than any of us imagined. It has *paranormal aspects* but certainly it has very real *physical aspects*, too. The attitude we're taking in the Center for UFO Studies is that since we're going to have scientists involved, we will push the physical approach as hard and far as we can – instrumentation, physical evidence, photographs, radar records. If we are finally forced by the evidence itself to go into the paranormal, then we will. (J.Allen Hynek, *Fate*, June 1976, cited in Ronald D. Story, editor, *The Mammoth Encyclopedia of Extraterrestrial Encounters*. London: Constable & Robinson, 2002, pp. 304-305. Emphasis mine)

## Extraterrestrial, or parallel reality?

The following year, he was quoted as expressing these views during an interview:

“HYNEK: [The extraterrestrial] theory runs up against a very big difficulty, namely, that *we are seeing too many UFOs*.

The Earth is only a spot of dust in the Universe. Why should it be honoured with so many visits?

“INTERVIEWER: Then what is your hypothesis?

“HYNEK: I am more inclined to think in terms of something metaterrestrial, a sort of *parallel reality*.” (Hynek, *Lumieres dans la Nuit*, No. 168, October 1977, cited in Ronald D. Story, editor, *The Mammoth Encyclopedia of Extraterrestrial Encounters*. London: Constable & Robinson, 2002, pp. 304-305. Emphasis mine)

When interviewed by *Newsweek*, Hynek repeated this theory:

UFOs, he says, may be *psychic phenomena* and the ‘aliens’ *may not come from outer space* but from a ‘parallel reality.’ (Hynek, *Newsweek*, November 21, 1977. Emphasis mine)

As already noted, Hynek was formerly a skeptic. He was also the author of numerous technical papers and textbooks on

astrophysics. Surrounding himself with credible and reliable scientists, he investigated UFOs for nearly 40 years.

Hynek submitted that perhaps UFOs were *part of a parallel reality, slipping in and out of sequence with our own*. This was a hypothesis that obviously pained him as an empirical scientist. Yet after 30 years of interviewing witnesses and investigating sighting reports, radar contacts, and physical traces of saucer landings no other hypothesis seemed to make sense to him. (Douglas Curran, *In Advance of the Landing: Folk/Concepts of Outer Space*. New York: Abbeville Press, 1985, p.21. Emphasis mine)

The findings of numerous other researchers tend to support this conclusion. Prominent UFO researcher John Weldon has noted that:

1. In all the millions of sightings, there has never been even one radar detection of a UFO entering our atmosphere from outer space.
2. “ETs” appear quite able to breathe in Earth’s atmosphere without respiratory equipment.
3. Although fired upon many times by Russian, Canadian and American pilots, never has a UFO been brought down.
4. Startlingly, no UFOs seen at different times ever look exactly alike. (John Ankerberg and John Weldon, *The Facts on UFOs and Other Supernatural Phenomena*. Eugene, OR.: Harvest House Publishers, 1992, p. 12)

These observations would suggest that:

1. They are here – emanating, apparently, from our own planet Earth.
2. Although visible, they may not be physical entities. They appear to be *not* bound by the same material, physical laws.

## **Materialise and dematerialise**

Here are some other characteristics noted by Hynek and Vallee:

If UFOs are, indeed, somebody else's 'nuts and bolts hardware,' then we must still explain how such tangible hardware can *change shape* before our eyes, *vanish* in a Cheshire cat manner (not even leaving a grin), seemingly *melt away* in front of us, or apparently '*materialize*' mysteriously before us without apparent detection by persons nearby or in neighbouring towns. We must wonder too, where UFOs are 'hiding' when not manifesting themselves to human eyes. (J. Allen Hynek and Jacques Vallee, *The Edge of Reality*. Chicago, IL.: Henry Regnery Company, pp. xii-xiii, cited in "The Premise of Spiritual warfare," [www.alienresistance.org/ce4premise.htm](http://www.alienresistance.org/ce4premise.htm), March 7, 2003. Emphasis mine)

Did you get that? Here are scientists admitting that UFOs apparently *materialize and dematerialize*. That suggests another dimension.

## **Merge into one object**

But there's more, much more. Hynek reveals that "There are quite a few reported instances where *two distinctly different UFOs hovering in a clear sky will converge and eventually merge into one object*. These are the types of psychic phenomena that are confronting us in the UFO mystery." (J. Allen Hynek, interview in *UFO Report Magazine*, p. 61, August 1976)

And John Keel, famous UFO researcher (author of many UFO books, including *The Mothman Prophecies 1975* – later made into a Hollywood movie of that name) concurs:

The UFOs do not seem to exist as tangible, manufactured objects. They do not conform to the natural laws of our environment. They seem to be nothing more than transmogrifications tailoring themselves to our abilities to understand. The thousands of contacts with the entities indicate that they are liars and put-on artists. (John Keel. *Operation Trojan Horse*. Lilburn, GA.: Illuminet Press, 1996, p. 266)

Researchers Ankerberg and Weldon also note:

...it seems evident that these phenomena are produced in the same manner that other occult manipulations are produced.

They involve dramatic manipulations of matter and energy. Although they originate from the spiritual world, they can produce very powerful, temporarily physical manifestations at the material level... However the UFO is produced, it is frequently of small dimensions – an area where an extremely large amount of energy is concentrated. (John Ankerberg and John Weldon, *The Facts on UFOs and Other Supernatural Phenomena*. Eugene, OR.: Harvest House Publishers, 1992, pp. 36-37)

Roland pondered long over this. Here were millions of eyewitness accounts, hundreds of photographs, plenty of video footage, yet not one single piece of hard physical evidence. Although some might pin their belief on the alleged physical evidence of the Roswell incident, unaware that it was a hoax, yet tonight something was becoming crystal clear. The weight of evidence suggested these were *not physical, but spiritual* manifestations.

Then what about seeming traces of physical landings?

As an engineer with an understanding of physics, Roland carefully considered that angle. And yes, even those could be explained as *manipulation of mass and energy*.

Not only that, many UFOs demonstrated the ability to make 90 degree turns at impossible speeds, as well as other maneuvers considered impossible in the physical realm.

Roland's mind was too active for sleep now.

Could it be that one needed to wear “spiritual glasses” to understand what was going on here... to understand who these entities were... and what was motivating them?

## **The reality of another dimension**

One question repeatedly nagged at him:

Was it reasonable to assume that the objects we see with our eyes are the only ones which exist?

Bearing in mind that all solid objects have a vibration frequency within the range perceptible to the human eye. What if the vibration frequency could be altered into vibrations outside the visible range? Some scientists considered it possible.

Roland's mind was in turmoil. It was not easy to revise one's thinking. But the evidence was now pressing itself upon

him. There had to be *another dimension*, from which these non-human aliens were orchestrating their control and manipulation.

He could no longer disbelieve their existence. Yet he must not let himself take an obsessive, unhealthy interest in them. Not to believe meant not to be alert and on guard. But to be obsessed – as Angie now was - could lead to their control of a person.

The evidence was pointing more and more in one direction – to the possibility of a spirit “world” existing as another dimension all around us... not in some far-off place.

Many open-minded scientists were, in fact, concluding as much - that the cosmos consists of frequencies or dimensions of life that share the same space, just as radio and television frequencies do.

Roland again turned onto his side, attempting to sleep.

\* \* \* \* \*

## **Not space travelers**

Suddenly he sat bolt upright.

That word *psychic*. It means spiritual (or spirit). Now it clicked! Encounters do have a spiritual nature - and abductions have a spiritual effect! He glanced sadly at Angie.

Of course! These entities were *not* real physical ETs from other worlds in space. No, they were emanating from another dimension!

And wasn't this precisely what so many UFO researchers *from different sides of the fence* were coming to realise... well-known researchers like Vallee, Keel, Mack and others?

Psychiatrist John Mack of the prestigious Harvard University founded the Program for Extraordinary Experience Research (PEER).

To explain abduction claims, Mack, initially a skeptic, looked hard for any and every psychological root cause he could, including childhood abuse.

From 1990, he began interviewing abductees. Over the next few years he would interview more than 100 of them, practising, as he described it, a thorough psychoanalysis of each

one. His conclusion? That these folk were solid citizens, of a sound mind. And he became convinced that something real – and important – was going on.

“These abduction accounts,” said he, “are so congruent among healthy people, from all over the United States – people who are not in touch with each other, who have *nothing to gain and everything to lose by telling their stories.*” (“Are Aliens Already Here? Harvard’s Controversial John Mack. Interview with John Mack, <[www.skepticfiles.org/misc/text/mack.htm](http://www.skepticfiles.org/misc/text/mack.htm)>, July 29, 2003)

His years of research led Mack to a conclusion similar to that of other researchers - that the visitors are *inter-dimensional...* from another reality or spiritual realm.

## **Aliens change their story**

And the aliens? There was something suspicious about the aliens’ story.

It was common in the early days of UFO contacts for aliens to claim they were visiting from Venus. An example was Frank Strange’s 1959 encounter with a “Venusian” calling himself Val Thor.

That was *before* the space program sent out probes to that region.

But nowadays, most aliens were purporting to come from further away, somewhere else in the galaxy *where we cannot test their claims.*

These intruders – these aliens – were changing the identity of their home planet so we could not check up on them.

Something fishy here?

And then, what about this...

## **Their common obsession**

UFO researchers Ankerberg and Weldon were asking:

... how credible is it to think that literally thousands of extraterrestrials would fly millions or billions of light-years simply to teach New Age philosophy, deny Christianity, and support the occult....? (John Ankerberg and John Weldon, *The Facts on UFOs and Other Supernatural Phenomena*. Eugene, OR.: Harvest House Publishers, 1992, p. 13)

Roland stared wide eyed out of the window. So that was the truth? Was it that they did *not* have to fly here?

They were already here... of course! The thought startled him. They've been emanating *from our own planet Earth!*



*Planet Earth: night creeps across Europe and Africa*

## **Why is government silent?**

So why do governments have nothing to say in this matter?

Again, the answer struck him like a bullet. Since the claims are occultic or spiritual in nature, could it be that governments do not want to admit that they are unable to explain what is really occurring? Just imagine the public disquiet should leaders openly admit that something is happening, but “we don’t know what and we are powerless to do anything about it”!

No wonder, then, that we receive the blanket response,  
“UFOs pose no threat to national security.”  
He lay back and relaxed...

\* \* \* \* \*

“Roland! Roland! Wake up!” Angie was shaking him.  
“You’ll be late to drive me to work.”  
“What! Did I sleep?”  
“You’ve over slept... you baby! Come on. It’s time to get  
up.”

Roland tumbled into the bathroom.

Boy, what a night that was! He turned on the hot shower...  
No, I need a cold shower, to wake me. Roland gritted his teeth  
and turned the knob.

“Br-r-r-r...!”



## 7

**ETs and DNA -****DID ALIENS CREATE US?**

Sitting in the sun, Roland reviewed his discoveries of the past week.

Was it right to dismiss the “space gods” idea totally... or was there something in it?

People talk about God, he mused. And some ask whether God was simply an astronaut from space? Was the God, say of the Jews, who came in light and sound, thunders and lightnings, was He just a “Martian” super technician? Or a rebel scientist of an unknown space civilization?

That’s what many UFO buffs were suggesting.

Many of them had got that idea from Erich von Danicken, writing in the 1970s. He had asked: “Was God an Astronaut?”

A year ago Roland had taken part in an investigation of local science lecturer Al Coster. The man was accused of teaching an Intelligent Designer as the cause of life on earth. And the school board had to decide what to do with the man.

It had been decided that without bias each board member should, as a detective, thoroughly investigate the evidence for both sides – for evolution (as taught in the education syllabus) or for intelligent design (Al Coster’s stance). Each person should consider the weight of evidence as meticulously as if they were members of a court jury, then meet a month later to declare their verdict.

What an eye opener that had been! Roland had argued strongly for the evolution theory, but ended up having to abandon it. One deciding factor was the increasing scientific evidence that the DNA code in our bodies gave *observable evidence of thoughtful, programmed designing.*

He found evidence of a creative Mind that was *not one of us, but greater than us*. The evidence pointed to a Designer, a *Master Programmer* greater than the creation itself.

Roland reflected...

## Origin of universe

The questions tumbled out again. Evolution... was it really valid? Were the Laws of the Conservation of Energy and of Matter *suspended* long enough for Empty Space to give birth to a rock? Would the rock get wet (for no reason), and then give birth to an amoeba?

Oh, do come on. Evolution would break every law of science known to man. It dawned on Roland that evolution was being taught in the school system as an immutable scientific fact. They pretended to consider all of the scientific evidence fairly and impartially, when the faculty was intentionally screening against alternative concepts. It was limited by its own biases.

No one disputed that the origin of the universe involved physical matter *appearing from nothing*. Yet there was no scientific mechanism that could have caused it to occur.

But it had happened. Because we were now here!

Pure lottery. What if a billion, billion, billion black balls were mixed together with one white ball, and I had to reach, blindfolded, and pick out the white one? What if my life depended on it? Pick out that white one or be killed. If I reached, blindfolded into those zillions of black balls and discovered I had pulled out the one and only white ball... yes, I would rightly suspect that the whole thing was rigged.

Roland sat up straight with a start. Yes, I would be nuts to think it was by chance!

## Origin of life

Then, there were odds against life happening. Mathematically, it was simply impossible. When he considered the *hundreds* of factors required to produce life or even a planet capable of sustaining life as we know it – factors as diverse as

the decay rates of elements and the distance of a planet's orbit to its sun – and multiply them by the scientific and mathematical odds of those factors being right, it just doesn't work. *We shouldn't be here.*

Roland now recalled something that Sir Fred Hoyle had said. He had jotted it down. Now he reached for his green notebook and looked for it.

Yeah, there it was. That honoured British astronomer had calculated that the odds of only *one* factor necessary for life coming together by chance – the enzymes needed to perform the chemical functions needed to produce the most simple living creature – were one in  $10^{40,000}$ . That's mathematical shorthand for 10 followed by 40,000 zeros, enough to fill roughly 25 pages of this book.

(For perspective, mathematicians consider any probability of less than one in  $10^{50}$  to be impossible.)

But what had really blown Roland over, during that investigation into Al Coster, was the “simple cell”. It was as complex as a city. Not only that, the DNA *machinery* inside each cell had to be totally *100 percent intact* with all its interlocking, working parts, *before one living cell* could even exist.

At first that truth had merely fascinated Roland. Then its implications rushed at him like an avalanche...

Firstly, DNA comes in *intelligently designed sentences*. It is not LIKE a language. It IS a language. Much thought has gone into the design of the DNA code.

Secondly, this molecular machine has the *ability to make functional copies of itself*. And to do this it would *have* to be extremely complex.

Thirdly, the DNA molecule which tells every part of the cell “city” which different job to do, is the most complex storage system in the known universe.

Fourthly, in every cell, microscopic-sized factories endlessly retrieve, process and store food. And highly efficient power plants burn the food to produce and store energy – all

without over-heating the delicate temperature-sensitive machinery.

## Origin of information

As an engineer, Roland was stumped. How on earth could this complex coded information evolve, *instantly perfect*? That was the question.

A world leader in the field of “information science” was Dr Werner Gitt, a director and professor at the German Federal Institute of Physics and Technology. According to Dr Gitt, science makes one fact absolutely certain: information cannot emerge from disorder by chance. It *always* takes a greater source of information to produce information. And ultimately, information is the result of intelligence. (“How Would You Answer?” <[www.answersingenesis.org/docs/3270.asp#r16](http://www.answersingenesis.org/docs/3270.asp#r16)>, March 13, 2003)

A code system is always the result of a mental process (it requires an intelligent origin or inventor)... It should be emphasized that matter as such is unable to generate any code. All experiences indicate that *a thinking being* voluntarily exercising his own free will, cognition, and creativity, is required. (Werner Gitt, *In the Beginning Was Information*. Bielenfeld, Germany: Christliche Literatur-Verbreitung, pp. 64-67. Emphasis mine)

There is no known natural law through which matter can give rise to information, neither is any physical process or material phenomenon known that can do this. (*Ibid.*, p. 79)

Bad news for evolution? Then factor this in. Simultaneously, you would need a totally functional system able and ready to write, read and use that information. In other words, the writing mechanism, the reading mechanism, and the mechanism to use it, *must all be present at the same very first moment* that the information appears. If one of these components is missing, the whole system will fail to work. It is a case of “irreducible complexity”. Could this just happen? Could natural processes make mere chemicals into living systems? Only if pigs fly!

Roland and the rest of the school board had been challenged to compile a watertight case against Al Coster. Roland recalled how he had come home one night and set himself down opposite Angie. He had asked her, “Do you have any idea as to how much information is continuously programming, constructing and reproducing your body?”

She had cuddled up to him and said, “Let me have it.”

“For starters, it contains 75 trillion or more cells,” Roland had announced. “Just suppose, Angie, that you could stretch out and join up all the DNA in those cells end to end, do you know how far it would reach? Get this: 94 billion (not million, but billion) miles. Or 150 billion kilometres. That’s a thousand times the distance from the earth to the sun. Or 3½ million times around our earth’s equator! It would take a beam of light 5½ days to travel that far.”

“You mean that’s the amount of DNA in just my little body?” she had giggled.

And what was the probability of just one of those DNA molecules forming by chance? The late astrophysicist Sir Fred Hoyle had put it this way:

Now imagine  $10^{50}$  blind persons [that’s 100,000 billion billion billion billion people – standing shoulder to shoulder, they would more than fill our entire solar system] each with a scrambled Rubik cube and try to conceive of the chance of them all simultaneously arriving at the solved form. You then have the chance of arriving by random shuffling [random variation] at just one of the many biopolymers on which life depends. The notion that not only the biopolymers but the operating program of a living cell could be arrived at by chance in a primordial soup here on Earth is evidently nonsense of a high order. (Fred Hoyle, “The Big Bang in Astronomy,” *New Scientist*, vol. 92, no. 1280, November 19, 1981, p. 527)

The estimate is that the 3 billion letters of information in just one human cell of DNA are equivalent to 1,000 encyclopedia-sized books of information. (“Human/Chimp DNA Similarity,” <[www.answersingenesis.org/docs/2453.asp#f6](http://www.answersingenesis.org/docs/2453.asp#f6)>, March 13, 2003)

Here, then, is what Roland had found himself needing to face:

1. Scientists have never observed chemicals forming themselves into complex DNA molecules.
2. Life cannot arise spontaneously from non-life.
3. The simplest living organisms show irreducible complexity.
4. DNA molecules do not produce new genetic information. They only reproduce it.

Roland found himself having to face the only rational conclusion – that:

1. Such organisms were fully formed from the first moment they appeared.
2. The first life must have been designed and created.

It all boiled down to this: DNA was designed, like a computer chip – and the original code (or life-information) was loaded into it by the designer.

And Roland had wondered why he hadn't seen that before.

## **Mutations, natural selection, and variations**

Well, he reasoned, perhaps DNA *was* created, but then evolution took over. How? By mutations, of course! Wasn't that what he'd been taught in evolution class?

But Roland was to discover that observational evidence did not support this. Mutations are genetic copying mistakes. But can they produce the information required for evolution? Quite the opposite. In every case known, there has been a *loss of genetic information*.

This was confirmed by Dr Lee Spetner, biophysicist and information theory specialist, and a former professor at John Hopkins University:

All point mutations that have been studied on the molecular level turn out to reduce the genetic information and not to increase it. (Lee Spetner, *Not by Chance*. Brooklyn, NY.: The Judaica Press Inc., 1997, p. 138)

*Information cannot be built up by mutations that lose it. A business can't make money by losing a little at a time.* (*Ibid.*, p. 143. Emphasis mine)

Again, Michael Behe, a biochemist and professor at Pennsylvania's Lehigh University, explained that genetic information is primarily an *instruction manual*:

Consider a step-by-step list of [genetic] instructions. A mutation is a change in *one* of the lines of instructions. So instead of saying, 'Take a 1/4 inch nut,' a mutation might say, 'Take a 3/8 inch nut.' Or instead of 'Place the round peg in the round hole,' we might get 'Place the round peg in the square hole'... What a mutation *cannot* do is change all the instructions in one step – say, [providing instructions] to build a fax machine instead of a radio. (Michael Behe, *Darwin's Black Box*, 1996, p. 41)

Face it, Roland. While indeed there are changes in living creatures, yet the final variation is still the same “kind” of organism. A dog cannot mutate into a horse. All today's dog breeds came from an original dog. And that dog possessed all of the genetic information required to produce the varieties of dogs we now see. But they are still – every one of them – dogs.

*Natural selection reduces the information* to each new variety.

The evidence? It stared him in the face. In the beginning there *must have been* enough variety in the information each original creature possessed, so its descendants could adapt to a wide variety of environments.

But was that evolution? Quite the opposite. Not evolution, but adaptation.

## **The cover up**

Combing through the literature, Roland found that these facts came as a surprise to most scientists. Others knew about them but were playing dumb – fearful of bucking the establishment! Scoundrels – all of them!

Many times these scientists meant well, but were still hiding the facts from their students – and the public. What was going on here? Was it because they were scared what other scientists would think of them?

Turn a blind eye. Reputations... credentials... and financial research grants... at risk. Not to mention careers. Thousands of them. (You don't believe this? Get yourself the startling facts in Book 1 of this series, *The Discovery That's Toppling Evolution.*)

### **Life spores drifted from outer space?**

Okay then, thought Roland, how about this idea? Might life have first appeared on some other planet, then drifted from planet to planet as naked bacterial spores, eventually ending up on this earth?

Oh bother! Isaac Asimov had already pointed out that experiments showed ultraviolet light (UV) would quickly kill such spores. In space, UV is much more intense. Also there are other forms of radiation that would kill off any microscopic spores. The big problem would be the accumulated dosages over an extended time period.

But, again, it's back to this: matter itself contains no information that can produce life, in the first place. And then, Roland, if you expect similar results time and again on numerous planets... forget it.

Firstly, no DNA information from dead matter, to even create the spores. Secondly, outer space radiation would kill spores travelling toward earth.

End of story.

### **DNA brought by aliens?**

Then Roland had asked himself, Might aliens have introduced the DNA on earth – and then let evolution take over?

And then it hit him like a bus. Of course not. Again, evolution, to produce increasing complexity, *would require continual adding of genetic information*. But there is *no* natural mechanism that can add this information. Evolution? The laws of genetics say NO!

But wasn't there fossil evidence for evolution? Again, a surprising NO! The expected evidence for evolution in the fossil record was now admitted not to exist. (For scientific documentation, see



these two books by Jonathan Gray: *Surprise Witness*, chapters 14 to 17 <<http://www.beforeus.com/second.php>> ; *The Discovery That's Toppling Evolution*, chapters 3 to 9 <http://www.beforeus.com/evol.php>>)

So with upward evolution impossible, aliens would have needed to create fully fledged, intelligent humans *in one hit*. And all other life forms too. The whole multitude of them *complete and functioning*.

### **Aliens interbred with earth life?**

All right, then, thought Roland, Could aliens have interbred with primates?

No better. "Seeding" by ETs would not answer these two problems:

(a) the **origin** of DNA

(b) the **origin** of ET intelligence in the first place.

- whether on this earth, or on some other planet.

Yes, ETs from another planet also needed a beginning. They needed to be programmed with *their* DNA from somewhere - before they could even exist!

So, it all got back to the question, *who, then, was responsible for life?*

### **Was the Creator just one of us?**

So was the creator of mankind just an advanced extraterrestrial?

Roland chuckled. Who am I kidding? The DNA code – even of an extraterrestrial - was not something that could evolve, step by step, nor even appear suddenly, fully assembled - unless it had first been *programmed*.

And that required a Master Creator, a Superior Designer working to a pre-organized plan. Someone who was *not one of us, but much greater than us*.

Roland's problem was that DNA machinery. Inside every microscopic-sized cell, machines working together to accomplish specific jobs. And shepherded by other specially shaped machines to precise locations where they are needed.

Absolutely mind-boggling. Such a finely tuned apparatus, at this scale of size, bearing the marks of intelligent design and manufacture.

Try as he might to avoid it, here was observable evidence of thoughtful, programmed designing by an ultimate Superior Entity – someone greater than any extraterrestrials. ***Greater than the creation itself.***

## **Could not just evolve - whether here or in outer space**

The more Roland thought it through, the clearer it came.

It boiled down to ***the coded information.*** The DNA code for the storage and translation, contained the ideal number of genetic letters.

This threw him. The copying mechanism of DNA, to meet maximum effectiveness, requires the number of letters in each word to be an even number. Of all possible mathematical combinations, the ideal number for storage and transcription has been calculated to be four letters.

And this is exactly what has been found in the genes of every living thing on earth – a four-letter digital code. “The coding system used for living human beings is ***optimal from an engineering standpoint.*** This suggests it is a case of purposeful design rather than a [lucky] chance.” (Dr Werner Gitt, *In the Beginning Was Information*, p. 95. Emphasis mine)

Evolution? Not here – or anywhere! If ***evolution*** could not account for the ***programming of intelligence*** (or life itself) on this planet, it was equally impossible to explain a more highly intelligent man ***evolving*** on some other planet.

If ***evolution*** of original cells was ***impossible***, then aliens with physical bodies could not be the product of evolution either. Aliens could not themselves have created the matter from which they ultimately came.

The more Roland discovered about the complexity of life, the more he was forced to concede that ***no form of evolution*** was an adequate explanation.

## **Aliens use our own beliefs to control us**

The aliens would know this. Yet they were quite pleased to *take advantage of* individuals who believed in the evolution myth. And they would mischievously use that person's belief to their own evil advantage. One who believes in evolution may become easy prey.

UFO researcher John Keel had perceptively noted that:

They seem to be nothing more than transmogrifications tailoring themselves to our abilities to understand. The thousands of contacts with the entities indicate that *they are liars and put-on artists*. (John Keel. *Operation Trojan Horse*. Lilburn, GA.: Illuminet Press, 1996, p. 266)

## **“Breeding program will help evolution”**

Sometimes they will tell abductees their aim is to produce a hybrid species that will populate the earth. Or they claim they'll be there to carry *evolution* forward, after the human race has brought about the destruction of the earth as a living system. Roland was getting the picture. Those aliens were saying that they had masterminded, or had been overseeing, *human evolution*.

And the new race would become an amalgamation of their “less embodied” species, with us humans.

The aliens were contacting a selected few “prophets”, encouraging them to rise up and show others how to “evolve” to the next stage upward.

Here again, was a reference to *evolution*.

Roland shook his head. It was obvious that most UFO researchers were still bogged down with the evolution theory – which they assumed had created both them and the aliens. This exposed them to deception by these aliens.

And he could see quite plainly now that these “space brothers” were liars. So *what else were they lying to us about?*

Was it aliens who created us – or a supernatural Someone outside of time and space, Someone with unimaginable creative power?

## **An intelligent Designer**

For the first time in his life, Roland was seeing it clearly...

This planet's complexity of life - as evidenced by *DNA* and the remains of *fossils* – showed all signs of having “burst” into existence fully formed. It showed *no evidence of evolutionary ancestry*.

And if matter *could not arrange itself* into complex life of any type by natural processes, even the *ETs needed to have had a Creator*.

## **No help needed from ETs**

Like it or not, he had to face it. Such an intelligent Creator would be totally adequate to account for (a) the origin of life on earth; (b) man's original intelligence; and (c) early man's advanced civilization.

With no need for ET help. So civilization did not suddenly drop into the Middle East from some star.

Roland shook his head. Evolution? A non-event. It had been popularised by Charles Darwin BEFORE most of the discoveries of modern science were known. Of course, Darwin had hoped his ideas would be confirmed by paleontology and other sciences, given some time. But the expected fossil links to confirm his theory were never found. They just did not exist! And new sciences, such as genetics, were unknown.

Yes, DNA changes the whole game. It means *man was already intelligent from the first cell* – with the *information* ability to invent his own technology and high civilization, from Day 1.

Even ETs could not be there without that Great Designer. The evolution of intelligent life was so improbable that it was unlikely to have occurred on any other planet in the entire visible universe.

So was the existence of “God” unscientific? Rather it was the opposite, it now appeared.

## **Where did the Creator come from?**

But where did this “God” come from?

Then it struck him. Everything on this earth has a time limit or a space limit to it. We understand only those things that have a beginning and an end. We are inhibited by our understanding of the space and time in which we live.

But if there is One who created *all things*, then would He be necessarily limited by time? No, He would not need to have to have a beginning as we understand it.

He is *outside of everything He made*.

A few weeks earlier, Roland had dropped by at the Thornton sports field. A baseball game had been in full swing. And he had plopped himself down on the grass to watch it. For a brief few minutes his attention had been attracted to a tiny ant battling heroically through the grass.

The scenario had intrigued him. That little ant living under a sports field... he moves around beneath the turf, perfectly familiar with his little world – the blades of grass overhead, the soil beneath him, and the tinier life forms all around. That's the world the ant understands.

As a baseball game unfolds, this little ant may see an occasional shadow moving above him. He may hear the thud of giant feet and feel the ground shake. But he has not the foggiest idea what is going on in that world above him. He crawls around the grass roots, virtually unaware of anything but his own world.

Could I explain that baseball game to that ant? Roland smiled. He would be incapable of comprehending.

Come to think of it, am I not just like that little ant, when it comes to knowing about the Supreme One?

Yeah, thought Roland. If I could fully understand God, I should either be a god myself, or God Himself would cease to be God.

Just because I live in my reality is no reason to dismiss another reality of existence.

### **Would he have the desire to communicate?**

And then a far-out thought surfaced. Could it be that the Supreme One might want to interact with creatures He has made?

Roland strolled out into the garden. It was a good place to sharpen his mind. Okay, he thought, the Designer creates man with an ability to communicate - would He communicate with them? Very likely!

### **Ability to communicate?**

But would such a Supreme One be able to communicate? Silly question. After all, hadn't this Master Designer *inter-dimensionally transmitted coded data* into our DNA molecules? So couldn't He easily pass on additional information in other ways to those same humans He had created? Even to guiding human minds to write down messages?

After all, according to UFOlogists and spiritualists, even alien entities do communicate with individual humans – and these persons are writing down what they are instructed.

So could not a Creator be able to do at least that? Roland had once scoffed when he heard science teacher Al Coster suggest as much. Now what had Al Coster said? Oh yeah... that according to ancient prophets, the Creator *had* communicated with mankind through history.

Now, here was Roland Brown, hard nosed engineer – and a rational skeptic –thinking along similar lines!

One thing was for sure, grunted Roland. Such a Creator would *not need* a space ship to do it.

\* \* \* \* \*

### **Who, then, are the aliens?**

Now his thoughts were back to the aliens. No, those aliens were not from some other world. They belonged here, but from another dimension. They were intelligent... and communicating, it seemed, with mankind. But they were liars and con artists. You could not trust them. But still the question was... *Who were these scoundrels... really?*

Roland looked at the time... Four twenty. Al Coster should be finishing up at school. Time also to pick up Angie. What not drop in on Al?

So ten minutes later, Roland was peering into Al's classroom.

Al ambled to the door. "Roland, what a pleasure!" he said, extending his hand. Then he saw Roland's face. "Something bothering you?"

"You could say that," said Roland. "Look Al, I'll get right to the point. These aliens... do you have any clues?"

"Man, you don't mess around, do you? You want evidence, of course? How about you and Angie come home for dinner? Gloria's good at adding water to the soup."

\* \* \* \* \*

"Whew! That was a great swim. Put new life into me!" enthused Roland, toweling himself as they came up from the beach.

"Yes, I'll have to find more time, with the triathlon coming up," Al smiled.

"Shame on you!" chided Roland. "You live right here by the sea. You should be in every morning."

They hung up their gear and ambled into the kitchen. "What's cooking, girls?"

"Can't you guys just wait fifteen minutes?" sparred Gloria. "Or thirty," giggled Angie.

Al opened the frig door and turned to his visitor. "How about a drink?"

The two men plopped down onto the lounge.

"Okay Al, back to this 'ET alien' matter," said Roland, taking a sip. "You know all about Angie. Who are these beasts?"

"If you want it straight," responded Al, "*just focusing on ETs alone won't supply the answer.*"

Roland put down his glass and stared at Al. "What are you trying to say?"

"You need to know the BIGGER PICTURE."

"The *bigger picture*? What the heck is that?"

“ETs are one part of a universal drama in which this planet is involved. Grasp that bigger picture and you’ll know WHY they are here.”

“You think there’s something sinister going on?”

“Sinister? It’s downright dangerous.”

“What are you saying?” Al noticed the pain on Roland’s face. Angie’s ordeal!

“It’s all about MANIPULATION.”

“Manipulation? What makes you say that?”

### **A book with an important role in UFO beliefs**

“From an Intelligence document.” Al took another sip. “If you want to know your enemy, the secret is: Intelligence. Military Intelligence. No battle was ever won without it.”

“Where is this document?”

“It’s a book that these aliens themselves often allude to.”

“What’s that?”

“The Bible.”

“*The Bible?*” Roland laughed.

“Do you know why these aliens are apparently *obsessed* with the Bible more than any other religious book?”

“I didn’t know they were.”

“Well, it’s a fact.”

Al paused to finish the contents of his can. “Religious beliefs aside,” he went on, “It’s an Intelligence document.”

“That book of fables?” laughed Roland, brushing an ant off his leg. “You can’t take it literally.”

“For whatever reason,” said Al, “that Book seems to play an important role in UFO beliefs. It’s said to be the most complete reference book on the subject. For Angie’s sake, you need to investigate it.”

“It’s just fables!” snorted Roland.

“Good. Where do you want to start?” asked Al.

“How’s this for an idea,” suggested Roland. “There’s an archaeologist in town tomorrow night. He’s lecturing in the tennis club hall. He’s advertised his topic as *Fact or Fable.*”



“And what’s that about?”

“The ad says he’ll be speaking on – would you believe – archaeology and the Bible. So I bet he’ll blow those myths to pieces.”

“You’ve got me!” beamed Al. “Why don’t we go?”

Roland sniggered. “Yeah. It’ll be good for a laugh.”

**NOTE:** If our story appears to be deviating from UFO aliens for a time, please be patient, because we must necessarily establish the comparative credibility of certain documents that are an essential part of the UFO drama.



## **Part 2:**

# **INTELLIGENCE REPORT**



## 8

### *Archaeology's verdict: –*

# THE BOOK ALIENS HATE

Al and Roland arrived early, but the auditorium was already full... except for some seats in the front row.

Roland laid his coat across one of seats. "I'll go back to the car to get my notepad," he said.

The speaker was introduced as Brad Sheed. After the convenor's introductory comments, the archaeologist took the microphone. He announced that during the session, whoever had a question, was welcome to raise his hand at the appropriate time and the matter would be addressed.

Mr Sheed's lecture was to be illustrated on a large screen.

The first shot was of a camping site by the Red Sea.

"The desert pushed right down to the water's edge," the speaker began. "And as Sayid, our Egyptian friend, packed the sleeping gear on to the roof rack, Paul watched the sun climb over the sea.

"If we were not mistaken, there was something quite startling down there on the floor of the Red Sea. But this whole saga began much, much earlier... in that land of romance and mystery, ancient Egypt."

Did you hear that?" whispered Roland. "Something startling. I wonder what that can be?"

"Sh-sh," chided Al.

Pictures of Egypt's ancient glories followed in quick succession.

"Some 3,500 years ago, in the most glorious era of her history, Egypt was the granary of the world. She was eminent in science, the arts, luxury and magnificence. Egypt was, in a sense, the super power of that day."

"So far, so good," whispered Roland.

## **Slaves' baby becomes a prince**

“Now I shall relate a story,” said the archaeologist. “Some will call it myth. Others history.

“In 1526 BC there was born a baby who was to dramatically alter that status. Moses was born to Hebrew parents in humble surroundings. But his destiny had grander plans for him. By a miraculous twist of circumstances, he grew up to be trained as ‘the son of Pharaoh’s daughter’.”

“Well that’s rubbish!” mumbled Roland.

“Sh-sh. Hear what he has to say,” cautioned Al.

“Because of his relation to the throne,” Sheed continued, “Moses had all the might and wealth of Egypt at his fingertips. He became a great statesman and general. Yet he had learned that the thousands of slaves working in the brick-pits were his people, and that his destiny was linked with theirs.

“The time came for Moses to make his decision. He could choose to become king of what was the world’s greatest empire, or to be numbered among the sweating and grumbling slaves.

## **Red Sea crossing**

“The book of Exodus tells us that when the Hebrew slaves escaped from Egypt with Moses, they were pursued by the pharaoh’s army. When they were trapped at the Red Sea, a strong wind blew from the east, opening up a passage for them to escape on a dry sea bed, with a frozen wall of water on either side. But when the Egyptian army pursued them the sea collapsed upon them and the army was drowned.

“Well, we have had at least 30 international divers scouring the sea bed. We dived on the Egyptian side and another dived off the Saudi Arabian coast... and guess what we found... the remains of chariot cabs, wheels and skeletal parts of horses and men, scattered across the sea bed.

“These chariot remains were not in perfect condition and required careful examination to see exactly what they were. They were covered in coral, which made it difficult to see them clearly. The coral was the agency that had preserved them!

“There were numerous wheels. Some were still on their axles, and some were off. There were chariot cabs without the wheels.



“Meanwhile, Viveka Ponten, a Swedish lady with a work permit in Saudi Arabia, following the biblical clues, dived on the Saudi Arabian end of the underwater bridge and found and photographed more remains. These were similar to those we found on the Egyptian end... wheels and skeletons. All scattered across the seabed and mixed together.

“A portion of one wheel was taken up from the sea floor and presented to Nassif Mohammed Hussan, of the Egyptian Antiquities Department in Cairo. He pronounced it to be from the same period given in the Bible for *Moses* and the Exodus. Evidence, it appears, that the Bible record can be taken literally, as real history.



## Pre-judging

“For many today, the study of history is incorporated with the ideas that there is no God, miracles are not possible, we live in a closed system and there is no supernatural.

“With these presuppositions they begin their ‘critical, open and honest’ investigation of history.

“When they study, for example, the story of Moses and the crossing of the Red Sea, they conclude it was not a miracle or even a real event, because we know (not historically, but philosophically) that there is no spiritual dimension.

“Therefore, these things cannot be. What men have done is to rule out the Exodus of Moses and the Israelites even before they start an historical investigation of the Exodus.

“These suppositions are not so much scientific biases, but rather, *philosophical prejudice*. Instead of beginning with the scientific and historical data, they preclude it by ‘metaphysical speculation’.

Roland thrust up his hand. A roving microphone was brought over to him.

“Yes, sir?” invited the speaker.



## Crossing the River Jordan

“I’m Roland Brown, an engineer. “You might have confirmed one story. But have I got an hilarious one for you! The Bible says that after the Exodus they travelled to the Promised Land, and came to the Jordan River. It was flooded... and the river stopped flowing so they could cross over! Would you admit, that’s a tall tale, if ever there was one?”

“That book you refer to, Mr Brown, known as the Bible, I’m going to call it the *Intelligence Report*.”

Roland sneered. “Oh, you’re just too gullible.”

“Thankyou for your question,” said the archaeologist, calmly. “I am sure everyone will agree with you that it’s quite a story.”

Roland sat down and smugly crossed his arms. “Let’s see how he’ll wriggle out of that!” he chuckled.

“Now,” said Sheed, “there’s something interesting about the geography there. Sixteen miles upstream from Jericho there’s a place called Damieh. That’s the site known as Adam in the biblical incident. At that spot, the limestone cliffs rise hundreds of feet high, forming a deep, narrow gorge through which the stream flows rapidly, especially at the season of floods.

“Due to erosion or earth tremors the cliffs at this point sometimes collapse, completely blocking the river with a natural dam.

“It may interest you to know that the River Jordan has ceased to flow on at least three different known occasions in history. These were AD 1267, 1907 and 1927. The 1927 event was actually witnessed by archaeologist Professor John Garstang. Newspapers reported that the waters from the upper stream were blocked for 21 hours, so that many people crossed and re-crossed the Jordan on foot.”

“Well I must say, he’s full of surprises,” whispered Roland.

Brad Sheed continued. “The event was really a miracle of timing. Could it be that the Creator is in control of the laws of nature?”

## Critics “had a ball”

“For many years the higher critical scholars of Europe stood unchallenged.

“That was because so many biblical names and stories were found nowhere else except in that *Intelligence Report*. And it certainly did appear that its stories were ‘made up’.

“As an example, the Bible mentioned a nation called ‘Hittites’. But they were unknown to history.

“So critics could boldly claim, without fear of being proved wrong, that the Hittites simply had not existed... that those stories were fable and legend.”

“Then, in 1879, A.H. Sayce and W. Knight identified strange hieroglyphic inscriptions found in northern Syria and Anatolia as monuments of the long-lost Hittites.

“In 1860, the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* had devoted to the Hittites a mere eight lines on one column. But its 1947 edition would give over ten full pages of two columns each to an article dealing with Hittite history, culture and religion.

“More widespread digging began to take place in the Middle East. And the deciphering of cuneiform inscriptions started to furnish evidence which would leave the critics dumbfounded.”

Well, that’s interesting, thought Roland. He doubled his coat over the arm rest, so as to be more comfortable.

## Jericho’s walls tumble down

“Take, for example, the story of Jericho, on the Jordan’s West Bank.

“The first outpost standing in the way of the Hebrew tribes occupying the Promised Land of Canaan (Palestine) was the city of Jericho. The Bible story is that the Hebrews camped nearby. Then they marched around the city every day for a week. Except, on the seventh day they marched around it seven times. Yes, seven times in a single day. They then blew a chorus of trumpets. And the walls came crashing down.”

Roland winced. A bit far-fetched, that was! But he sat in silence.

“Today, you can see what remains of ancient Jericho.

“Archaeological evidence confirms that an earthquake truly did bring down the walls of Jericho. According to Dame Kathleen Kenyon, who excavated the site in the 1950s, scorching and ashes throughout the city prove that ‘the destruction of the walls was the work of enemies.’

“This is precisely how Joshua’s capture of Jericho is portrayed in the *Intelligence Report* – an earthquake that broke down the city walls and the whole city burned to the ground. (Joshua 6:24)

“The fallen walls of Jericho seen today are precisely those that came tumbling down in the face of Joshua’s army.

“Kenyon’s expedition uncovered a portion of a house wall and floor, with an oven and a small jug, which appeared to be ‘part of the kitchen of a Canaanite woman, who may have dropped the juglet beside the oven and fled at the sound of the trumpets of Joshua’s men’. (Kathleen M. Kenyon, *Digging Up Jericho*, p. 263)

“The single dipper juglet was beside the oven, lying on the floor. It was found *in situ*.”

Sheed continued. “The biblical story has been substantiated in a number of ways.

1. There was a king for each of the small city-states, just as the Bible suggests.
2. There were double walls.
3. Only one gateway was found. This harmonizes with the biblical comment about ‘shutting of THE gate.’

“Apparently all of the city of the time of Joshua (and parts of even earlier levels) was eroded away. This is not surprising.

The crumbling mud-brick structures were not preserved by being built upon by later inhabitants, because the city was unoccupied for centuries after Joshua’s time. (Joshua 6:21) Pottery finds in the tombs outside the city, indicate that Jericho was inhabited in the 14<sup>th</sup> century, just as the *Intelligence Report* states.”

## **Seven times around in one day**

That seven times around in one day kept niggling at Roland. He couldn't let that pass, any longer. His hand went up.

"Yes, Mr Brown?"

"You say they marched around this city seven times in one day? That would be impossible."

"Thankyou," said Brad Sheed. "I wish you could have been with me. Some time ago, I explored those ruins. Actually, Jericho was a collection of tiny dwellings compactly crowded together on such a scale that you can easily walk around the foundations in 30 minutes or less! The city's total size was less than 8 acres. Seven times around would be less than 3 miles.

"It seems the *Intelligence Report* has stood the investigation remarkably well – certainly better than the opinions of the scholars!"

Roland was surprised at this evidence. His curiosity perked higher.

## **14<sup>th</sup> century date for conquest of Canaan**

"Critical scholars were fond of saying there was no Hebrew (Israelite) Exodus. And there were others who, while accepting such an event, rejected the biblical dating of 1400 BC. They preferred to place the Hebrew Exodus and the subsequent conquest of Canaan, as late as 1200 BC.

"Then came more discoveries. And who turned out to be right? The *Intelligence Report* - or the critics? Let's see..."

"From that same 14<sup>th</sup> century BC there has now been discovered a complete royal archive. This comprises hundreds of official letters received by the Egyptian kings Amenhotep III and IV from their Palestinian and Syrian vassals.

"Known as the Amarna Letters, these documents prove Egypt was politically weak in the 14<sup>th</sup> century BC, during the very time which the Bible claims the Hebrews were invading Palestine (Canaan). Some of these letters come from the king of Jerusalem, Abdu-khepa – a Hittite. He pleads for weapons and soldiers from Egypt to defend his city from the invading *Habiru*. He writes that they have already taken over great parts

of the country, and that they threaten to overrun the whole land. So here is a description of the *Hebrew* conquest of Canaan as the Canaanites saw it.

“And there is further evidence – this time, proving that the Hebrews were *already* in Canaan in the 13<sup>th</sup> century BC – long before the time claimed by critical scholars. Monuments in the form of high stone pillars were frequently erected by Egyptian pharaohs to commemorate their victories and political success. One such stele set up by Pharaoh Merneptah mentions Israel as a people he had defeated in a battle in one of his Palestine campaigns. This bears witness to the existence of the Israelites in Palestine in the 13<sup>th</sup> century, just as the *Intelligence Report* says.

### **Archaeology’s verdict on biblical persons, places and events**

“We mentioned,” Sheed continued, “that because so many names– and events – were *known only from* the *Intelligence Report*, these were blasted by critics as pure myth. This skepticism prevailed for many years. But now archaeology has turned the whole situation around. Here is a handful of the many examples:

- Pharaoh Shishak’s successful Palestinian campaign in the fifth year of King Rehoboam: a fragment of his victory monument found at Megiddo, confirms the biblical account. (1 Kings 14:25,26)
- Many fragments of beautifully carved ivory plaques originating from Ahab’s ivory palace. (1 Kings 29:39)
- Assyrian inscriptions of Sennacherib’s siege of Jerusalem in 701 BC, against Hezekiah. (2 Kings 18:13 to 19:36)
- Assyrian inscriptions mentioning the biblical kings Joash, Azariah and Manasseh, Ahab, Jehu, Jehoash, Menahem, Pekah and Hoshea.
- Babylonian receipts confirming the exile and food rations of Judah’s king Jehoiachin. (2 Kings 24:8-15; Jeremiah 52:30-34)
- Excavations at Susa in Iran, show the layout of the Persian palace in such perfect agreement with the biblical description of it (in the Book of Esther) that scholars have been led to admit

that only someone well acquainted with the palace, its environs, its divisions, and its court ceremonial could have written it.

- Almost every Assyrian, Babylonian, or Persian ruler mentioned in the Bible has been rediscovered in contemporary documents – Shalmaneser, Tilgath-pileser, Nebuchadnezzar, Belshazzar, Cyrus, Darius the Great, Xerxes, Sargon, and many others.
- Even officials whose names are in the Bible, such as Nebuzar-adan (2 Kings 25:8) or Nergal-sharezer (Jeremiah 39:3) are met with in the official documents of their time.

## **Babylon's fiery furnace**

“The *Intelligence Report* speaks of Hebrews being thrown into a fiery furnace by Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon. (Daniel ch. 3; Jeremiah 29:22) Excavators in the ruins uncovered a peculiar cone-shaped structure that appeared to be a firing-kiln for the production of brick or pottery. But when the cuneiform figures were deciphered, linguists were astonished to find this inscription:

*This is the place of burning where men who blasphemed the gods of Chaldea died by fire.*

“That the incident recorded in the book of Daniel concerning punishment in a fiery furnace was in keeping with the times is also shown by an inscription of the Assyrian king Ashurbanipal:

*Saulmagina my rebellious brother, who made war with me, they threw into a burning fiery furnace, and destroyed his life.*

“Nebuchadnezzar's son-in-law, in one of his royal inscriptions, claims to have *'burned to death adversaries and disobedient ones.'*

## **Daniel in the lion's den**

“The book of Daniel also records that the Hebrew captive Daniel was tossed into a den of lions. (Daniel chapter 6)

“That such ‘lion’s den’ punishment was in keeping with the times is now proven by the discovery of that same inscription of Ashurbanipal that we just mentioned. It continues thus:

*The rest of the people who had rebelled they threw alive among bulls and lions, as Sennacherib my grandfather used to do. Lo, again following his footsteps, those men I threw into the midst of them.*

“On one occasion, as the famed excavator Marcel Dieulafoy was digging amid the ruins of Babylon, he fell into a pit that appeared like an ancient well. Being rescued by his companions, he proceeded with the work of identification. What was his astonishment to find that the pit had been used as a cage for wild animals. And upon the curb was this inscription:

*The Place of Execution, where men who angered the king died torn by wild animals.*

## **Nebuchadnezzar was Babylon’s great builder**

“The book of Daniel identifies Nebuchadnezzar as the builder of mighty Babylon. (Daniel 4:30)

“An inscription by Nebuchadnezzar now in the Berlin Museum states:

*I have made Babylon, the holy city, the glory of the great gods, more prominent than ever before, and have promoted its rebuilding.*

“Numerous bricks have been found in the ruins of Babylon, stamped with Nebuchadnezzar’s name.

## **Belshazzar the last king of Babylon**

“According to the *Intelligence Report*, the last king of the Chaldeans was Belshazzar. (Daniel 5:2,30,31) This name was unknown outside the *Report* (or works based on it).



*An account of the building of the walls of Babylon by Nebuchadnezzar, in Babylonian characters on black basalt, about 600 BC*

“For centuries, scholars hotly denied that Belshazzar ever existed. All secular histories dealing with that period listed the last king as Nabonidus.

“So the book of Daniel was asserted to be a forgery, not written at the time it claimed, but much later, in the 2<sup>nd</sup> century BC.



“It was not until the 20<sup>th</sup> century that contemporary records bearing the name Belshazzar surfaced for the first time in archaeological digs.

“In 1924, Sidney Smith discovered a tablet in the British Museum which showed that Belshazzar was the eldest son of Nabonidus and that in ‘the third year’ Nabonidus ‘entrusted the kingship’ to his eldest son (as coregent) and also placed the army of Babylon under his command.

“This was a severe blow to critics who claimed the biblical book of Daniel to be a product of the 2<sup>nd</sup> century BC. (*Babylonian Historical Texts*. London, 1924, p. 88; Latest trans. By Oppenheim in *Ancient Near Eastern Texts*, ed. By Pritchard. Princeton, 1950, p. 313)

“According to Cuneiform sources, Nabonidus was absent from Babylon at the time of its capture.

“A prayer tablet of Nabonidus says: ‘*As for Belshazzar, the first-born son, proceeding from my loins, place in his heart fear of thy divinity; let him not turn to sinning; let him be satisfied with the fullness of life.*’ Evidently the old king was quite worried over his wayward son.

“That Belshazzar was merely a co-ruler in Babylon is also indicated by the fact that in the Bible (Daniel 5:29) Daniel is referred to as ***third ruler in the kingdom***. Two others are implied. Who were the other two? Nabonidus and Belshazzar, you see!

### **Intricate detail puzzles skeptics**

“Professor R.H. Pfeiffer was typical of those who did not accept the book of Daniel as genuinely written in the 6<sup>th</sup> century BC, but claimed that it was a forgery of the 2<sup>nd</sup> century BC. He expressed puzzlement. His problem was how on earth could accurate information about Belshazzar have been put into the book of Daniel at a time when this king had been so completely forgotten in the ancient world that not one of the Greek authors mentions him?

“Therefore he wrote:

We shall presumably never know how our author learned... that Belshazzar, mentioned only in Babylonian records, in

Daniel, and in Baruch 1:11, which is based on Daniel, was functioning as king when Cyrus took Babylon in 538. (R.H. Pfeiffer, *Introduction to the Old Testament*. New York: 1941, pp. 758,759)

“If you accept the book of Daniel as genuine – that it was written when it says it was – the problem disappears.

“But if a scholar does not want to give up his critical attitude, he finds himself in a serious dilemma. He cannot understand how a man of the Maccabean age (2<sup>nd</sup> century BC) could be so accurately informed about the historical events that took place 300 years earlier, *when no reliable source material of that period existed any more.*”

Roland drifted into his own thoughts...

## **Kings of Israel**

He suddenly remembered a book by a modern critic that he had been reading. In fact it was still in his bag. He reached down and opened it. It said:

Did MOSES, SOLOMON and King DAVID exist? I would say categorically no. (David Icke, *The Biggest Secret*. Bridge of Love Publications USA, Wildwood, MO, USA, 2001, p. 82)

“Well, you’re wrong about Moses, old son,” he thought to himself. “Bother it, why can’t a modern author get that right? But Solomon... David?”

Ask the speaker.

“Yes, Mr Brown?”

“What do you know about Solomon and David. Is it true what Icke says?”

“The same as what he says about Moses,” intoned the archaeologist.

“Oh?”

“You want facts, right?”

“Yeah, go ahead.” Roland took his seat.

## King David

“Well,” said Mr Sheed, “it must be admitted that until fairly recently, there was no evidence outside the *Intelligence Report* for the existence of King David.

### ***Tel Dan inscription:***

“But in 1993, a team of archaeologists in Israel led by Professor Avraham Biram, were excavating Tel Dan. This was a beautiful mound at the foot of Mount Hermon in northern Galilee, beside one of the headwaters of the Jordan River.

“Anyway, on July 21 that year, they came upon a triangular piece of basalt rock, measuring 23 x 36 centimeters. Inscribed in Aramaic, it was eventually identified as part of a victory pillar erected by the king of Syria and later smashed by an Israelite ruler.

“The inscription on the stone dates to the 9<sup>th</sup> century BC. This was about a century after David was believed to have ruled Israel. The inscription includes the words ‘*Beit David*’ (which means ‘House’ or ‘Dynasty of David’) and also refers to ‘King of Israel’.

“So you see, the inscription refers not simply to a David, but to the House of David, the dynasty of the king.

“This reference to David does strongly indicate that a king called David established a dynasty in Israel during the period that the Bible states.

### ***Moabite Stone (also called the Mesha stela):***

“But that’s not all. In the inscriptions on a stele known as the Moabite stone, another scholar found the name ‘House of David’. This is similarly from around 900 BC, a hundred years after the alleged time of King David.

“Please tell me, how did David’s name appear in historical records if he were no more than a later literary invention?”

“Yeah,” grunted Roland, half under his breath. “I see your point.”

“As time passes, more such evidence involving Bible names and places is being discovered. And the skeptics are gradually finding themselves having to retreat.”

Roland exhaled a slight sigh.

“Okay,” he said, standing to his feet. “So David is real history. But where’s the evidence for Solomon? I notice here in Icke’s book, page 87, he says, ‘Solomon – it’s all invention.’ ”  
(*Ibid.*, p. 87)

## **King Solomon**

The archaeologist chuckled. “One might ask, *who is really inventing* tales?” He shuffled over to the blackboard. And wrote:

### ***Temple Hill tablet:***

“Here’s a discovery barely a couple of years old. Israeli geologists announced on January 12, 2003 that they had examined a stone tablet dating to 800 BC which detailed repair plans for the Jewish Temple of King Solomon. Tests confirmed it to be authentic. (See Laurie Copans, The Associated Press, January 14, 2003)

“Not forgetting that there was a different series of stone tablet ‘finds’ in Jerusalem which were later presumed to be forgeries. But I am not talking about those. We need to be careful not to confuse the two.

### ***Tyrian record of Phoenician treaty with King Solomon***

“The *Intelligence Report* speaks of a treaty that King Solomon made with Hiram, king of the Phoenician city of Tyre. (1 Kings 5: 1,12)

“A thousand years later, independently kept copies of this treaty could be read in the public archives of Tyre in Phoenicia.”  
(Flavius Josephus, *Antiquities of the Jews*, Book VIII, Chapter II, Section 7)

### ***Ethiopian record of King Solomon:***

“Also, an independent Ethiopian epic, the *Kebra Nagast*, written about 850 BC, tells the story of an Ethiopian queen’s visit to King Solomon of Israel and of the enormous riches and gifts that he showered upon her.

### ***Indian record of King Solomon's visit:***

“Then there is a mountain in Srinagar, India, called Tahkti Suleiman (‘Solomon’s Mountain’). Very strange, don’t you think, that a mountain in India’s highlands should be named after a Hebrew king – except that an ancient tradition declares that King Solomon came there and arranged for the construction of the temple on the summit.

### ***Monument inscription bearing King Solomon's name:***

“And a pillar was found in 1984 on the eastern shore of the Gulf of Aqaba... very close to the Egyptian remains on the seabed. It bore an inscription in archaic Hebrew:

*MIZRAIM (Egypt); SOLOMON; EDOM;  
DEATH; PHARAOH; MOSES; and YAHWEH.*

“You’ll notice, it mentioned Solomon’s name. And it appeared to have been erected by Solomon to commemorate that miracle of the crossing of the sea on dry ground.

“You can believe it, folk. Solomon was real.”

### **Critics jump the gun**

“A serious campaign to discredit the *Intelligence Report* began with Charles Darwin. When Darwin postulated random evolution, many of his contemporaries, turned off by a hypocritical church, jumped onto the bandwagon, believing they had been given an ‘out’ from belief in a Creator.

“As one might expect, it wasn’t long before the *Intelligence Report* was placed under the microscope – and found to be ‘inaccurate’ or ‘mythical’.

“Critics deemed the Bible writers totally uninformed, foolishly imagining things that did not exist.

“Many critics, acting with woefully incomplete information, simply rushed to judgment. At that time, there was virtually no modern biblical archaeology to “test” their assertions. The critics did not know that hundreds of later

historical and archaeological discoveries would support the Bible's astounding accuracy. And *in great detail*.

Now, however, we know that the people, places and events they wrote about were real. Did the Bible writers imagine the other things that today's critics claim are discrepancies, or were they properly informed about those also?

"From a hands-on field archaeologist, here is the bottom line. Time and continued research have demonstrated that the Bible is *better informed than its critics*. It even clarifies the UFO puzzle – and 21<sup>st</sup> century world events."

The meeting closed. Roland sat, pinned to his seat.

Al began to say something.

"Just leave me," said Roland. "I'll follow soon."

## **Roland's plan**

The thoughts came flooding.

Why was he here tonight? Why was he listening to this stuff about the *Intelligence Report*? It was because of Angie... Angie. Dear, precious Angie. Raped by a despicable, lying alien.

But who are these beasts? "Read that book," Al had said. "Then you'll know."

That's the same Book the archaeologist is talking about, thought Roland. The *Intelligence Report*.

Roland turned his head. The hall had almost emptied. Then he looked up. The archaeologist was standing in front of him.

"Mr Brown, I enjoyed your questions," he said, smiling.

Roland rose to his feet. "Well, Mr Sheed, I have plenty more. How long will you be in Thornton?"

"Oh, most of this week. I hope to do some exploring."

"Did you know," said Roland, "that two prospectors were out in the Tapua valley a few years back. And they stumbled on some unknown ruins."

"How far from here?"

"About 40 miles. Tell you what, my wife's going to be away at her mother's for a couple of days. I could get these guys

to take us out there, if you're willing to camp. And if you'll give time to my questions. But I must warn you, Dan and Harry are skeptics like me."

"Okay," smiled Sheed, offering his hand. "That's a deal."  
... Al steered his car onto the road.

With a quick glance toward Roland, he spoke. "Now, man, what if that *Intelligence Report* is *not* such a fraudulent document, after all? What if there's something in it that certain folk just *don't want us to know*?"

Roland shrugged.

"Have you stopped to wonder," asked Al, "*why the aliens – of all persons – are so obsessed with discrediting that document? WHY THEM?*"

"Beats me," said Roland. "I can't wait till tomorrow. I intend to grill that guy."

\*\*\*\*\*

A small boy was sitting on a park bench, exclaiming excitedly, "WOW! That's fantastic!" A 'learned' gentleman, a skeptic, approached.

"Well, son what are you getting so excited about?"  
"Oh, Sir, I am reading how God made the waters of the Red Sea stand up and let all the Israelites cross on dry land, and then when the 600 Egyptian soldiers in their horses and chariots tried to follow them, God let the waters go back to normal and drowned them all."

"Oh come now, son," said the man pontifically, "the Bible is mistaken, it wasn't the Red Sea, but the Reed Sea and it's only 6 inches deep. When it says they walked on dry land, that means the water was only ankle deep." And having set the boy straight, he continued on his way, only to hear "WOW! That's awesome!"

So he turned back and asked the boy, "What are you carrying on about now?"

"Isn't God great," answered the boy, "He managed to drown all 600 soldiers and their horses and chariots in only 6 inches of water!"

\*\*\*\*\*

**NOTE:** If our story appears to be deviating from UFO aliens for a time, please be patient, because we must necessarily establish the comparative credibility of certain documents that are an essential part the UFO drama.



## 9

### *Prophecies about super powers -*

# THE CITY THAT VANISHED INTO THE SEA

“Quick, get out!” shrieked Dan, pushing him back. “It’s a snake!”

Brad Sheed tumbled down the slope, knocking his knee on a rock near the camp fire.

“Boy, that was close!”

“Well, you’re back,” quipped Harry. “Just in time to eat. Come on guys.”

Dan and Harry had prospected this valley so long, they knew every niche. “There’s more ruins higher up the slope,” announced Harry, “But tomorrow’s another day.”

... “Okay,” said Roland, as they finished cleaning up. “We three have some curly questions for you, Brad. He eyed his companions. Yes, they were ready. He saw it in their eyes.

He turned to the archaeologist. “You say your *Intelligence Report* has the definitive answer to the UFO puzzle. But how can you prove it’s a credible document for such matters? Come on, give me your very best reason why I should trust it as a reliable source of information.”

## **Why trust the Intelligence Report?**

The archaeologist tossed a large piece of pine root into the flames, then stared at the three men. “In one word, it’s PROPHECY,” he said.

“Prophecy?” Dan looked surprised.

“That’s right,” said Brad. “And prophecy can be tested. *It is as rigidly demonstrable as geometry.* Other evidence can be falsified, changed, or lost. Memory may fail, conflicting

statements may cloud the issue. Or passion, self-interest, dishonesty, or whatever, may impair proofs. But prophecy relates to history, and history is recorded fact.

Roland coughed. All eyes turned his way. “Suppose we disproved the Bible prophecies, what then?” he asked.

“Here’s what,” said Brad. “That *Intelligence Report* stakes everything on its ability to foretell the future. It claims God gave the information - that He is the *only one* able to foretell world history. It challenges others *everywhere* to foretell the future:

*Who, as I... shall declare... the things that are coming, and that shall come to pass, let them declare. (Isaiah 44:7)*

“Has any skeptic a cause to present? Hear its challenge:

*Produce your cause, saith the Lord; bring forth your strong reasons... Declare to us what shall happen: declare you... things to come. (Isaiah 41:21-23)*

“Science has accomplished many wonderful things,” said Brad. “But it has not brought us one whit closer to penetrating the future than were the ancients. You can just as easily pluck the stars from the Milky Way as wrench from the future its secrets. Usually we can’t even foretell the outcome of a horse race a minute before it ends. We can guess and hope. But we cannot know.

“But if the future has been declared accurately and clearly for thousands of years ahead... what then?”

## **2 ways to discredit the Intelligence Report**

Brad Sheed looked at each man in turn. “Now, I shall give you two very simple, effective, and conclusive methods to shatter the Bible to atoms:

1. Just disprove the prophecies.
2. Produce some other book containing real prophecies.”

“You’ve heard of the Phoenician city of Tyre, on the Mediterranean coast?”

“Sure,” said Harry.

“Well, for 2,000 years Tyre grew in importance until she was mistress of the sea. She was the commercial center of the world. Carthage, the rival of Rome, was only a colony of Tyre. Into Tyre, beautiful, rich, and sophisticated, flowed the fine gold of Tarshish, the precious stones of Aram, the spirited horses of Armenia, the beautiful ivories of Damascus, the fine linen of Egypt, the flocks of Arabia, the perfumes of Sheba, the slaves of Javan. You name it.

“You could say Tyre was the New York of Asia. Ships from all nations anchored in her harbor and their passengers bartered in her streets.

### **An unlikely prophecy**

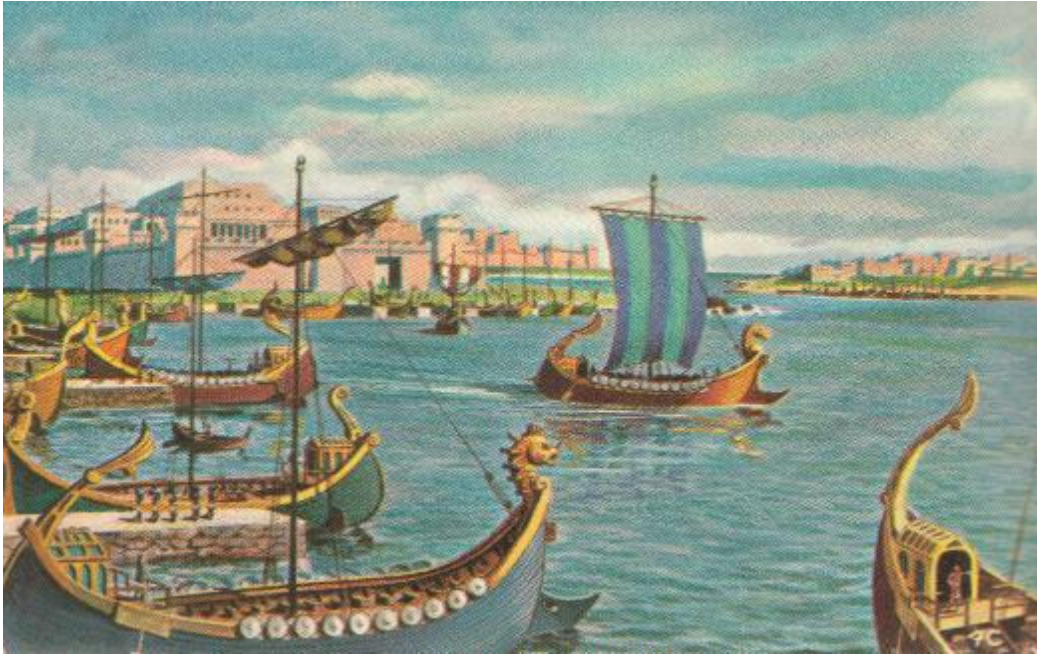
“About 590 BC, while Tyre was at the height of her glory and power, when it seemed she *must* stand for ever, along came the prophet Ezekiel, and said:

*They shall destroy the walls of Tyrus, and break down her towers: I will also scrape her dust from her, and make her like the top of a rock. It shall be a place for the spreading of nets in the midst of the sea: for I have spoken it, saith the Lord Yahweh [God]: . . . and they shall lay thy stones and thy timber and thy dust in the midst of the water.... and I will make thee like the top of a rock: thou shalt be a place to spread nets upon; thou shalt be built no more: for I the Lord have spoken it, saith the Lord Yahweh. (Ezekiel 26:4-14)*

“Immediately after that prophecy was made, Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon besieged Tyre. After 13 years of effort, he took the city and destroyed it, inflicting fearful vengeance on buildings and people.”



*The only known portrait of Nebuchadnezzar*



*Ancient Tyre on the eastern coast of the Mediterranean Sea*

Roland interjected. “But wait a minute, Brad. You can’t prove the prophecy was written before Nebuchadnezzar’s time. According to your own statement, Ezekiel was contemporary with the king.”

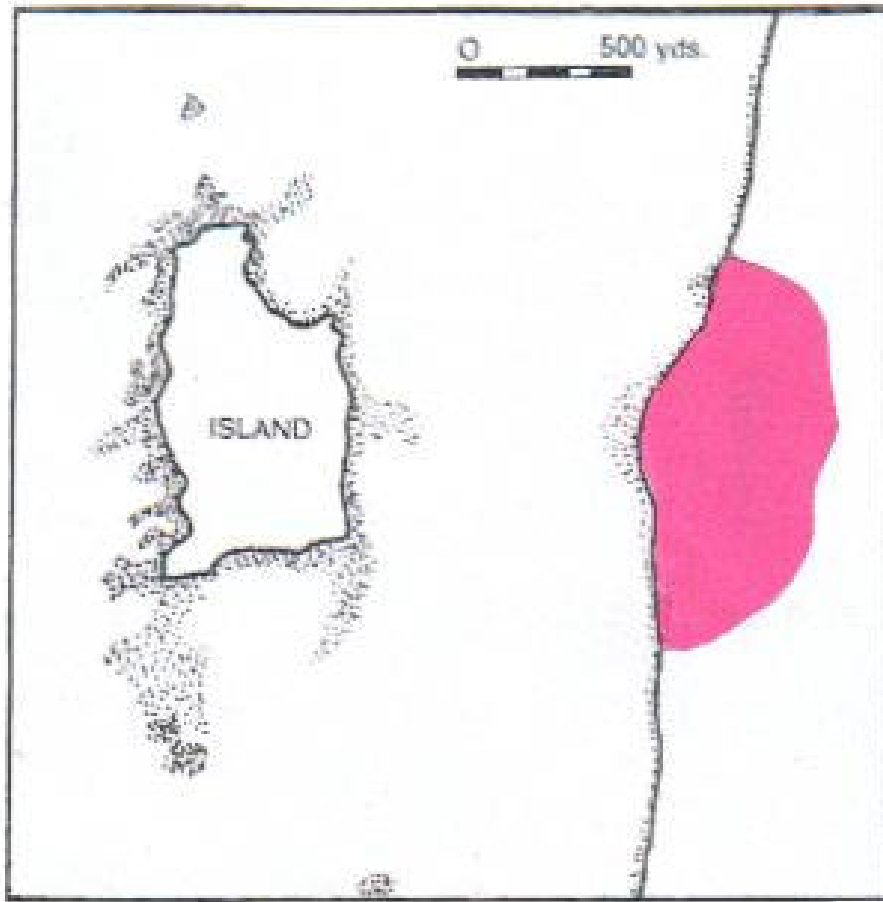
“True,” replied Sheed, “While personally I believe the prediction was made before Nebuchadnezzar besieged Tyre, I shall not refer merely to that siege. You see, the prophecy merely began with the king of Babylon’s siege, but its predictions looked more than 2,000 years into the future, as we shall see.

### **Stones, timber and dust to be laid in the water, leaving the bare rock**

“Nebuchadnezzar left the old city in ruins. But the prophecy declared that the timbers and rocks and even the very dust were to be cast into the sea, leaving a bare rock.

“It seemed improbable that this would ever happen, because if Nebuchadnezzar, in his anger, had taken full vengeance, and had not thought of this, who was likely to care

enough about the ruins of a deserted city to be so violently destructive? It would be needless and crazy.



*Tyre's location on the mainland Phoenician coast*

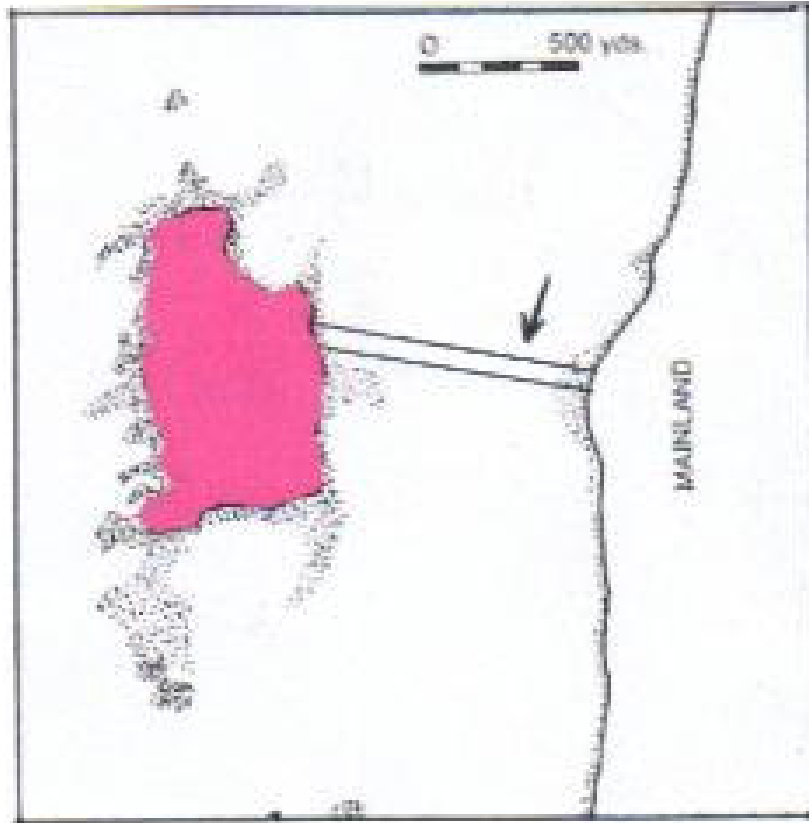
“Two and a half centuries passed, and still the ruins stood, a challenge to the accuracy of prophecy. Then through the East the fame of Alexander the Great sent a thrill of terror. In 332 BC, he marched down the coast toward old Tyre.

“Reaching the shore, he saw its ruins. But the people had moved onto an island. Half a mile of water surged between him and the island.

“Having no ships, Alexander planned a different strategy. He took the walls, towers, timbers, and ruined houses and palaces of the ancient Tyre, and dumped them in the sea to form a solid causeway to the island. So great was the demand for

material that the very dust was scraped from the site, and laid in the sea.

“And so the site of Tyre became like the top of a rock – just as the prophecy foretold.

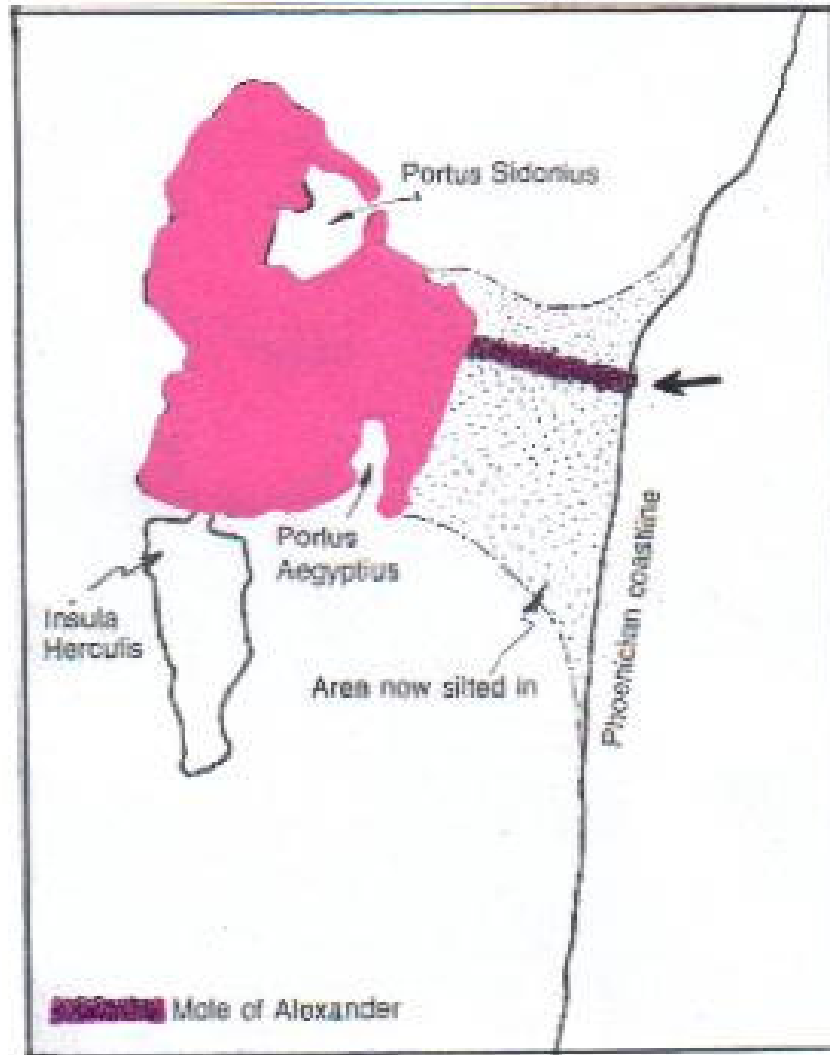


*Alexander scraped the timber, stones and dust of old Tyre into the sea to build a causeway out to the island (see arrow).*

“I have been there. With my own eyes I have seen the fulfilment of the prophecy. From out of the sea, beside Alexander’s causeway, I have picked up pieces of beautiful colored glassware, porcelain, and tile work that once adorned mainland Tyre.

Roland gazed into the fire. Then he looked at Brad. “What you have said concerning Tyre is true, but what of it? You could never prove that the supposed prophecy was written *before* the events it describes. At this great distance from the events, three or four centuries is a small matter. Your argument is far from

conclusive, and I for one believe the Book of Ezekiel was written after Alexander's time.”



*Today the area around the causeway has silted in  
and the island is now a peninsula.*

Sheed smiled in reply, “Perhaps the fact that those events fit the prediction has much to do with your conclusion.”

“And perhaps the fact that history verifies Ezekiel's prediction,” retorted Roland, “has much to do with your belief that the prediction was written first. My assumption has as much foundation as yours, and is more reasonable.”

“You overlook three great difficulties in your view,” replied Sheed. “First, the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* (14<sup>th</sup> ed., vol. 9, pp. 13,14, article: Ezekiel) is emphatic in stating that the Book of

Ezekiel was written 586-450 BC, and this is the extreme critical view. ) Even according to that, the prophecy is still 118 years before the event. But we will pass to the second difficulty.

“When you claim Ezekiel *pretends to foretell* what in reality was written *after* the event it professes to predict, you make a book of otherwise high moral teaching a most vicious book, dealing in deception of the basest sort.

“But, Roland, while you create these two difficulties for yourself, there is still a third inherent in your position that no skeptic can remove. I will admit, for the sake of the argument, that the book was written whenever you desire, say 330 BC. Even you cannot claim a later date.” Roland nodded agreement.

“Perhaps you forget there are other particulars in the prediction besides destruction. In some Bible prophecies the cities were to be destroyed and rebuilt - like Jerusalem, which still exists.

“The third difficulty of your view is that old Tyre was to be built no more. This divine sentence of judgment has been a challenge down the centuries to every unbeliever on earth. The *Intelligence Report* has offered this challenge for twenty centuries, daring you and every other skeptic to rebuild this city and thus disprove its word.”

“I never heard of such a thing,” gasped Roland. “Are you serious?”

“Never more so,” replied Brad Sheed, “And I’ll tell you guys *how to disprove* the *Intelligence Report*.”

### **How to disprove the *Intelligence Report***

Dan and Harry looked startled. Harry got up to toss a load of branches onto the fire. He sat down down and faced Brad. “Do you mean to tell us that you admit the Bible can be disproved?”

“On the contrary,” smiled Sheed.

“But you said you would show us how to disprove it,” insisted Harry.

“And I will.”

“Your statements sound contradictory, but go ahead.”



## Original Tyre will never be re-built

“The author himself not only dares you to disprove his predictions,” said Brad, “but has also taken the pains to tell you how. Tyre continues a daily defiance to every unbeliever. *‘Thou shalt be built no more: for I the Lord have spoken it,’* says the prophecy. (Ezekiel 26:14)



*Site of the old city of Tyre today*

“The reason it cannot be rebuilt is here given. You see, here is a test that the author – claiming to be God - has set for the boasting unbeliever - the simple one of rebuilding a city. To do that one thing would disprove the *Intelligence Report*.

“And surely this is not asking an unheard-of thing. Many cities have been rebuilt. Even Rome rose again after Nero watched it burn. History shows that a few determined men have built cities in a surprisingly short time, in various parts of the earth.

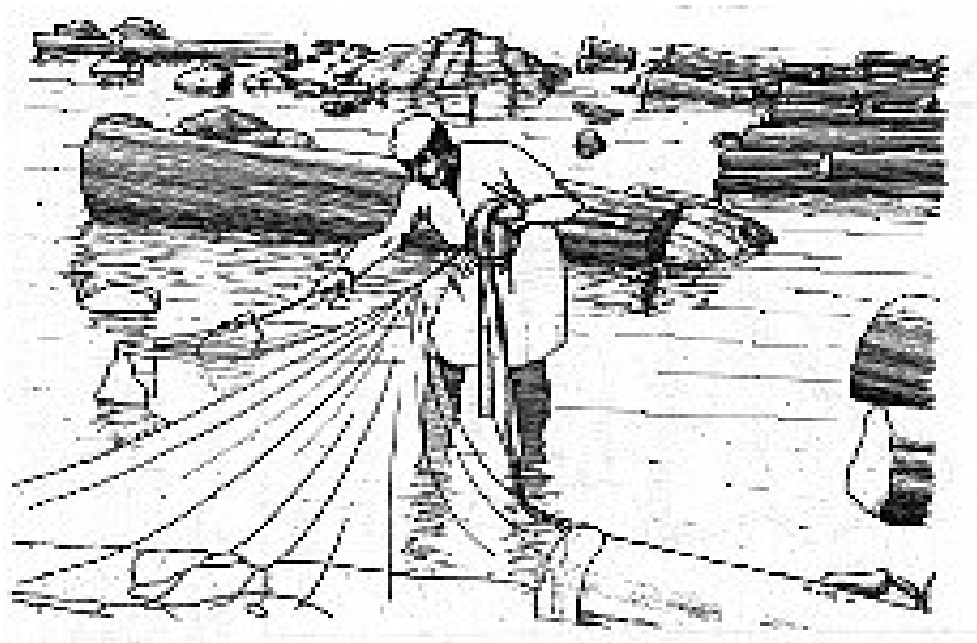
“A dollar each from all skeptics would be sufficient to rebuild Tyre, and thus blast for ever the reputation of the *Intelligence Report* as a truth-telling book. Why not form an infidel colony on the site of old Tyre, go into the fishing business in a modern way, defy prophecy, and answer God's

challenge, *‘Thou shalt be built no more: for I the Lord have spoken it’?*

“Look, it’s a habitable site: ten million gallons of water daily gush from the springs, and fertile fields stretch clear to the distant mountains. Since there are millions of determined doubters who write numberless books to *disprove the Bible*, how did any prophet have the breath-taking daring to utter such a defiant prophecy? For 2,000 years no skeptic has dared say the prediction is untrue.

### **A place to spread nets in the midst of the sea**

“The prophecy says *‘it shall be a place for the spreading of nets in the midst of the sea.’*”



*Fisherman’s nets drying on the causeway in the midst of the sea (sketch from a photo)*

“In fact, Volney, the French skeptic, tells of visiting this spot and observing fishermen drying their nets on the rocks, just as the prophet said they would. (Volney, *Travels*, Vol. 2, p. 212)

“Every year, every day, every minute that Tyre has remained in utter ruin it has *disproved* the emphatic declaration

of skeptics that Bible predictions are vague or were made after the events which they foretell took place.”

“A good guess,” mumbled Harry.

“Oh, come on, Harry. That is not a sufficient answer,” retorted the archaeologist. “It is especially lame in view of the fact that no person outside of the *Intelligence Report* ever made a solitary correct forecast covering hundreds of years concerning any city on earth.

“Now tell me, how come that *only* Bible writers are able to ‘guess’ with perfect accuracy 2,000 years into the future?”

### **Sidon: Blood in her streets, the sword on every side**

“Well, it would be natural,” said Roland, “for a writer, looking upon a ruined city, to assume, hence to predict, that it would never again be inhabited.”

“Really?” asked Sheed. “Such an assumption, however natural, would have plunged the prophet immediately into serious difficulty.

“To illustrate: Ezekiel turned his attention to Tyre's still more ancient sister city only 30 miles distant. While Tyre was still glorying in the splendour of its heyday, Sidon had for centuries been declining in power. Accepting your dating for Ezekiel's writing adds strength to my contention, for while Sidon was still in a state of decay it was taken by Artaxerxes Ochus, king of Persia, in 351 BC, and destroyed!

“Now, Roland, according to your theory, Ezekiel was written still later, at least after Alexander's time. So if the prophet were *judging by appearances* in 330 BC, as you claim he did judge, he would have pronounced complete oblivion as the inevitable fate of Sidon, for nothing seemed more certain than its utter eradication. But Sidon still remains, even now possessing thousands of people.

“Would you notice the prophet Ezekiel's words:

*The word of Yahweh came unto me, saying, Son of man, set thy face toward Sidon, and prophesy against it, and say, Thus saith the Lord Yahweh: Behold, I am against thee, O*

*Sidon.... For I will send pestilence into her, and blood into her streets; and the wounded shall fall in the midst of her, with the sword upon her on every side. (Ezekiel 28:20-23)*

“Observe that the predicted future of Sidon was not utter extinction like that of Tyre, but only blood in her streets, wounded in her midst, the sword on every side.

“And do you know, my friends, that no other city on earth, with the possible exception of Jerusalem, has had so much suffering and been so often destroyed and rebuilt. Yet Sidon has survived continuously right to this day.

“Now, suppose Ezekiel had said that both Tyre and Sidon were to be destroyed and would be built no more, then every one of the thousands of inhabitants of Sidon would be a living proof of the falsity of the prophecy.

“Or suppose that the prophet had said mainland Tyre was to survive, but undergo great suffering, while Sidon would be utterly destroyed and never be rebuilt? What then? Wouldn’t the skeptic have a ball? And with good reason!

“How did it happen that the prophet was exactly right in both cases? How is it that the city that never has been rebuilt is the city of which this fact was foretold, and that the city which has continued to exist with age-long suffering is the one which the prophet foresaw would continue to exist even to our day?

“When you have explained this satisfactorily, you have a still harder question to answer. Sidon, like many other ancient cities, might have sunk into insignificance, so that in its utter defencelessness it could have offered no resistance to even a feeble enemy, and would have tempted no invaders.

“How did Ezekiel know that, in spite of many terrible experiences, it would continue as a place of strength which, age after age, would be fought for, and passed on, wet with blood, from one conqueror to another?

“It has been bitterly fought over by:

Syrians

Egyptians

Persians

Romans

Crusaders  
Muslims  
Mongols  
Turks  
English  
French  
New Zealanders and Australians  
Israelis.”

### **Roland’s challenge**

“Okay,” said Roland, “you have picked out two cities. If, as you say, God is the author of predictions, He should tell us something about whole nations as well. And the predictions should be given at a time when it would seem impossible for the forecast to come true. And something else. The prophecies should reach to the present time.”

“That’s reasonable,” said Brad. “And there are several countries which meet your test. But let’s consider the oldest country in the world - Egypt.”

**NOTE:** If our story appears to be deviating from UFO aliens for a time, please be patient, because we must necessarily establish the comparative credibility of certain documents that are an essential part of the UFO drama.

# 10

## *Prophecies -*

# UNCANNY PROPHECIES OF EGYPT

“You have all admitted,” said Brad Sheed, “that Tyre and Sidon are today exactly as the *Intelligence Report* predicted.

“Yet you know that while the past and present yield their treasures to us as human beings, tomorrow is mockingly silent. No man can foretell world history.

“How limited is the foresight of the most astute statesman. History may flow in a uniform manner for a thousand years until shrewd thinkers reason from analogy that the course of events will continue thus indefinitely. Then suddenly, unforeseen, a single man such as Mohammed or Hitler may change the whole course of history; or an Edison, or Wright brothers or Bill Gates may revolutionize civilization.

“The prophecies I have already shared with you are positive, accurate, and truthful to the smallest detail. Yet that hardly begins the mass of prophecies in the *Intelligence Report* – one thousand of them!

“When Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel lived, Egypt was then so ancient that she boasted a longer unbroken line of kings than did any other nation.

“In their day, 600 BC, Egypt was the granary of the world. It was eminent in science, in the arts, in luxury and magnificence. Egypt was a leader of civilization. For many centuries those artificial mountains, the famed pyramids, had stood as proud sentinels of a mighty country.

“Like its monuments, Egypt seemed to defy the tooth of time. She had the unity, repose, and calm majesty of conscious power, the grandeur of great age. There was not the faintest cloud on the horizon to threaten the peace and power of Egypt.

“It would have been natural to predict for her, unending prosperity.

“Then came the *Intelligence Report* prophets, Isaiah chapter 19 and Ezekiel chapters 29 and 30 foretelling many amazing things concerning Egypt, which would reach more than 2,000 years beyond their death!

“I shall share with you a handful of the more outstanding statements:

*It shall be the basest of the kingdoms; neither shall it exalt itself any more above the nations: for I will diminish them, that they shall no more rule over the nations.’ ‘The pride of her power shall come down.... and her cities shall be in the midst of the cities that are wasted.’ ‘I shall make the land of Egypt desolate, and the country shall be destitute of that whereof it was full.’ ‘I will . . . sell the land into the hand of the wicked: and I will make the land waste, and all that is therein, by the hand of strangers: I the Lord have spoken it. . . . And there shall be no more a prince of the land of Egypt.*  
(Ezekiel 29:4,15; 30:6,7; 32:15; 30:12,13)

### **Egypt: “Not to be destroyed”**

“While prophecy, in speaking of other kingdoms of the Middle East, predicted their destruction and obliteration, of Egypt is predicted that she will remain, but decline.

“The prophecy said it will become a (base) lowly nation.

“The predicted doom of Edom and Chaldea and Babylon was utter extinction, but not so the fate of Egypt. It would survive but enter into continual baseness and decline. It was to continue a nation, but it was no longer to rule. On the contrary, it was to be ruled by cruel strangers.

“This prophecy could not have been the result of mere human foresight. Even 600 years later in the time of Jesus, Egypt was still very powerful.

“The Roman emperor Augustus, after defeating Antony, found so great wealth in Egypt that out of it he paid all the arrears of his army and all the debts he had incurred during the war. Even after he had spoiled Egypt at will, she still appeared to him so formidable that he was afraid to entrust her rulership

to any man of power, lest a rival to himself arise. So he gave the government to Cornelius Gallus, a person of low extraction and denied Alexandria a municipal council.

“And for 600 years more Alexandria continued the first city in the Roman Empire in rank, commerce, and prosperity. Certainly the skeptic of that day might have read the prophecy of Ezekiel with a smile of mockery.

“A hundred years later, Egypt was still so powerful that the Muslim hordes, though arrogant with unchecked victory, hesitated to attack it. When Romulus and Remus founded Rome, Egypt was then nearly 2,000 years old. Rome waxed powerful, conquered the world, including Egypt, and was in turn conquered by the barbarian hosts of the north. But still Egypt continued powerful, rich, and populous.

“The Arabs finally decided to attack her. The memorable siege of Alexandria lasted 14 months, during which the Arabs lost 23,000 men. And then her capture was due to internal treachery. The sight of the city's magnificence and wealth filled the conquerors with amazement.

“The burning of the famous Alexandrian library was a world calamity. Its destruction supplied the Arabs with fuel for six months. The wealth of Alexandria was an indication of the riches and strength of the whole Egyptian nation. It would have been impossible for the Arabs, despite their prowess as warriors, to take the land and to retain it, had not the people, groaning under the cruel oppression of their Greek masters, thrown themselves into the arms of the invaders.

“While the prophecy may seem slow of fulfilment, it has been certain. The decline, though gradual, has been continuous. Let the infidel pens of Volney and Gibbon tell the story.

“ ‘Such is the state of Egypt,’ says Volney, in his *Travels*:

Deprived two thousand three hundred years ago of her natural proprietors, she has seen her fertile fields successively a prey to the Persians, the Macedonians, the Romans, the Greeks, the Arabs, the Georgians, and at length the race of Tartars distinguished by the name of Ottoman



Turks. The Mamelukes, purchased as slaves, and introduced as soldiers, soon usurped the power, and elected a leader.

If their first establishment was a singular event, their continuance is not less extraordinary. They are replaced by slaves brought from their original country. Their system of oppression is methodical. Everything the traveller sees or hears reminds him he is in the country of slavery and tyranny. (Volney, *Travels*, Volume1, pages 74, 103, 110, 193)

“And Gibbon tells us that:

...a more unjust and absurd constitution cannot be devised than that which condemns the natives of a country to perpetual servitude, under the arbitrary dominion of strangers and slaves. Yet such has been the state of Egypt about five hundred years. (Gibbon, *The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, chapter 59)

“Thus do pagan historians witness to the fact that Egypt has declined steadily, to become exactly what the prophet said she would become, ‘the basest of kingdoms,’ ruled ‘by the hand of strangers.’

“And note this: not until modern times could the amazing accuracy of this prediction be appreciated. The more facts we have with which to test this prophecy, the more true it shows itself. Do any of you guys claim that Egypt is different from what is pictured in Ezekiel? So how then do you explain the fact that Ezekiel is so precisely right?”

“Oh,” said Roland, “the writer had seen that in time nations are conquered and become the servants of their masters. He had seen Babylonia and Assyria as well as smaller kingdoms pass into the hands of others. Though Egypt was old and still powerful, he reasoned that she, too, would in time suffer the fate of the others.”

### **Not to suffer the fate of other nations**

“Thankyou, Roland. But you overlook a vital point in your argument: Egypt did not suffer the fate of the others. Babylonia,

Assyria, and other nations about were *destroyed utterly*. Had Ezekiel been predicting by that analogy, he would have said that Egypt would suffer the same fate as the nations that had already been overthrown.

“Now, just suppose that Ezekiel had said that Egypt would, like Babylon and Chaldea, be utterly destroyed, how jubilant would be the skeptics, and how eager to point out the fact that the Egypt of today has many populous cities and a varied population which numbers into the millions. But can you show me a single prophecy concerning Egypt that has failed?”

“Have you given all of them?” asked Roland.

“I have only touched the edges of the subject. I will call your attention to only three or four more amazing predictions concerning Egypt,” replied Brad.

### **“Holy” city Memphis to lose all its images**

“Consider this prophecy:

*Thus saith the Lord Yahweh: I will also destroy the idols, and I will cause the images to cease from Memphis. (Ezekiel 30:13, ARV)*

“Observe that these words are specifically the words of ‘the Lord Yahweh.’ If the thing predicted did not come to pass, there would be no alibi.

“Now, Memphis was known as ‘the great temple city of Egypt.’ A more *unlikely* fate could hardly be imagined than the destruction of the idols and images of Memphis, for these reasons:

“1. The climate of Egypt, where it never rains, preserves whatever is buried in its soil.

“2. In all other cities of Egypt, whether in ruins or now flourishing, idols and images are found in superabundance. Thebes, former capital of Egypt, though in ruins while Memphis was still in splendor, has them in abundance.

“3. As long as 600 years after the prophet lived, the prophecy seemed more impossible still, for Memphis was large and

populous. After Alexandria, it was the second largest city in Egypt.

4. And 1,200 years after the prophecy was given, Memphis was the residence of the governor of Egypt.

5. Then, in the 13th century, Abdul-Latif, an Arabian traveller, tells of the ‘wonderful works which confound the intellect, and to describe which the most eloquent man would labour in vain.’

“Thus 1,800 years after the prediction, it was still unfulfilled, and...”

Roland cut in. “Brad Sheed,” he said, ‘I see your prophecies are a long, long time fulfilling. A thousand to 2,000 years are necessary for your prophecies to prove themselves. Come on, given enough time, any prophecy concerning the destruction of a city or nation must be fulfilled. So, since these prophecies were uttered admittedly about 2,500 years ago, there has been ample time for them to be fulfilled. There is nothing so very miraculous about it.’

A ripple of support was heard from Harry and Dan.

The archaeologist spoke. “I was hoping, Roland, that you would make such an observation. Your very argument is proof you admit the fulfillment, right? Also that you do not claim the prediction was written after the event or that the facts have been juggled to fit the prophecy.

“Hey guys, will you please observe that if the fulfillment of the prediction is near the date of the prediction, it is at once claimed the prophecy must have been made after the date of the fulfillment. And if the fulfilment is 2,000 years after the prediction, the explanation then is that any prediction will eventually be fulfilled, given time enough.

“But unfortunately for this theory, some prophecies already mentioned and others to be produced cannot be explained in this easy manner, and...”

“Can you give me a convincing example?” asked Roland.

“Memphis, the very city we have been considering, is a good example, for time did *not* destroy the idols and images of other Egyptian cities equally old. But I’ll give you the testimony of Amelia B. Edwards, Egyptologist:

And this is all that remains of Memphis, eldest of cities: a few rubbish heaps, a dozen or so of broken statues, and a name! . . . Where are the stately ruins that even in the Middle Ages extended over a space estimated at half a day's journey in every direction? One can hardly believe that a great city ever flourished on this spot or can hardly understand how it should have been effaced so utterly. (Amelia B. Edwards, *A Thousand Miles up the Nile*, pp. 97-99)

“But let’s suppose that all that was necessary to fulfillment was time. Now turn your attention to this prophecy: *‘I ... will sell the land into the hand of evil men.’* (Ezekiel 30:12) This certainly denotes unresisting surrender into the hand of an enemy, just as slaves were sold. The slave has no rights, the wicked no mercy.

“Do you know that Volney, the French skeptic who travelled all over this country, calls Egypt ‘the country of slavery and tyranny.’ MalteBrun, another traveller, writes of ‘the arbitrary sway of the ruffian masters of Egypt.’

“The history of Egypt for the past 2,000 years is but an amazing commentary on the word, *‘I ... will sell the land into the hand of the wicked.’* The impress of that terrible hand is everywhere seen.”

“Oh, come on,” said Roland. “It would be a safe prediction to say evil men would govern. Nearly always rulers of the past, especially conquerors, were evil men.”

## **Egypt to be ruled by strangers**

“True,” said Sheed. “I am glad you admit the truth of the prediction, whatever your explanation. However, in this connection consider another prediction in the same verse:

*I will make the land desolate, and all that is therein, by the hand of strangers.*

“Long after that prophecy was given – for the past 2,500 years - Egypt has been ruled by strangers - Persians, Greeks,

Romans, Byzantine Greeks, Saracens, Turks, French, British and Arabs - strangers, just as the prophecy predicted.

### **“Diminish the Egyptians”**

“And what about this prophecy?:

*I will diminish them.* (Ezekiel 29:1)

“Biblical prophecy is turning out to be full of surprises. The fulfillments are stunning! Did you know that today Egypt, although the most heavily-populated nation in the Middle East, is populated mainly by Arabs, not Egyptians?

“According to *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, the Copts in Egypt, not the Arabs, are the racial representatives of the ancient Egyptians.

The Copts have undoubtedly preserved the race of the Egyptians as it existed at the time of the Arab conquest in remarkable purity. (*art.: “Copts”*) The Copts are direct descendants from the ancient Egyptians. (*E.A. Wallis Budge, The Nile, p.331*)

“In their own country the descendants of the ancient Egyptians are outnumbered 23 to 1 by Arab foreigners who have come in and taken over the country.

“The prophecy said God would ‘diminish’ the Egyptians. How true!

### **“No more a native prince”**

“In that connection, please notice this prophecy:

*There shall no more be a prince of the land of Egypt.*  
(*Ezekiel.30:13*)

“When recorded, this prophecy would seem absurd. Mighty Egypt had a line of kings such as no other nation under heaven had possessed, and it seemed as though this would last forever.

“Even today, Egypt has had a longer line of kings than any other country. Yet, since 400 BC - that’s for 2,400 years! - none of Egypt’s kings have been Egyptians!

“The land of the Pharaohs has been ruled by foreign overlords, Persians, then Greeks, Romans, Saracens, Turks, French, British and Arabs.

Dan shuffled and turned direct to the archaeologist. “Hey, Brad, what about King Farouk, the last king of Egypt, who ruled until just after World War II? There was an Egyptian prince. So the prophecy failed.”

“Yes, Farouk was the last of the line of princes. But, amazingly, he was not an Egyptian, but Albanian!”

“Well, I never...”

“And also, Naguib, the man who led the revolt to depose Farouk, was not Egyptian, but Sudanese! And Presidents Nasser, Mubarak, Sadat, and so on, none of them have been Egyptian, but of Arab descent.

“Dan, how astonishingly accurate is this prophecy! Never in world history has any nation been subject to foreign governments and foreign rule so long as Egypt has been.”

Harry grunted. “Oh, it just happened.”

“So you do see the facts, then. You are compelled to admit the fulfilment. You have been driven from one insufficient explanation to another. So now your final explanation is, ‘It just happened’?”

“Okay, the fact that it has never happened outside of the Bible – how do you explain that?”

“I will not accept any explanation that has the supernatural in it,” said Dan.

“I shall speak straight,” replied the archaeologist. Is that a reasonable attitude, one that signifies a thinker? Surely the only attitude a philosopher may rightly claim is one that proclaims him willing to follow the evidence, no matter if it leads him to conclusions contrary to those previously held.”

“Perhaps I need to hear more,” responded Dan.

“All right, suppose we consider the most all-embracing prophecy in the *Intelligence Report*, a prophecy which outlines

the history of a whole host of nations, beginning 2,500 years ago and reaching to the present moment. And you all be the judges.”

**NOTE:** If our story appears to be deviating from UFO aliens for a time, please be patient, because we must necessarily establish the comparative credibility of certain documents that are an essential part of the UFO drama.

# 11

## ***Prophecies –***

# **SEVEN FATEFUL WORDS**

“You stated, Roland, that any prediction given time enough would eventually be fulfilled,” said Brad, after they had all stretched their legs and poured a hot drink.

“You have given up the attempt to show that all prophecy was given after the event, and now go to the opposite extreme and make time the solvent of your difficulty.

“But we shall see how completely time, instead of fulfilling, would refute the prediction of a prophet of the *Intelligence Report*.

### **Fall of Roman Empire predicted**

“The story of the decline and fall of the Roman Empire was first written, not by Edward Gibbon the skeptic in the 18th century of our era, but by Daniel the prophet in the 6th century BC. And Gibbon the skeptic used six large volumes in telling us in detail how accurate were the predictions of Daniel the prophet.”

### **Date of the prophecy**

Brad threw a glance at Roland. He perceived a look of amazement on his face. Roland responded excitedly. “Do you claim that Daniel wrote the book attributed to him in the 6th century BC? Why? Come off it, Brad, the Book of Daniel was not written by Daniel at all, but by some unknown author about 168 BC.”

“Roland, I am well aware of the fact,” replied Sheed, “that the heavy artillery of the critics has been directed against the Book of Daniel since Celsus of the 3<sup>rd</sup> century discovered that the accuracy of these predictions could not be denied.



“In Daniel chapters 2 and 7 are such clear predictions, giving in vivid outline world history, beginning with Babylon and reaching to the present moment, that the most skeptical have been hard placed to account for them... unless they admit supernatural knowledge on the part of the prophet.

“Critics seem to think that if they can only show that Daniel never wrote a word of the book, and that it was composed by some unknown person about 168 BC, its prophecies will be invalidated. But for my purpose I will accept your date, and will care not who wrote it.

“I shall not go into the amazing details of all those prophecies in Daniel. That could take a week. We shall examine only one point.

All – whether skeptics or not – admit that the book of Daniel teaches this: that beginning with Babylon there will be just four great world powers in succession - four and no more - to the end of time. (Daniel 7:23-27; 2:39-45)

“And history shows that

1. *Babylon ruled until 538 BC.*
2. *Then it was conquered by Cyrus, king of Medo-Persia.*
3. *At Arbela in 331 BC, Alexander wrested the power from Medo-Persia and the kingdom of Grecia took over the territory.*
4. *The Roman victory at Pydna on June 22, 168 BC marked the ultimate establishment of Roman world rule.*

“If, as I believe, Daniel lived in 600 BC, then he foretold the rise and fall of the three empires to follow Babylon. That’s a marvellous prediction in itself.

“In order to deny that these are prophecies written before the events, skeptic writers have contended that the Book of Daniel was written in 168 BC - after Rome had acquired rulership.

### **Prophecy: “previous pattern of history will be broken”**

“Very well, if it is true, as the skeptics assert, that the writer of Daniel lived in 168, he had knowledge of the fact that in a period of only four centuries Babylon, Medo-Persia,

Greece, and Rome had ruled the world in succession. Thus in 370 years, 538 BC to 168 BC, four empires bore sway.

“In that case, the predictions of Daniel chapters 2 and 7, if written in 168 BC, are fully as remarkable as if they were written in 600 BC. And here’s why:

“Despite the fact that four successive world kingdoms existed in 400 years, think of the amazing daring of a man who would have the temerity to predict that there would *not* be a fifth world power to succeed the fourth! How preposterous, how contrary to all analogy, to all previous history, to the wildest imagination, was such a prediction!

“If experience had been asked to guess the secrets of the future, the reply given by the wise of earth of that day would certainly have been that the revolutions of the past would be repeated again and again in the coming 2,000 years as in the past 400 years; for then as now it was believed that history repeats itself.

“As the Babylonian Empire was conquered by the Persian, the Persian by the Grecian, the Grecian by the Roman, so would every observant thinker also expect the Roman Empire as certainly to be conquered by some other world power. But was this the fact? Every schoolboy knows that Rome was the last successive world kingdom.

“But instead of solving the problem, the skeptic only places himself in a dilemma, and it matters not to me which horn of the dilemma he takes. The problem remains as great either way. Whether the Book of Daniel was written about 600 BC or 168 BC leaves the problem of prediction unsolved.”

“I don’t see how you make that out,” interrupted Roland. “For if Daniel was not written until after the world empires had come and gone, certainly you lose the benefit of claiming a prophet who foretold the rise and fall of those powers”

“That is granted,” smiled Brad. “But let us consider the matter both ways for a moment. If Daniel was written about 600 BC, it is conceded by skeptics everywhere that the predictions are too marvellous to be explained away easily. A skeptic is faced with Problem 1: accurate foreknowledge.

“On the other hand, if you change the date of Daniel’s written prophecy to Roman times – after the events predicted – you now face Problem 2.”

“I do not see how that can be,” said Roland.

“I’ll make it clear,” said the archaeologist. “By putting the composition of Daniel in 168 BC, you place three great universal kingdoms in the past instead of in the future. You thus give the writer the analogy of immediate past history by which to judge the future. He has seen four universal kingdoms arise in 400 years. But in making his prediction, he goes absolutely contrary to every fact of past history. This is what no philosopher, using all the information at hand, would ever dream of doing. Hence, it is clear that the writer of Daniel had some other source of information than that accessible to anyone else.

“On the other hand, if the Book of Daniel was written about 600 BC, its author did not have available any evidence of one universal kingdom followed by another. Because the nations before that date, while powerful, were not universal. Thus in 600 BC the precedents of history were unsettled, while in 168 BC they were settled. The dating of Daniel in 168 BC removes one difficulty only to add another, equally unsolvable by human wisdom.

“But this is by no means all. Let us look at the picture Daniel draws of today.

“He predicted that Babylon would be succeeded by Medo-Persia... Medo-Persia would be succeeded by Grecia... Grecia would divide into four sections.... Then be succeeded by a fourth world power.

“FOUR AND NO MORE.

“Instead, that fourth power (the Roman Empire) would be split up into ten nations or groups of nations, and these would remain divided until the end of time. (Daniel 7:23,24; 2:42-44)

“Today, skeptic and believer alike can read any history written by anyone. But, in particular, read the great history written by one of the greatest unbelievers of all time - Gibbon’s *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire* - and you will see that

this ‘immortal’ work is an unwitting commentary on Daniel’s uncanny accuracy.

“Let Gibbon the pagan tell how the fierce, rude warriors of the north poured like a flood against the Western Empire in the 5th century: but though they conquered Rome, world dominion was denied them.

“And indeed, the fourth empire, the Roman, was not succeeded by another world empire, but was split up into a mass of smaller kingdoms.

“The historian Machiavelli names these ten kingdoms as:

1. Ostrogoths
2. Visigoths
3. Franks
4. Vandals
5. Suevi
6. Huns
7. Anglo-Saxons
8. Heruli
9. Lombards
10. Burgundians.

“And the prophet said these smaller nations were to continue to exist, with exceptions noted by the prophet himself, to the end of time.

“A recurring theme of the past 1,500 years has been the repeated attempts to unify Europe.

“Now, can you imagine the predicament this *Intelligence Report* would be in today if somewhere down the ages, after the fall of Rome, some all-powerful Alexander of the Middle Ages had conquered all the known nations of the Middle East-Europe region and had cemented them into one mighty empire subject to his sovereign will - what could one say?

“I now pause to ask if any of you here can produce any such failure of Daniel’s prophecy?”

Roland and his companions were silent.

Brad Sheed continued. “There were to be attempts to weld the divided nations of the old Roman empire together, even by

intermarriage. The prophecy hinted that in an attempt to reunite the divided nations:

*They shall mingle themselves with the seed of men.* (Daniel 2:43) –

and this has been remarkably fulfilled.

“The attempts to break the prophecy of Daniel went merrily on. The mighty Charlemagne, the swift Charles XII of Sweden, the resistless, eagle-eyed Napoleon, and so on.

## **7 powerful words that stopped dictators**

“Seven fateful words in the prophecy stopped them from succeeding:

*They shall not cleave one to another.* (*Ibid.*)

“In 1914, Kaiser Wilhelm of Germany was shown this prophecy in the *Intelligence Report*. He responded, ‘It does not fit into my plans.’ His attempt failed. Those seven prophetic words stopped him.

“Then Hitler’s hordes swept across Europe. The Nazi dictator boasted, ‘Where Napoleon failed, I will succeed.’ As the planet trembled at the march of the Nazis, scholars who knew this prophecy were opening up the *Intelligence Report* and reassuring audiences in Europe, America and around the world that ‘Hitler will not win.’

“Why? Because the prophecy could not fail. It said, ‘***They shall not cleave one to another.***’

“Before the collapse of the Soviet Union and the fall of the Berlin Wall, I personally addressed audiences on ‘Why Russia Cannot Win’. Again, Daniel’s seven words ‘***they shall not cleave one to another***’, stopped Communism’s nefarious ambitions cold.

“In the past, uniting Europe was temporary and always accomplished by force. Today the nations of Europe are coming together voluntarily, forming an ever-closer union as they integrate economically, politically and militarily.

“In May 2004, the 25 leaders of the European Union nations signed a new Treaty of Rome set to bring about a federal Europe, uniting politically to revive the ancient dream of a united Europe.

“But upon those seven fateful words the European Union will also collapse. The coming New World Order will similarly be short lived. Just wait and see. The *Intelligence Report* has spoken.

“And the author of the *Intelligence Report* challenged every unbeliever 25 centuries ago either

- (a) to make such prophecies of his own or
- (b) to break one of His.

“As yet no one has done either.

“Each fulfillment taken by itself is a strong point in favour of divine wisdom on the part of the prophet, but each additional fulfilment increases the strength of the evidence, not by addition, but by multiplication.”

Brad glanced up at the sky. “Oh, look, it’s getting late.”

“Yes,” croaked Harry. “But you’ve got me riveted. Tomorrow night we’ll just have to go into this more.”

“I’ll take a stroll in the night air,” said Roland, rising. He lumbered over to the car and retrieved his mobile, to phone Angie.

\* \* \* \* \*

“Another good day for exploring,” crowed Dan, after breakfast. “By the way, Roland, how’s Angie?”

“She’s going to the doctor in the morning. Not feeling at all well.”

“I’m sorry.”

“Yeah.”

“Anyway,” called Harry, let’s get going. It’s a bit of a climb.”

**NOTE:** If our story appears to be deviating from UFO aliens for a time, please be patient, because we must necessarily establish the comparative credibility of certain documents that are an essential part of the UFO drama.

# 12

## *Prophecies –*

# BABYLON'S LAST NIGHT

“Right Brad, out with it! Any more prophecies up your sleeve?” laughed Dan. He moved the pot away and began feeding the camp fire.

Roland and Harry made themselves comfortable.

An owl hooted. In the evening blackness, the stars pressed close.

“Good fire tonight,” noted Brad. He pulled back from the flames. “Okay, tonight I’ll tell you what I saw in Iraq. Or Babylon, to be precise.

“In the heyday of her glory, mighty Babylon seemed destined to endure for ever. The ‘golden city’ had grown more and more powerful until it was now the wonder of the ancient world... with huger buildings and a bigger population of any city of old.

“She invented an alphabet; worked out problems of arithmetic; invented implements for measuring time; conceived the plan of building enormous structures with the poorest of all materials - clay; discovered the art of polishing, boring, and engraving gems; knew how to reproduce faithfully the outlines of human and animal forms; attained high perfection in textile fabrics; studied successfully the motions of the heavenly bodies; conceived of grammar as a science; and elaborated a system of law. In fact, much of the art and learning of Greece came from Babylon.

“Never had the world seen such a city. Its great rampart walls towered upward 200 feet – twenty stories high. And on top of those wide walls, several chariots could race abreast. Gleaming in the sun, its lofty palaces and temple towers stabbed



the sky and thrilled the approaching traveller while he was yet miles away.

“It was a city of color. Public buildings were faced with baked or glazed wall bricks in different colors – the city walls were yellow... the gates, sky blue... palaces, rose red... and temples, white.

“In every direction Babylon was intersected by canals and navigable waterways.

“And here were the world-famous hanging gardens, piled in successive terraces.

“Babylon was not only mistress of the world, but she reposed securely in the midst of a most fertile region of the world. The country was so astoundingly fruitful that Herodotus feared he would be taken for a liar if he related what he had actually seen of the amazing fertility of the soil there.”



*Ancient Babylon in its glory*

“Okay, get on with it,” shouted Harry. “We all know Babylon was great.”

“Yeah, what’s that got to do with your *Intelligence Report?*” asked Roland.

“Here it comes, then,” announced Brad.

## **Prophecy: Babylon to be obliterated**

“Even before Babylon had become a ruler of the world, a biblical prophet proclaimed openly that:

*Babylon, the glory of kingdoms, the beauty of the Chaldeans' pride, shall be as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah [uninhabited desert]. (Isaiah 13:19, A.R.V.)*

“A simple statement, that, but it disproves utterly any claim that the predictions are vague, so that no matter what happens, the event may be interpreted to be a fulfilment of the prediction.

“In effect the daring prophet says: *‘I see the greatness of Babylon; I observe her apparently impregnable walls. I know that she is mighty and powerful, the greatest city the world has ever seen. Nevertheless, this apparently imperishable city of Babylon shall be as completely obliterated as were Sodom and Gomorrah.’*

## **The prophecies: a quick summary**

“And lest a skeptic accuse the book of double-meaning predictions, it went on to say:

*It shall never be inhabited. (verse 20)*

And for fear some hard-headed doubter might suggest that He meant something else, it added:

*Neither shall it be dwelt in from generation to generation; neither shall the Arabian pitch tent there; neither shall shepherds make their flocks to lie down there.*

“Now, who can make anything ambiguous out of that? Do any of you not understand these words?

“But this is by no means all. Even though the words were plain, the predictions seemed to be so utterly impossible that if you lived back there you would decide the writer to be either

mistaken or insane. But Jeremiah comes to the support of Isaiah, and the meaning of what these prophets wrote is clear indeed:.

*Thou [Babylon] shalt be desolate for ever.’ (Jeremiah 51:26)  
Babylon shall become heaps, a dwelling place for jackals,  
an astonishment, and a hissing, without inhabitant. (verse 37)*

## **Specific prophecies re Babylon’s capture**

“Briefly, here are five of the many prophecies concerning the capture of Babylon:

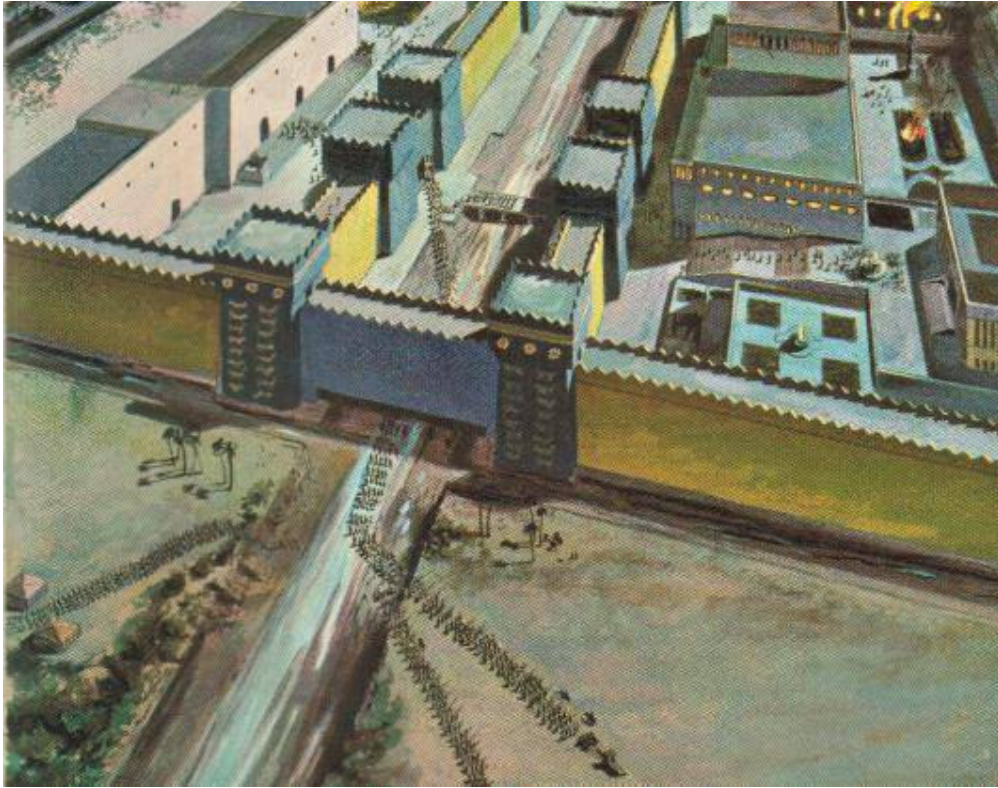
1. The conqueror of Babylon will be a man named Cyrus. (Isaiah 45:1)
2. The river will be dried up. (Isaiah 44:27)
3. The gates will be left open. (Isaiah 45:1,2)
4. The city will be captured during a festival. (Jeremiah 51:39,57)
5. It will be taken without a fight. (Jeremiah 51:30)

“The most amazing thing is that the prophecy concerning Cyrus was made in the late 700s BC, long before Cyrus was even born! In fact, Cyrus did not conquer Babylon until 539 BC, more than 150 years after the Bible prophet Isaiah mentioned him *by name*!

“The capture of Babylon could fill a book. But briefly here is what occurred.

“The city of Babylon was extremely well fortified. From their lofty walls, the inhabitants scoffed at the invading Medes and Persians. Not only was the city impregnable, but it had enough provisions to last for 20 years.

“There was no entrance into Babylon except where the River Euphrates entered and emerged, as it passed under the walls. Aware that he could not take the city by force, the Persian king Cyrus decided on a clever plan. He would turn away the water from its channel through the city. So at a given time, he diverted the river upstream into a lake. The river below soon became shallow enough to ford and his soldiers followed the river bed under the gate, into the heart of the city of Babylon. (Herodotus, i.190,191; Xenophon, *Cyropaedia*, vii.5.1-36)



*Medo-Persian armies enter Babylon on dry river bed under the gates*

“On each side of the river through the city were interior walls of great height. In these walls were enormous gates of brass, which, when closed and guarded, debarred all entrance from the river bed to any of the streets that crossed the river.

“Had the gates been closed at this time, the invaders might have marched in vain along the riverbed between the walls and out again. But, feeling secure, the Babylonians had that night put on a great feast. In their drunken revelry, these internal river gates were left open so that the citizens could cross the river at will.

“Even the attempt to capture Babylon by means of the river bed would have been in vain, had not the whole city given itself over on that fateful night to abandoned carelessness.

“No one noticed the sudden subsidence of the river. No one saw the entrance of the Persian soldiers. No one took care to close and guard the river gates. No one cared for anything that night except to plunge into the wild celebrations. That night cost the Babylonians their kingdom and their freedom. They went

into it subjects of mighty Babylon. They awoke from it slaves to the king of Persia.

“Every detail of those five prophecies was fulfilled precisely.

### **“It will change from fertile to desert”**

“ ‘*Thou [Babylon] shalt be desolate for ever,*’ wrote the prophet. (Jeremiah 51:26)

“Just the vaporings of religious enthusiasts,” chirped Dan.

“Very well,” said the archaeologist. “Consider this. That such a land, peopled with the world's most highly civilized inhabitants, the ‘golden city’, situated in a most fertile spot of the world, should become a wild, desolate, seared, wholly unproductive and uninhabited desert, seemed utterly impossible. No such a calamity had up to that time befallen any country.

“Great Babylon, the capital and wonder of the world, fought against Jerusalem, a giant against a pygmy - and Jerusalem became the slave of the giant. But both Babylon and its people have vanished like a dream in the night, while Jerusalem and its people still remain.

“These facts, predicted by the prophets, need some explaining other than to say the predictions are merely the wishful thinking of ‘religious enthusiasts’.

“ ‘*Without inhabitant,*’ said the prophets. How true. How weirdly, uncannily true! But this is not all. The positions of the world's most important cities are usually so well chosen, so rich in natural advantages, that population clings to them. Dwindle and decay as they may, some collection of human dwellings still occupies a portion of the original site. Damascus, Jerusalem, Athens, Rome, Antioch, Alexandria, Byzantium, Sidon, have all remained continuously cities of consequence from the time of their foundation thousands of years ago to the present. But it remained for the greatest, richest of all, to sink into utter oblivion. How do you account for that, and for the fact that this was all foretold so long ago?”

Harry moved to answer. “Of course, every schoolboy knows Babylon has been uninhabited for centuries,” he said.

“But, Brad, how do we know that these predictions were not written after the destruction of Babylon, and dated before?”

“Yes, yes,” nodded Dan.

“Would you affirm these predictions were made after Christ's time?” asked Brad.

“Of course not,” replied Harry, “for everybody knows that they were included in the *Septuagint* collection.”

“True, and so the crux of the whole question is, When were the prophecies of Isaiah and Jeremiah written? As they were included in the *Septuagint*, they must have been written before that translation was made. When was the *Septuagint* made?”

“About 200 BC,” answered Harry.

“Spot on,” replied Brad. “And for the purposes of this discussion, I will accept 200 BC as the date of the composition of these predictions concerning Babylon. Will you accept 200 BC as the nearest possible date for the giving of these predictions, Harry?”

“Yes, certainly.”

“Roland, Dan, would you contend for a still later date?” Brad paused for a reply.

Neither of them spoke.

“Then do you all agree that these prophecies I have quoted could not possibly have been given later than 200 BC?” Again he paused, questioning.

They nodded agreement.

“Then we are united on two things: First, that the predictions match true history. And second, that they could not have been written later than 200 BC.”

Roland cut in: “If you admit, then, Brad, that the predictions you have quoted were not written before 200 BC, you have given your case away, your cause is lost.”

“On the contrary,” smiled Brad, “the cause of the critics is thereby made extremely difficult.”

“How so?”

## **Foretold long before**

“Because of the astonishing fact that these prophecies were not completely fulfilled, according to the admission of the most critical skeptics, until hundreds of years after the time of Christ.”

Roland let out a gasp of surprise. Harry looked at Dan with raised eyebrows. Dan appeared startled.

“But this is by no means all,” Brad continued. “Not only was the fall of Babylon foretold by these prophets, but they saw and described fallen Babylon as it is at this moment, at least 2,000 years since they made their amazing prophecies.

“Do you think these predictions are ambiguous?”

No one responded.

“Now those who think the predictions plain and distinct, nod to me. Roland... Dan... Harry?”

This time all three men nodded. “It looks unanimous,” Brad remarked.

“Do any of you claim that the prophecy of Babylon’s desert state was written after it happened? If so, please nod.” Brad waited.

There was no response.

“All right. Let us get this clear now. If you not only admit that the predictions are clear and definite, but also that they were made before the events foretold, say so.” Again, the three of them nodded.

Roland looked perplexed. His mind was struggling with the facts.

“Since the facts we’ve just covered are admitted by all of you, how do you, Roland, explain their remarkable fulfillment?”

## **Skeptic’s explanation**

“Those prophets were austere religionists,” answered Roland. “They saw the wickedness of great cities, and to them Babylon was the symbol of evil. So, as they believed God more powerful than the cities, they believed He would overthrow them. So they actually predicted what they so earnestly believed

and desired, and not because they had the slightest foreknowledge given from any supernatural source.”

“Hey, that’s well said,” cheered Dan.

“Yes, and quite plausible at first thought,” smiled the archaeologist. “But let us consider a few facts. If the date 200 BC is accepted as the approximate date of the predictions, Rome was then twice as old as New York is now, and grew more powerful than Babylon. But the prophets never predicted the destruction of Rome. It still exists after 2,600 years. Yet these ‘religious enthusiasts’ had as much reason to desire the extinction of Rome as of Babylon.

“The answer given by Roland comes perilously close to admitting divine aid. He does base his explanation on a sort of ‘religious enthusiasm’ which was so keen that it gave the prophets an uncanny foresight into the future. But there seems to be more to it than just the religious frenzy born of pessimism and dislike of the enemy.

“Even if, in a sort of religious frenzy, Isaiah and Jeremiah had guessed right about the destruction of Babylon, how can you account for the details of their predictions?

“Details such as these...

### **“Wild animals will infest its ruins”**

*Wild beasts will infest its heaps and pools.* (Jeremiah 51:37)

“Turn to the records of historians, and their accounts teem with records of wild animals and wild birds and pests that infest the ruins of Babylon, and of the lagoons of stagnant water.

### **“Its walls will be utterly broken”**

*The broad walls of Babylon shall be utterly broken.* (Jeremiah 51:58)

“For centuries after this sentence of destruction was issued against these, the strongest walls ever built about a city, they



continued to be numbered among the seven wonders of the world.”

“Oh, really!” exclaimed Roland. “There is nothing so remarkable about either this prediction or its fulfilment. The prophet, as you call him, who would predict the destruction of the city, would naturally predict the destruction of the walls.”

“Good try,” replied Brad. “You forget, my friend, that all ancient cities had walls and that other cities with walls not nearly so strong as those of Babylon have been destroyed, yet their smaller walls are still remarkably preserved.

“But all I wish to prove by this is that Jeremiah was right. Suppose, for instance, that the walls were standing today in grim defiance of the prophet's words. The Great Wall of China, not nearly so strong, though older, is still standing.

“If you, Roland, could tell the rest of us that you had seen Babylon's magnificent 20 story high walls jutting, like the pyramids of Egypt, above the surrounding plains, what a blow that would be against the *Intelligence Report!* But you cannot do this, for the prophet was right, as usual.”

“Well,” said Roland, “I grant that you have brought forward a number of remarkable facts to make a case for prophecy, but surely you do not expect a few unusual coincidences or amazing guesses to convince us. Have you not about exhausted your evidence from Babylon?”

“On the contrary, I have only touched the edges. There are more than a hundred particulars in the prophecy. And each one furnishes remarkable evidence of prophetic foresight. I'll mention just three or four more.

### **“Its stones will NOT be used as building blocks”**

*And they shall not take of thee a stone for a corner, nor a stone for foundations. (Jeremiah 51:26)*

“Do you know, in the several modern buildings in the neighbourhood of Babylon, there is no sign of any stone that has

been dug up from its ancient ruins. It seems that in digging for old materials, the Arabs used the bricks for building purposes, but always burned the stone thus discovered for lime. An uncanny fulfilment of prophecy. And here's another:

### **“Its riches will satisfy spoiler after spoiler”**

*Chaldea shall be a spoil: all that spoil her shall be satisfied, saith the Lord. (Jeremiah 50:10) Come against her from the utmost border, open her storehouses: . . . and destroy her utterly. (verse 26) A sword is upon her treasures; and they shall be robbed. (verse 37) Abundant in treasures, thine end is come. (Jeremiah 51:13)*

“There are two particulars to be noted:

“First, there is an implication in the little word ‘all’ that Babylon and the other cities of Chaldea would be despoiled often. Nothing like this was predicted of Tyre or of Nineveh or of many other cities and countries doomed by the prophecies to destruction.

“Second, how did the prophet know there would be riches enough to tempt and satisfy spoiler after spoiler? Tyre was one of the richest cities of earth, but after one spoilation by Nebuchadnezzar nothing was left to tempt another conqueror.

“But the teeming riches of Babylon and the surrounding country stood defiant to the greedy ravages of successive plunderers. No sooner did a fresh horde of conquerors pillage the country than another army was preparing to fight them for the booty, and loot the country anew.

“Cyrus took huge treasures; Xerxes and his army took an estimated \$billion in gold alone, besides other rich plunder. Then came Alexander, but so far from finding Babylon's wealth exhausted, he gave from her stores \$500 to every soldier in his vast army and kept immense wealth for himself. Continuously for 200 years after the death of Alexander, the Parthians ravaged this country, and then came the Romans from a long distance, for the same purpose.

“One would think that after several hundred years of plundering, not much of value could be left.

“Gibbon, the skeptic, is the best commentator on this prophecy, because an unwitting one. He tells of numerous expeditions, covering a period of several hundred years, gathered for the purpose of sacking Babylon's ruins and the ruins of adjoining cities.

“And later, when the Romans, under Heraclius, ravaged Chaldea, Gibbon tells us that ‘though much of the treasure had been removed. . . the remaining wealth appears to have exceeded their hopes, and even to have satiated their avarice.’ (Gibbon, *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, Volume 4, p. 480)

“Again, Gibbon has painted the joy of still another band of conquerors in 636, hundreds of years after the prophecy:

“ ‘The naked robbers of the desert were suddenly enriched beyond the measure of their hope or knowledge. Each chamber revealed a new treasure secreted with art, or ostentatiously displayed; the gold and silver, the various wardrobes and precious furniture, surpassed (says Abulfeda) the estimate of fancy or numbers; and another historian defines the untold and almost infinite mass, by the fabulous computation of three thousands of thousands of thousands of pieces of gold.’ (*Ibid.*, volume 5, p. 180)

“And this after centuries of ravaging, looting and pillaging by other huge armies and mighty conquerors! And rich treasures are still being found right up to the present moment, as you well know.

“But to no place on earth have the conquerors of empires gone back again and again for hundreds of years for loot, and come away laden beyond their greedy dreams, regardless of the immense booty already carried off by the previous despoilers. The prophet foretold that and the skeptic Gibbon would later record it as history.

“Do you claim this prediction failed?”

Since no one spoke, the archaeologist continued.

## “Will remain desolate forever”

*...thou shalt be desolate forever, saith the Lord. (Jeremiah 51:26)*

“The prophecy says Babylon shall never be rebuilt to the glory and power she enjoyed while she was the capital of the Babylonian Empire.”

Dan coughed.

“Yes, Dan?”

“But what about the partial rebuilding of Nebuchadnezzar's palaces and public buildings?”

“Yes,” said Brad. “Saddam Hussein wanted to rebuild Babylon. Just like Alexander the Great. Alexander was so keen to rebuild Babylon that he sent 10,000 men to do the job. But still they failed.



*Ruins of Babylon*

“And Saddam did attempt a partial rebuilding of the old palaces. There is a small village in existence near the site of ancient Babylon.

“However, the original Babylon, the pride of the Chaldeans, has never been rebuilt, nor will she!

“In fact, since the second Iraq war, researchers claim that the city site of ancient Babylon is so polluted with Depleted Uranium poisoning it is highly likely no one will ever be able to live there again. No technology is currently proven that can remove Depleted Uranium poisoning. (<<http://www.cuttingedge.org/news/n1909.cfm>>)

“Depleted Uranium possesses 30 percent of the radiation that was present in the original uranium ore! In the absence of any provable scientific method to completely and quickly change this radiation into a harmless substance, one can only conclude that the war against Iraq may have ensured that God's prophecy in Isaiah 13:19-20 has now been irrevocably fulfilled.”

### **“Arabs will never pitch tent there”**

By the camp fire, Brad thought of an experience related by a Dr Cyrus Hamlin.

Some years ago, Hamlin was in Istanbul (then known as Constantinople) visiting with a colonel in the Turkish army.

Dr Hamlin asked the colonel if he had ever been to Babylon.

“Yes,” replied the colonel, “The ruins of Babylon abound in game; and, engaging a sheik and his group, I arrived among the ruins for a week’s shooting.”

He described to his visitor some of the thrills of his recent lion-hunting expedition to the gaunt ruins of Babylon. “And I will tell you a curious incident,” he said. The colonel told of the long walk over the desert he had had each morning and evening, all because of his Arab guide’s refusal to camp overnight in the ruins.

“At sundown the Arabs, to my amazement, began to strike their tents, getting ready to leave. I went to the sheik and protested. But nothing I could say had any effect. ‘It is not safe,’ said the sheik. ‘Nor mortal flesh dare stay here after sunset.

Ghosts and ghouls come out of the holes and caverns after dark, and whomsoever they capture becomes one of themselves. ***No Arab ever has seen the sun go down on Babylon.***”

Dr Hamlin showed interest and excitement. Taking out his copy of the *Intelligence Report*, he read from it:

*And Babylon, the glory of kingdoms, the beauty of the Chaldees' excellency, shall be as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah... neither shall the Arabian pitch tent there.* (Isaiah 13:19)

“That is history you are reading,” said the colonel.

“No,” answered Dr Hamlin, “it is prophecy. Those words were written when Babylon was in all her glory.”

The colonel was silent, and they never met again.

Brad Sheed looked straight at his three companions. “Tell me, men, how did Isaiah know that the Arabian would continue to exist after Babylon had become dust?” he asked.

“Although a few humble Arabs lived in tents about Babylon 2,500 years ago, the Babylonians were the haughty rulers of the world. The utter extinction of the ruling race was foretold. Have you ever met a solitary living Babylonian? And what did the prophet say? In effect, he said this: ‘While the most powerful race on earth will become extinct, together with their world-ruling city, this small, insignificant, nomadic race of Arabs will continue on and on for 2,000 years, long after this proud city has crumbled to ruins and its very site is almost forgotten.’

“How did Isaiah know that the Arabs would continue to live near Babylon? Yet the prophecy clearly implies this. Since they were a wandering race, it would be logical to suppose that in time they would either leave the vicinity of such a place as we now know Babylon to be or would themselves become extinct. But how did Isaiah know they would remain about Babylon's ruins for 2,000 years; that they would be there today? Imagine the jeering sarcasm of skeptics if there were not an Arab within a thousand miles of Babylon! And what a field day skeptics

would have if all Arabs had become as extinct as the dodo, before Babylon sank into oblivion!

“Oh yes, and something else. How did Isaiah know that Arabs would continue to live in tents? And how did he know that the Arabs would not make use of the ruins of Babylon for shelter?”

“Many explorers and excavators of recent years report that it is impossible to get Arabs to remain on the site of this ancient city overnight. Another explorer, Captain Mignan, was accompanied by six Arabs completely armed, but he ‘could not induce them to remain toward night, from apprehension of evil spirits. It is impossible to eradicate this idea from the minds of these people.’ (Mignan, *Travels*, page 235) And all this, despite the fact that Arabs are fearless fighters, dangerous warriors.”

“Hold it,” said Roland. “You make quite a point out of the little prediction about the Arabs. Some of your statements would be equally true of gypsies. They are a nomadic people, living largely in tents.”

“The prophecy concerning the Arabs,” explained Brad Sheed, “is so obviously true that no one, not even you, Roland, can deny the accuracy of the prediction. Is this perfect matching of today’s facts to the ancient forecast motivating you to bring in the gypsies to lessen the force of the prophecy?”

“In actual fact, the case of the gypsies has no bearing. Firstly, they did not exist then. And secondly, they wander everywhere. They have never remained, as have the Arabs, for many hundreds of years near the ruins of ancient cities. So, even if the gypsies had lived in the time of Isaiah, his prophecy would not have been true of them. It is still a fact that the prophecy about the Arabs is amazingly unique in every particular - and every passing day serves only to strengthen its force.

“Even more recently, when Saddam Hussein was attempting to rebuild Babylon, using bricks with his name inscribed on them, the workmen themselves would not stay the night in that place.

Okay, guys, let me ask you directly: Are these predictions true? Have they been fulfilled?"

There was a long silence.

"Come on, Roland, speak up," prodded Harry.

Silence.

"Do you claim these predictions are wrong?" Brad Sheed spoke again.

Roland Brown coughed. He half turned to Harry and Dan and said, "To be honest about it, the archaeologist has presented a pretty watertight case. I suspect it would stand up in court. I suppose you could say these prophecies had to be foretold by a source with the ability to see *outside our time and space.*"

"Thanks Roland. I see you're an honest man." responded Brad.

"Hey, look!" screamed Harry, pointing.

All eyes turned upward. A moving streak of light vanished just above the trees.

"A UFO?" cried Dan.

"A meteorite," retorted Harry.

Roland's mind flashed to Angie. He again felt a knot in his stomach. How was she? He must call her.



# 13

## *Prophecies -*

### **FAILED ALIEN PROPHECIES**

Fortune teller Rose Tennis, of Youngstown, Ohio, could not visualize her own future. Rose failed to see that she was going to meet a strange woman and take a trip under adverse conditions.

While the strange woman was receiving a reading she asked the mystic, “Don’t you know it’s unlawful to tell fortunes?”

“I know, but they will never catch me,” Rosie replied.

The strange woman was a police-woman, Mrs Nora Welsh.

The fortune teller took a trip in the police wagon, to the judge.

Could it be that a fortune teller’s *guess* of your future is no better than your own guess?

\* \* \* \* \*

Instead of going to work that Wednesday morning, Angie went for another medical test.

“I’ll have the results for you by Friday,” said the doctor. Then Roland drove her home to rest.

All day, the prophecy revelations kept intruding into his thoughts. There was one possibility that occurred to him. Perhaps the uncanny accuracy of those prophecies was due to alien input?

He could hardly wait for seven thirty, when Brad Sheed had promised to drop by for twenty minutes on his way to an appointment.

Angie went to bed. Her pulse was racing. She was sweating. And her muscles tense. She was in an agitated state of mind.

This alien intrusion into their marriage had Roland in its grip.

Right on time, the archaeologist arrived. Roland was quick to the door.

They sat down and the questioning began.

### **Source of the prophecies: aliens?**

“Today I was wondering,” said Roland. “Do you think it’s possible that the apparent supernatural knowledge in the Bible prophecies comes from aliens?”

“An interesting question,” said Brad. “But there was no alien input.”

“What if extraterrestrials could travel through time in some way?” suggested Roland. “Might they then see the future?”

“For starters,” replied Brad, “UFOlogists have not adequately explained how ancient ETs could do this. And there is no evidence of any modern ETs claiming to be time travellers, or tourists from tomorrow.”

“So you’re sticking with evidence... not speculation.”

### **Predictions by “aliens”**

“That’s my boy!” The archaeologist leaned forward. “You see, Roland, the idea of the Bible writers having ‘outside help’ from extraterrestrials does raise two problems.”

“And what are they?”

“Well *firstly*, if aliens dictated it, then why does that same Book *expose those aliens as deceivers?*”

Roland broke into a sweat. Yeah, deceivers. That was exactly what his own hard nosed research was uncovering.

“*Secondly*, about *alien prophecies*,” said Sheed. “Do you know, their predictions have just as *woeful a success rate* as fortune tellers. A leading world expert on the psychosocial

aspect of the UFO phenomenon is a guy called Martin Kottmeyer. He informs us that:

Over two hundred predictions premised in the extraterrestrial hypothesis by encounter claimants and UFOlogists have been offered over the past half-century and they have uniformly failed. Further belief in it is not recommended. (Ronald D. Story, editor, *The Mammoth Encyclopedia of Extraterrestrial Encounters*, in an article by Martin S. Kottmeyer. London: Constable & Robinson, 2002, p. 364)

“How different from Bible prophecy! We need to face it, Roland. There’s only one Source that knows and determines the future. It is the same Source that wrote the DNA program. ETs, fallen angels, space brothers, or whatever you want to call them cannot predict the future. Like us, they are created beings, corrupt, and fallible.

“Only the Supreme One is all-knowing and all-powerful. That is why you can safely trust His word.

### **What about psychics’ predictions?**

Roland reached to turn up the heater. “Haven’t psychics made predictions like those in the Bible?” he asked.

“Not at all, I’m afraid. There is a quantum leap between every psychic and the biblical prophecies,” said Sheed.

“In biblical times one test of a prophet was whether they *ever* uttered predictions that did *not* come to pass. (Deuteronomy 18:22) Those whose prophecies failed were stoned – a practice that no doubt restrained any who were not absolutely sure their messages were from God.

“Among hundreds of prophecies, biblical prophets are not known to have made a single error.

Roland shuffled. “What do you know about psychics’ track record?”

“Well, a study of prophecies made by psychics in 1975 and observed until 1981 showed that of the 72 predictions, only six were fulfilled in any way. Two of these were vague and two others were hardly surprising – the United States and Russia

would remain leading powers and there would be no world wars.

“*The People’s Almanac* did a study of the predictions of 25 top psychics. The results: Of the total 72 predictions, 66 (that is, 92 percent) were totally wrong. (Andre Kole and Al Janssen, *Miracles or Magic?* Eugene, OR.: Harvest House, 1984, p. 69)

“An accuracy rate around 8 percent could easily be explained by chance and general knowledge of circumstances.

“In 1993 the psychics missed every major unexpected news story, including Michael Jordan’s retirement, the Midwest flooding, and the Israel-PLO peace treaty. Among their false predictions were the prediction that the Queen of England would become a nun, and that Kathy Lee Gifford would replace Jay Leno as host of *The Tonight Show*. (*Charlotte Observer*, December 30, 1993)

“What about Nostradamus?” asked Roland.

“Well, I must give it to you straight,” said Brad. “His highly reputed ‘predictions’ were not that amazing at all. Contrary to popular belief, he never predicted either the place or the year of a great California earthquake. And most of his ‘famous’ predictions, such as the rise of Hitler, were vague and ambiguous, and could fit into almost any time frame or event.

Like other psychics, he was frequently wrong. He wrote, for example: ‘The year 1999, month seven, From the sky shall come a king of terror.’ Oops!

“By biblical standards, if a prophecy is not 100% accurate, 100% of the time, a prophet is a failed prophet.”

“Well,” said Roland, “I heard that Nostradamus prophesied the destruction of the World Trade Center.”

Brad laughed. “Some who have not studied the Nostradamus prophecies may be vulnerable to this hoax. I do not put any stock in any of Nostradamus’ prophecies. They are too vague, and can be twisted to mean almost anything after the fact. When used to show something important is about to happen, they invariably fail.

## **An uncanny knowledge of the future**

“Now, Roland, suppose you had a very wise mentor. He gave you information about many things with amazingly perfect accuracy. Not only did he have an amazing knowledge of history, but he knew facts no one else knew. And he predicted the future without error. He precisely predicted the invention of DVDs and the dismantling of the Berlin wall. He told you the exact day George Bush would cease to be president, years before Bush was even born. And he gave you winning lottery numbers dozens of times (making you very grateful and wealthy).

“To put it plainly, what if your wise mentor was *never, never wrong?*”

Then Brad struck closer to home. “What if he told you that so-called aliens are *not* from other planets at all, but are *imposters?*”

Roland shook all over. He suddenly felt sick... for Angie. Then he jerked himself back. He must ask Brad. “You called the Bible *The Intelligence Report*, right?”

## **The Intelligence Report: perfectly accurate predictions**

“Yes,” said Brad. “And as we have been discovering this week, it is perfectly accurate in predicting events. No other ancient sacred book dares to do this, without ever being wrong.

## **The ONLY source of non-failing prophecies**

“Its prophecies are not vague like those of modern fortune tellers, such as ‘A handsome man will come into your life.’ Many of its prophecies are specific in detail.

“The *Intelligence Report* is the *only* source that has consistently predicted history before it happens. And this track record verifies its claims to give us the correct scenario for world history.

“No unconditional biblical prophecy has gone unfulfilled. Other books may claim divine inspiration - the Koran, the Book

of Mormon, and parts of the [Hindu] Yeda. But none of those books contains predictive prophecy.

“You can go to Hinduism, Islam, New Age philosophy, Buddhism, Spiritism, Evolution theory, Atheism, Gnosticism, Agnosticism, Theosophy, or whatever, and you will search in vain for anything comparable.”

Roland turned to face the archaeologist direct. “What about aliens?”

Brad smiled. “Well, there’s been some talk these days about a Sumerian *Lost Book of Enki*. Some folk are really hooked on that so-called ‘extra-terrestrial’ story.

“But does it contain any such prophecies? Not on your life.

“*Fulfilled prophecy* is unique to the *Intelligence Report*. That indicates the divine *authority* behind it.

## **A sample of the 1,000 predictions**

“And did you know, Roland, this same *Intelligence Report* has successfully predicted:

- The fall of the Ottoman empire precisely to the day on August 11, 1840.
- The emergence of America to ultimate super power status.
- The failure of Adolf Hitler’s and Communism’s world rule plans.
- The AD 70 destruction of Jerusalem, the scattering of the Jews and the 2,000 year domination of Jerusalem by foreigners, until shortly before the end.
- The temporary – but doomed - uniting of Europe’s divided nations into a single purpose Community.
- The development of a New World Order steered by the Vatican.
- A final encoding into the world economic system of the mystical number 666.

“And that’s just for starters!”

## **The aliens’ agenda**

“Okay,” Roland cut in, “I realise this is a little off the

topic. But does the *Intelligence Report* really identify the extraterrestrials? Does it tell us who these intruders are?"

Roland felt his whole body start to quiver again. He tried to suppress his anger at what had happened to Angie, hoping his emotions wouldn't show.

Brad paused, carefully studying Roland.

"Yes it does," he finally responded. "It also exposes their plan for Planet Earth.

"Their agenda, when you learn what it is, will make your flesh creep. But they will ultimately fail. Yes, *the Intelligence Report tells you exactly who they are.*"

Roland sat there, in a daze.

Brad Sheed arose to go. "If you have further questions, here's my card."

Roland walked into the bedroom. Angie was crying... He threw his arms around her, holding her tight.

**NOTE:** If our story appears to be deviating from UFO aliens for a time, please be patient, because we must necessarily establish the comparative credibility of certain documents that are an essential part of the UFO drama.

# 14

## *Accuracy of transmission –*

# THE FORGETFUL PROFESSOR

It was 4.55... Thursday.

Al should be home now, he thought.

Roland dialled and waited for a response.

“Al, do you mind if I come over this evening? This *Intelligence Report* thing is really bothering me. If it holds the answer to Angie’s alien abuser, then I can’t let the matter drop.

“What you said - and now Brad Sheed’s backed it up – has me so I can’t sleep.”

Al’s voice came through strong and loud. “To what are you referring?”

“You said I’ll never know how to deal with these aliens unless I carefully study the *Intelligence Report*. But you know I’m a practical nut. I must first be totally satisfied that the *Intelligence Report* is 100 percent reliable.”

“Are you convinced on the prophecies?”

“Yes.”

“Well what’s bothering you?”

Roland grunted. “Well it’s this way, Al. I’ve read somewhere that the old manuscripts have been interfered with so many times, you can never know what was there originally. How can I be sure some bogus explanation hasn’t been inserted into it... and that I won’t be taken for a ride?”

“Okay, just hold on, Roland.” Al turned to his wife. “Could we invite Roland and Angie to dinner?”

Gloria cast a roguish eye at her husband. “You want me to toss some more water into the soup? Oh, what the heck! It would be nice to meet Angie again.”



... Roland trotted down the hallway to the lounge room. Angie gave a weak smile.

“Hey, dreamboat,” he said, leaning over to kiss her. “We’ve been invited to eat with the Costers.”

“No, thankyou. I want to stay home. Go yourself. Less cooking for me.”

“Sure you don’t mind?”

“Just leave me alone.”

Twenty minutes later, Roland was cruising up the Coster driveway.

\* \* \* \* \*

Some years ago, the editors of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* sent an historical article, which had been in the book for a good many years, to the head of a western United States university history department for possible revision. It came back with the caustic comment that it was “badly disorganized and full of errors.”

Curious to see who had written such an “inaccurate” article for them originally, the editors checked their files. They were flabbergasted to find that the article had been written by the professor himself – so many years before that he had forgotten it.

That’s right! The learned man disagreed with himself!

And how does that bear on the discussion that unfolded in the Coster house that Thursday evening? Let’s find out...

\* \* \* \* \*

“Wonderful,” said Roland, crumpling his serviette. “Gloria, you have that magic touch with food.”

The two men retired to the living room. And Gloria began hustling the children to the bathroom.

### **Imagine a 1,600 year project**

“All right,” said Al. “Here’s a good place to start.

“Just imagine that a collection of several dozen books about the historical, cultural and religious heritage of a people began to be written say, around 400 AD, when the Roman Empire was collapsing. And that these books were completed 1,600 years later - in our day. Also, that some 40 different authors were involved over this long span of time and their language and thought reflected their changing surroundings and conditions.

“Answer me, Roland, do you think those authors would be able to maintain an essential unity of thought and principles through all that time?”

“Oh, come off it! That would be most unlikely.”

“But if they did, it would be unprecedented in world history, right?”

Roland threw his arm across the back of the couch. “Yeah, values change over time. Even in one’s own lifetime, an author normally goes through considerable changes in his system of values.”

Al nodded. “So a young writer reflects different ideas compared to when he grows old.

### **40 men – but the “impossible” happened**

“Now, take the Bible, or as Sheed calls it, the *Intelligence Report*. About 40 men produced 66 books. They belonged to different generations, centuries, and ages in human history. They lived in different lands. Their writing to complete the Bible took 1,600 years – a very long time. So what would you expect?”

“A motley bag of contradictions,” smiled Roland.

“Not collusion and conspiracy. That would be impossible, right? Many of them never saw or communicated with any of the others. They grew up in different environments, they were molded by different national experiences.

“Come to think of it, one was the founder of the world’s first republic, another was an exile in Babylon, then there was a herdsman of a small village, a cupbearer at the Persian court, a

shepherd lad who became a king. And there were fishermen, and a tax collector. Some were rulers, others subjects. Some rich, others poor. Some educated, others untaught.

“You would hardly find a more mottled array of people.

“They wrote in three different languages – Hebrew, Aramaic and Greek – on every conceivable subject, and in every form of literary expression – history, biography, poetry, oratory, proverbs, prophecy, parables, ethical teachings, legal enactments, elaborate rituals, romances, love lyrics, tragedies, plain precepts, moral maxims, drama, Oriental imagery.

“Now are you ready for this? These 40 writers of such different temperaments, wrote in various countries, and in different languages...and *on such widely different, controversial subjects* – yet amazingly they did not conflict.

“Do you know, Roland, the values they all reflect are identical, in spite of their different backgrounds, culture and language. In what they wrote their harmony is astonishing. And here’s what’s unique. They produced ONE book with a single theme... God’s love reaching out to rescue a rebellious human race.

“Although it’s divided into two sections, New Testament and Old Testament, the New confirms and verifies the Old. It is of the very same warp and woof as the Old. The two are a unit. They stand or fall together.” Al paused.

Roland straightened up. “You’re saying there is no contradiction?”

“What we have here, Roland, is not simply a collection of books. A unity of thought and principles binds the whole together. Do you realise that such a thing is absolutely *unparalleled in literature?*”

Roland eased back again. “Oh wait a minute, Al. What you’re claiming, is not natural. It is contrary to human nature.”

“Then what does that suggest to you?” asked Al. “Perhaps an origin which is *outside* the natural?”

## **Not influenced by the writer's background**

“Consider the first writer. He lived in a thriving Egyptian culture, in the very court of Pharaoh, taught in all the wisdom of the Egyptians. His use of Egyptian vocabulary betrays his Egyptian upbringing.

“Wouldn't it be natural for his writings to be heavily influenced by Egyptian thinking? Yet they're not. Instead they reflect thoughts and principles that after more than 3,000 years still have an enormous impact on most of the world's values... religious and social.

“For example, what this man Moses wrote concerning health and sickness was so different from Egyptian thought. From the record we discover that Moses did not incorporate a single current Egyptian medical misconception into his writings. The instructions he wrote were not only devoid of harmful practices, but had many detailed positive recommendations.”

## **Has the Bible been accurately transmitted?**

Roland wriggled in his seat. “Well, yeah. That's something. But my worry is, how can you be sure that over all these centuries it has not been altered?”

“We'll get to that,” grinned Al. “You've heard of the Dead Sea Scrolls?”

“Who hasn't?”

“Well, the Hebrew manuscripts were completed around 400 BC. But until the discovery of those scrolls in 1947, the oldest complete surviving Hebrew manuscript was around AD 900. This made a time gap of 1,300 years... a considerable gap in time.

“But with the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls, a number of Old Testament manuscripts were found which scholars date before the time of Jesus Christ.

“One of those scrolls was a complete Hebrew manuscript of Isaiah. Dated around 125 BC, it was more than 1,000 years older than any other.

“But here’s the crunch. The Isaiah scroll of BC 125 was *in exact agreement* with the Masoretic text of Isaiah of 1,000 years later.”

“Exactly?” frowned Roland.

Al arose and flipped a research file from the shelf. “Listen to this, “ he said, after a few moments of searching. “Gleason Archer points out that:

Even though the two copies of Isaiah discovered in Qumran Cave 1 near the Dead Sea in 1947 were a thousand years earlier than the oldest dated manuscript previously known (AD 980), they proved to be word for word identical with our standard Hebrew Bible in more than 95 percent of the text. The 5 percent of variation consisted chiefly of obvious slips of the pen and variations in spelling. (Gleason Archer, *A Survey of the Old Testament*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1964, p. 25)

## Example

“And see this for yourself. Notice Isaiah chapter 53. Of the 166 *words*, only 17 *letters* are in question. Ten of these letters are simply in spelling. Four other letters are tiny stylistic changes, like conjunctions. And the remaining three letters comprise the word *light* (in verse 11), which is supported by other manuscripts.

“So there you have it, pal, in a chapter of 166 words, just *one* 3-letter word is in question after 1,000 years of transmission – and this single word does not materially change the meaning of the passage.

“Isn’t that amazing? The Isaiah copies of 125 BC proved to be word for word identical with the preserved text of a thousand years later!

“So, Roland, when you know and compare the facts, there is an overwhelming evidence that the surviving manuscripts are trustworthy.”

Roland stretched out his legs. “Well, that’s reassuring.”

## Meticulous copying procedures

“Unique, is the word,” corrected Al. “You see, the copyists transcribed the Old Testament manuscripts in a way which is quite unique. They preserved them as no other manuscript has been preserved. These documents played an important role in Israelite culture and government.

“Why such extreme care? Religion was *their ruling passion*. They believed that the Bible was not of human origin, but was directly inspired by God. They regarded every letter and word with the highest reverence.

“Although such reverent regard for the text went right back to ancient times, we have specific instructions preserved only from the time of the Talmudists.

“The Talmudists (AD 100-500) had quite an intricate system for transcribing the scrolls.

1. They had to be written on the skins of clean animals, and fastened together with strings from clean animals.
2. Every skin must contain a certain number of columns, equal throughout the entire manuscript.
3. The length and breadth of each column, together with the precise number of letters was specifically defined.
4. No word or letter, not even a yod, must be written from memory, without the scribe looking at the codex before him.
5. Between every consonant, new section, and book, a precisely-stipulated space must intervene.
6. The copyist had to wash his whole body, sit in full Jewish dress, and every time he wrote the name of God he must do so with a pen newly dipped in ink. (Samuel Davidson, *Hebrew Text of the Old Testament*. 2nd edition. London: Samuel Bagster and Sons, 1859, p. 89. Norman L. Geisler and William E. Nix, *A General Introduction to the Bible*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1968, p. 241)

“And Roland, can you guess what they did to any rolls in which these rules were not observed?”

“Tell me.”

“Such rolls were condemned to be buried in the ground or burned; or they were banished to the schools, to be used as reading-books.”

Roland’s eyes opened wider. “We never hear of such things!” he exclaimed.

“You know,” continued Al, “the Talmudists were so convinced when they had copied a manuscript that they had an exact duplicate, that they would give the new copy equal authority.”

“That makes sense,” said Roland. “If all were equally correct, age would give no advantage to a manuscript.”

“Right,” said Al. “Okay, the standard Hebrew text we have today is known as the Masoretic text.

“Those Masoretes (AD 500-900) were amazing. They counted the number of times each letter of the alphabet occurs in each book. They pointed out the middle letter of the Pentateuch (the 5 books of Moses) and the middle letter of the entire Hebrew Bible. And they made even more detailed calculations than those. (F.F. Bruce, *The Books and the Parchments*. Rev. ed. Westwood: Fleming H. Revell Co., 1963, p. 117)

“They numbered the verses, words and letters of every book. They calculated the middle word and middle letter of each.”

“Oh, come on.”

“Yes, they did just that! And as Sir Frederic Kenyon points out:

These trivialities had the effect of securing minute attention to the precise transmission of the text;... The Masoretes were indeed anxious that not one jot nor tittle, not one smallest letter nor one tiny part of a letter, of the Law should pass away or be lost. (Frederic G. Kenyon, *Our Bible and the Ancient Manuscripts*. New York: Harper and Brothers, 1941, p. 38)

“As far back as the first century, the Jewish historian Flavius Josephus also testified to this reverent attention to detail. He said:

We have given practical proof of our reverence for our own Scriptures. For, although such long ages have now passed, no one has ventured either to add, or to remove, or to alter a syllable; and it is an instinct with every Jew, from the day of his birth, to regard them as the decrees of God, to abide by them, and, if need be, cheerfully to die for them. (Flavius Josephus, “Flavius Josephus Against Apion” *Josephus, Complete Works*. Translated by William Whiston. Grand Rapids: Kregel Publications, 1960, pp.179,180)

“Now notice how Josephus compares the Hebrew respect for Scripture with the Greek regard for their literature. Listen:

What Greek would endure as much for the same cause? Even to save the entire collection of his nation’s writings from destruction he would not face the smallest personal injury. For to the Greeks [their own writings] are mere stories improvised according to the fancy of their authors. (*Ibid.*, p. 181)

“Well!” exclaimed Roland. “I must admit, that’s remarkable.”

Al smiled. “You know, Roland, there are places where the biblical text transliterates from Egyptian, Babylonian, Assyrian and Moabite into Hebrew, and vice versa. And yet the evidence shows that for up to 3,900 years the text of those proper names in the Hebrew Bible was handed down with total accuracy.

## **Unique in the history of literature**

Al leafed through the file. “It was Robert Dick Wilson who investigated this feature. Listen to his testimony:

That the original scribes should have written them with such close conformity to correct philological principles is a wonderful proof of their thorough care and scholarship; further, that the Hebrew text should have been transmitted by copyists through so many centuries with the most minute accuracy is a phenomenon unequaled in the history of literature. (Robert Dick Wilson, *A Scientific Investigation of the Old Testament*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1959, p. 71)



Al straightened up and faced Roland square on. “There you have it. Tell me, Roland, whoever counted the letters and syllables and words of Plato or Aristotle or Seneca? Or of the Sumerian texts that are so religiously cited for their “extraterrestrial” claims?

“Yes, you CAN be certain that the Hebrew Bible text has been transmitted accurately. Atkinson, who was Under-Librarian of the library at Cambridge University, calls this accuracy of transmission ‘little short of miraculous.’ (Josh McDowell, *Evidence That Demands a Verdict*. San Bernardino, Cal.: Here’s Life Publishers, Inc., 1986, p. 56)

### **In summary...**

Roland straightened up. “What can I say? This is simply mind blowing!”

“You’ve said it,” quipped Al. “Yes, every letter on every line was counted. If they did not add up to the right number of letters, the page was discarded. No wonder the original text has survived - despite a time difference of more than 1,000 years.

“Be assured of this - that of all the ancient works of substantial size, only the Bible comes to us completely intact. This is against all odds.

“Compare this with William Shakespeare's plays, written only about 400 years ago. These plays are in much worse shape... original words have been lost in numerous sections. And scholars are left to fill in the blanks as best as they can. Did you know that?

“On the other hand, the Bible has weathered thousands of years of wars, persecutions, fires and invasions, and still remains intact. It has more manuscript evidence to support it than any ten pieces of classical literature combined.”

Roland shrugged. “Then why do the critics...”

“They’re armchair critics, pal. They speak without honestly researching the matter.

“M. Montier-Williams was a professor of Sanskrit. Over several decades he studied the religious books of the East. Then he compared them with the Bible. Here was his conclusion:

Pile them, if you will, on the left side of your study table, but place your own Bible on the right side... [There is] a gulf between it and the so-called sacred books of the East which severs the one from the other utterly, hopelessly, and forever. (Gray, private files)

## **About aliens? You can trust what it reveals**

“So there you are. You can safely trust what the *Intelligence Report* says. It is a reliable, authoritative source of information... including on the alien question.”

“Oh, man,” sighed Roland. “I’ve been letting my prejudices get in the way. Perhaps I was too gullible in swallowing what the critics said.”

“No sweat, man. That’s behind you now. Would you like a cereal coffee? We’re trying to keep healthy, you know.”

“Thanks.”

Al made a swift move for the kitchen.

A feeling of relaxation came over Roland. He hadn’t felt this way for months.

Within minutes, Al was back. He had a cookie jar on the tray.

“Here, try these,” enticed Al.

Roland stretched and got up. They both stood by the table, helping themselves to Gloria’s cookies.

“What else should I know about?” asked Roland.

“Plenty,” grinned Al, wiping crumbs off his jacket. “But you’ve got a keen mind. So you’ll probably enjoy this... it’s about *a seal* the author placed on the *Intelligence Report* so that ***no person could alter the Bible message without us knowing.***”

“What!” Roland almost choked as he gulped down his coffee.

“It’s a code. It’s like the DNA code. But it’s in the Bible.”

“I’ve heard of something called ‘*The Bible Code*’. Is that it?”

“Yes... and no.”

“Then you have my interest.”

“It’s a *hidden mystery*. Ingenious! And it will blow your mind,” Al smiled.

Roland wheeled around suddenly. “Hey, what the...”

A high-pitched sound could be heard. It was coming from another room.

“Who’s the opera singer?” he laughed.

“Time to adjourn,” smiled Al. “Gloria’s calling from the bedroom.”

**NOTE:** If our story appears to be deviating from UFO aliens for a time, please be patient, because we must necessarily establish the comparative credibility of certain documents that are an essential part of the UFO drama.

# 15

*Secret code -*

## YOU CAN'T WRITE THIS BOOK!

As Roland drove home, Al's final message tantalised him. "It's a *hidden mystery*. And it will blow your mind."

What could that be? "Al had said it's like the DNA code. What is it?"

He would just have to pin Al down next time they met.

\* \* \* \* \*

Meanwhile, his mind drifted to another code he'd heard about. The "skipping" code, it was called.

In 1994, scholars at the Hebrew University and Jerusalem College of Technology announced they had discovered a hidden code in the Bible. This code had been discovered by Dr Eliyahu Rips, a world expert mathematician in quantum physics. It was later confirmed by famous mathematicians at Yale, Harvard and Hebrew University and replicated by a senior code-breaker at the United States Department of Defence.

When investigative reporter Michael Drosnin cashed in on the discovery, building on the work of Dr Rips, his book *The Bible Code* became a best seller. However, some analysts carefully pointed out that Drosnin's work was flawed by his attempt to use the Bible code to predict the future.

### **The "skipping" code**

This alleged code was discovered in the original language version of the Old Testament, that is, the Hebrew. It was found woven into the text in the form of equidistant letter sequence. That is to say, letters spaced at regular, equal distances

throughout the text spelled out related pairs of words containing messages.

Let's take, for example, the word *Torh* (pronounced "Torah" and meaning "The Law of God") – which is the name for the first five books of the Bible. Now, if you took the first Hebrew "T" in the first line of *the first book of the Torah, Genesis*, then counted out each subsequent 49<sup>th</sup> letter (49 = 7 x 7), every four letters spells *Torh* (*Torah*).

This holds all the way through the first two books of the Bible, *Genesis* and *Exodus*.

When you get to the middle book of the five, *Leviticus*, it stops. However, when you apply the same skip sequence to the last two books of the five, *Deuteronomy* and *Numbers*, it spells *Hrot*, which is *Torh* backwards... but still in perfect sequence.

Go back now to the middle book of the five (*Leviticus*). Starting at the first "Y", use the skip sequence again, this time skipping every 7 letters, and it spells YHWH (pronounced Yahweh) - the Hebrew name for *God*.

<i>Genesis</i>		<i>Numbers</i>
<i>Exodus</i>	<i>Leviticus</i>	<i>Deuteronomy</i>
Tohr -> Tohr -> Tohr ->	YHWH	<- Hrot <- Hrot <- Hrot

Another example given by the code-breakers was a passage in *Genesis* (2:9) concerning the Garden of Eden with its trees. It says: "... and the Lord God caused to grow out of the ground, every tree that is pleasant to the sight and good for food; and the tree of life in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil..." Hidden under this *surface passage*, a computer search uncovered in the *sub-surface code* the names of 31 trees, encoded at equidistant intervals into that one 43-word section – and nowhere else in the book!

Rabbi David Ordman, spokesman for the 20 university researchers, said:

To plan this kind of thing [for this single sentence] would take years. And they had to prepare the text as well, with perfect grammar, a message, and no contradictions.... We are not trying to prove the divinity of the Torah here, but that *the statistical odds against it being humanly written are impossible*. (*The Mail on Sunday*, August 4, 1985)

Which got newspapers asking, “Is Someone ‘out there’ having a game?” Jeffery Satinover reports on the attempts of critics to debunk the code:

Scientists, statisticians, and mathematicians from Harvard, Yale, and Carnegie-Mellon universities sought to find its flaws; none could. One such critic, Persi Diaconis at Harvard, an eminent statistician, was so fiercely opposed to the codes that he developed a brilliantly inventive mathematical method to refute them. He, too, failed; indeed, the Israeli team used this very method to substantiate their findings. What they claimed to have found – and seemed to have demonstrated to exacting standards – was this: that precise details not just about large-scale events, but from the lives of a whole set of individuals could be found encoded in the Book of Genesis. (Dr Jeffrey Satinover, *The Truth Behind the Bible Code*. London: Sedgwick and Jackson, 1997, p. 6)

This code, quite independently of the plain surface text, it was claimed, showed evidence of a prophetic foreknowledge of people and events hundreds, even thousands, of years into the future from the time the Bible was written.

It was stated that so intricate, complex and clever was this code - so above human intelligence to create - that it was found only with the help of computers. The amount of information encoded into a limited text, in which the same arrangement of letters could contain multiple meanings – this was something beyond the capacity of any individual (or group) to create, whatever computing resources were available.

### **Other layers of information?**

It was then announced that, according to ancient tradition, there were 73 different layers of information in the text of the

Torah (the first five books of the Bible). Of these, “skipping letters” was just one (listed by Rabbi Eliezer as number 54). (*Ibid.*, p. 250)

Can you imagine a book constructed with several different layers of coded information hidden under the text... each layer independent of the other and each complete in itself? Having not myself directly researched this “skipping” code, I mention it not to endorse it, but rather, so it will not be confused with *something quite separate* found in the Bible... which I shall call the *sevens* code. That is something quite different, as we shall soon see.

## **A more amazing code**

Roland had assumed - because he'd heard it claimed - that the Bible was just a collection of forged documents.

But he was about to discover that *no persons in the world could have faked the Bible*, even had they wanted to.

If you had peered into Al's living room that Saturday afternoon, and seen how attentively those two men were huddled over some papers, you might have caught the excitement.

Al was speaking. “Let me impress the need for very careful concentration,” he was saying to Roland. “I am about to share with you a unique phenomenon. And it lies deep *below the surface* of the *Intelligence Report*. It is a discovery that has staggered the cleverest brains in the world. Are you ready?”

“That's why I'm here,” said Roland.

## **Number design in nature**

Al began. “You are aware that a numeric scheme runs through nature?”

“Of course,” nodded the engineer, “everything operates according to mathematical laws.”

“Were you aware,” asked Al, “that the human body seems to be stamped with the number SEVEN? Now think about this. Your body consists of 7 main parts – head, neck, trunk and four limbs – 7 in all. Did you know that the development of the human embryo is in exact periods of 7s, such as 28 days (4 x 7)?

Ask Angie's doctor to explain. You'll be amazed at the accuracy of this law.

"Is this arrangement of 7s merely accidental? Let me remind you that this same number or its multiples marks the period of gestation and incubation of many birds and animals.

"The common hen sits 21 days (3 x 7); the pigeon, after having laid eggs, sits for 14 days (2 x 7). The duck takes 28 days to hatch ducklings (4 x 7); the goose 35 days (5 x 7); the swan 42 days (6 x 7); hundreds of varieties of small birds have been checked at 14 days (2 x 7); larger birds, such as the emperor penguin, ostrich or emu 49, 56 or 63 days (7 x 7...8 x 7 ...or 9 x 7). If the hen leaves her eggs on the 20<sup>th</sup> day, there'll be no chicks.

"The seal calves on the rocks and suckles its young for 14 days (2 x 7). The ova of salmon are hatched in 140 days (20 x 7). The gestation period of the mouse is 21 days (3 x 7); the rabbit 28 days (4 x 7); the cat 56 days (8 x 7); the dog 63 days (9 x 7); the lion 14 x 7; the sheep 21 x 7; the cow 40 x 7; the elephant 90 x 7. And so on. The ova of the glow worm occupy 42 days (6 x 7), and of the mole cricket 28 days in hatching (4 x 7). The period of the bee in the larva is 7 days. In moths it is 42 days (6 x 7)

"Come to think of it, Roland, in chemistry, music and art, we find the same number 7 playing an important part. Both sound and light are subject to the law of 7. How has it come about, for example, that the human ear responds to 7 distinct intervals in a scale of one octave? In the rainbow are 7 colors – red, orange, yellow, green, blue, indigo, violet."

"Agreed," said Roland, "it looks like intentional design. But what's that got to do with the *Intelligence Report*?"

## The "watermark"

"I was coming to that," replied Al. "Did you know this very same design of 7s has been found embedded both *on and beneath the surface* of the Bible?"

"You are pulling my leg!" exclaimed Roland.



“Not at all,” said Al, seriously. “It seems both the Bible and nature bear similar identification marks – just as surely as various papers from the same mill bear beneath their surface the watermark of *that mill alone.*”

“You’d better explain *that,*” pressed Roland.

“Okay, here it is.

### **Chain features that link the books**

“You see, quite independently of the biblical text is a “watermark” design woven through the surface message – a *pattern of ‘seven’*, if you please! Chain features of 7 run through the whole Bible. You will find precisely 7 oak trees, 7 earthquakes, 7 references to the Book of Life, 7 lamps of fire, 7 seals, and so on.

“A startling feature of this arrangement of ‘7s’ is that an uncompleted portion of a series of 7 will cross over from one book to another, until it totals 7 and then stops. A particular feature will appear to a total of 7 (or multiples of 7) times, but only when you place all the books together... scattered through several different books until it totals 7 mentions overall.

“For example, the name David appears throughout the Old Testament exactly 1,134 times (162 x 7). The name Jeremiah occurs in 7 Old Testament books, with exactly 147 (21 x 7) mentions. The name Moses occurs in the various books of the Bible exactly 847 (121 x 7) times.

“A certain Bible concordance (indexing every word in the Bible) was prepared by C.F. Hudson, supervised by H.L. Hastings and checked by Ezra Abbot. It listed what were thought to be all of the Bible references to the word “Moses”. It catalogued the name as appearing 846 times. But according to our numeric discovery, that had to be wrong – because 846 does not divide evenly by 7. However, 847 does. Could it be that the concordance was in error – and that it had omitted one reference?

“Yes. The scholarly gentlemen who prepared that index had overlooked a reference in the book of Hebrews! The error

was detected by applying the numeric design occurring in the structured Bible text!

“The Bible is literally filled with these chain features! This chain feature forms only when all the books are brought together. No single writer could have produced it. Neither could all the different writers have collaborated to produce it – since most of them never knew each other. So much for the surface pattern. But now let’s explore *beneath* the surface.

### The “sevens” pattern beneath the surface

“Did you know that the *Intelligence Report* – that is, the Bible – was first written in Hebrew and Greek – the two languages in which each letter of the alphabet also doubles as a number?” (See Appendix A)

“Like Latin?” asked Roland. “Where V equals 5; X is also 10; C is 100, and so on?”

“Exactly,” replied Al. “except that in Latin only some letters are numbers. In Hebrew and Greek it is every letter. So when you read a word or sentence, you are simultaneously looking at a string of numbers. And that brings us to a discovery made by a Russian scientist, Ivan Panin.

“Panin was one of the ten top mathematicians of his day in the United States. He taught in universities and knew up to 14 languages. He loved playing with numbers.

“One day in 1882, this mathematical genius found himself experimenting. Knowing Hebrew, Aramaic and Greek, he began reading the Bible in *its original languages*. He experimented by replacing the letters in the Bible with their corresponding numbers.

“Suddenly his excitement welled up. His trained mind began to see a mathematical pattern! He kept experimenting. After a few hours he was totally amazed.

“The passages he had studied revealed unmistakable evidence of an elaborate numerical pattern. This was far beyond random chance, nor human ability to construct.

“As you probably know, the Old Testament was written in *Hebrew*, the New Testament in *Greek*. Thus every letter, word

and sentence has a numeric value, the sum total of each letter value.

“On the surface runs the message in everyday words, as in any other book. But the substructure of individual letters spells out a complex mathematical code – an interlocking pattern of *sevens*.

## A juggling game that defies the world’s cleverest men

“Take, as an example, the very first sentence in the Bible: ‘*In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.*’

In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth						
	God		created		In the beginning	
את	אלהים	ברא	בראשית			
400 1	40 10 5 30 1	1 200 2	400 10 300 1 200 2			
	the earth	and	the heavens			
	הארץ	ואת	השמים			
	90 200 1 5	400 1 6	40 10 40 300 5			

- This sentence contains exactly *seven* Hebrew words.
- These comprise 28 letters (4 x 7).
- The three nouns (God, heaven, earth) have a total numeric value of exactly 777.
- The first three Hebrew words (containing the subject) have exactly 14 (2 x 7) letters.
- The fourth and fifth words have exactly 7 letters.
- The fifth and sixth words have 7 letters.
- The Hebrew words for the two objects “the heavens and the earth” *each* have exactly 7 letters.

- The numeric value of the first and last letters of the whole 7 words is 1,393 (199 x 7).
- The value of the first and last letters of the sentence is 497 (71 x 7).
- So the value of the first and last letters between is 896 (128 x 7).
- The last letters of the first and last words have a numeric value of 490 (70 x 7).

“In fact, there are over 30 different numeric features of *seven* in the first simple sentence of the Bible. These *seven* Hebrew words were so chosen and arranged that the number *seven* is literally woven into them *in every conceivable way*.

“Not only that. Vital statements are sealed by the numeric design *exactly fitted within the statement itself*.

“These 7s are so deeply concealed that special searching, investigating and counting is necessary to find them. They are not seen by ordinary reading.

“Anyway, this discovery was to change the course of Panin’s life. For the next 60 years, he would use every working moment to painstakingly write out over 43,000 pages of data. To his astonishment, in the Bible was an intricate matrix revolving around the number 7 and prime factors of 7.

“He found the Bible, in its original language, to be a skilfully designed artefact. It was nothing less than the product of a mathematical mastermind. What Panin had discovered was a phenomenon far beyond any human possibility of deliberate structuring.

“Panin would later present his findings – all 43,000 pages of them – to the Nobel Research Foundation. He also presented to them his conclusion that the Bible could only be the work of Someone with the Mind of the Creator. Nothing less.

“The reply of the Nobel Research Foundation was:

As far as our investigation has proceeded... we find the evidence overwhelmingly in favor of such a statement.

## The challenge

“Now Panin issued a challenge through the world’s leading newspapers. He challenged anyone to either submit a ‘natural explanation’, or refute the evidence.”

“Did they?”

“To date, no person has been able to do so.”

All very well,” said Roland. “But is this phenomenon found in any other book anywhere on earth?”

“It’s found in no other literature,” responded Al. “Mind you, there have been sincere efforts to find such numerics in the Greek classics (Homer’s *Iliad* and others), the *Septuagint*, the *Apocrypha* and other works, but they have proven unsuccessful. NO WORKS OF MAN SHOW EVIDENCE OF SUCH DESIGNS. It seems that man just cannot do it.

“In fact, such a complete *interlocking system of sevens* is so far removed from chance (the Law of Chance puts it at one in 33 odd trillion) that, humanly speaking, it is impossible.

“These numeric phenomena in the Bible are so pronounced that though they comprise, as it were, a dozen rings within rings, wheels within wheels, yet each is perfect in itself.

“Amazingly, Roland, there is not a single paragraph out of the hundreds in Genesis that is not constructed on exactly the same plan. You can appreciate that with each additional paragraph the difficulty of construction increases, not in arithmetical but in geometrical progression. Because the writer must write his paragraphs so as to develop constantly fixed numeric relations to what has gone before, as well as to what follows.

“And there’s the point. With each additional sentence the difficulty greatly increases, and owing to the limitations of human intellect, soon becomes hopeless.

Scholars who have set out to accomplish a similar thing admit that after struggling for days their efforts were in vain without reducing the passage to a meaningless jumble. One such attempt was made by a Dr D.B. Turkey. He reports:

I gave numeric values to the English alphabet, and tried to prepare a message which would adhere to the numerics, and

make every section a multiple of seven, and present all the other features of Biblical arithmography, without letting the meaning of the passage descend to nonsense. After working on it for days, I could get no satisfaction. Yet this feature is accomplished in every one of the thousands of Bible paragraphs without the slightest visible effort.

“But get this, my friend. This phenomenon is not just in the book of Genesis. The whole Bible is like this! Yes, Roland, every paragraph, passage and book is constructed in the same astonishing way.”

“Can you explain this? Here are 40 different biblical characters who mostly never knew each other (so it was impossible for them to collaborate). Yet this same numeric pattern crosses from one book to another, independent of each writer, bringing the whole into harmony.”

Al was now animated. “Do you get it, Roland? You discover here not just words, but an astonishing design of interlocking 7s – like wheels within wheels – woven together in every conceivable way, *below* the surface.

“***You can’t pull out one word, without changing the pattern.*** No wonder it is written, ‘*The Scripture cannot be broken.*’ (John 10:35)

Al eyed the engineer. He looked floored. Eventually Roland spoke. “I can’t argue with mathematics. It’s an exact science. And I must say your proof deals with mathematical certainties. The scientific method... the hard logic... the sound laws of reasoning. What can I say? This is astounding.”

“And foolproof,” smiled Al. “It can withstand any amount of honest testing.”

Al sat grinning. “I’ll say it again, pal. If you sat down to produce similar phenomena of 7s, your brain would soon be reeling, because every time you adjusted one portion it would upset another! It’s just too complex.”

“I suggest to you that not only could man not possibly design these numeric schemes, but the writers themselves knew nothing of their presence. Man made up the Bible? Let’s get real! ***It’s the work of a Master Mind out there.***”

The engineer cleared his throat. “A Mind that paid excruciating attention to its precise letter-by-letter sequence. Yeah, I can see that.”

### **Self-verifying protection factor**

“Okay,” said Al, “you were asking how we can know the *Intelligence Report* has not been tampered with over the centuries? How can we be sure what was originally in it? There’s your answer. You see, the document carries within itself, this *self-checking, self-verifying* protection factor.

“And if any passage did not fit the numeric pattern, we could determine precisely where the tampering had been done! You see?”

“And this has actually been done! By means of the numeric designs, Ivan Panin settled every one of the alternative readings left by the translators Westcott and Hort in their Greek Bible text. The result was his scholarly *Numeric Greek New Testament* and his *Numeric English New Testament*.

Roland thumped his fist hard on his knee. “That’s what I needed to know, man. A book written by 40 different men, and during 1,600 years? Yet with the same identical code hidden beneath the surface? What can I say, Al... That’s a miracle!”

### **The claim of authorship**

Al smiled. “So you see, it’s not the work of many minds, but of one Mind... the same as wrote that DNA code in your body.”

Roland was shaking with excitement. “*Why doesn’t the world hear about this?*”

“You know,” said Al, “**3,800 times** the Bible claims to be God’s message to man... and not man’s ideas about God.

Roland whistled. “And this numeric code seals it. It’s his fingerprint!”

“Yes, stamped all over, interlocked and interwoven. Makes it the most credible document in existence, don’t you think?”

Roland nodded.

## 21<sup>st</sup> century science in Genesis

“Now,” said Al, “here’s something else to blow your mind – in those same first seven words of the Hebrew Bible -  
 וַיְהִי אֵת הַשָּׁמַיִם, בְּרָא אֱלֹהִים, בְּרֵאשִׁית. הָאָרֶץ - ‘*In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.*’ (Genesis 1:1)

“These seven Hebrew words were purposely intended to rest on an independent and meaningful *substructure*.

“Every letter making up that sentence is also a *number*. And in this Creation account are found patterns of numbers and inter-relations of numbers that are, frankly, quite boggling.

“But in Hebrew, every letter was a *picture*, as well. The shape of the picture told a story. And the *sound* of each letter also told a story. Thus the letters present us with pictures in words, shape, sound and number. That means that there are *dimensions* to this creation account which go well beyond the surface story.

“These dimensions include

- the structure of the periodic table of elements
- geometry (the tetrahedron, sphere and circle)
- the value of Pi ( $\pi$ ) calculated to 3 decimal places
- the exponential variable
- details of physics, chemistry, biochemistry
- astronomical information (including the lunar month and year)
- anatomy (the number of vertebrae in the human body, the major nerves in the human spine, the 46 human chromosomes, DNA)
- spirituality and relationships (including prescription for a happy marriage, love, a guide to meditation and prayer), and so on.

“You see, Roland, all of this scientific data is coded into this first sentence of the *Intelligence Report*. It is found embedded within the relationships of every word and letter and in other layers of information built into this single sentence.



## A challenge to every skeptic

“Surely, such interplay leaves little room for doubt that here is the work of a supremely intelligent and purposeful mind.”

Roland clenched his fist, then relaxed. “Okay, whose mind?”

Al faced him. “Jewish tradition holds that God dictated the first five books of the Bible to Moses, letter by letter.

“But *why* was this information encoded into the text? Is it the Author’s way of assuring us at this particular late moment – where our scientific materialism has pushed us to the brink of radical skepticism – that He is precisely who He said He is?

“Everything hinges on this opening statement: *‘In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.’* And wonder of wonders, this simple sentence is embedded with complex subsurface scientific knowledge. It makes my spine tingle!

“If this true, Roland, there can be no firmer source of information on earth.”

“And the *best* authority on aliens, too? I can’t wait to get to that.” Roland stood up. Al walked him to the door.

++++  
 Since the book of Genesis is signed with the number 7, it should not surprise us to discover that it comprises exactly 78,064 Hebrew letters, thus:

$$\begin{array}{r} * 77700 = 100 \times 777 \\ * + 343 = 7 \times 7 \times 7 \\ * + \underline{21} = 7 + 7 + 7 \end{array}$$

Total: 78064

You may well ask, how more perfect could that be?

++++

# 16

*One versus the other -*

## ALIENS AND THE INTELLIGENCE REPORT

After his late night, Roland slept in. When he arose, he found Angie in the lounge room. She had a pile of magazines beside her. An article lay open, "*I Fell in Love With My Abductor.*"

Roland felt exasperated. But he suppressed it.

"Good morning, sweetheart," he said, bending to kiss her.

She didn't look up.

"Have you eaten?"

"Leave me alone."

Roland felt a knot in his stomach. He shuffled into the kitchen.

That morning he picked up the doctor's report. When he read it, he almost collapsed. She had a vaginal tumor.

Why?... Why?... His heart cried out.

He drove home in a daze.

Angie didn't speak. She just stared at him. Her eyes were glassy. It was as if she were in a trance.

He went for a walk. But his heart felt like it would explode. He rang the school.

"Al Coster speaking."

"Al. So sorry to interrupt your lunch hour. Can I come over to your place after school? I just need to talk to you."

"Sure, pal. I'll get home early."

Roland put down the phone, got his car keys and went out. He needed a drive into the country. He couldn't wait till four thirty.

Since Brad Sheed's visit, seemingly unrelated pieces of the puzzle were starting to fit together. Some things were making much more sense.

Roland was coming to suspect that there was some kind of cosmic conflict – war, if you like – going on.

### **ETs say: “Bible edited wrongly”**

The name Semjase came into his head. He recalled that Semjase was the blond alien that Billy Meier claimed had visited him. And she was said by Brad Steiger (in his 1989 book *The Fellowship*) to have visited a man named Fred Bell.

Among other things, this alien informed him that the Bible had been incorrectly edited, that it had “holes”.

Now Roland understood. And he asked himself, was it just a coincidence that Meier, Steiger and Bell had become decidedly anti-Bible after contact with this Semjase?

And that UFO contactees *wanted to re-write* Bible history and reinterpret it *to suit UFO ideas?*

\* \* \* \* \*

We shall leave Roland Brown for now and consider this desire by UFO aliens and contactees to re-write history.

### **UFOs in the Bible?**

One of the claims of UFOs allegedly appearing in the Bible was Ezekiel's so-called “sighting”. (Ezekiel 1:1-28) Many modern writers had asserted that the prophet Ezekiel saw an alien spacecraft.

Roland had to admit, it was an intriguing idea.

But after he took a closer, unbiased look at the account, he could see it was nothing like that, at all. Twice in the passage, Ezekiel himself said it was merely a “vision” of God. (vv. 1, 28)

In Ezekiel's vision, the “vehicle” was said to go in all directions at the same time (v. 17), which of course a real vehicle cannot possibly do. This was merely a reference to the fact that the Creator could be everywhere at the same time and that he was not limited to our understanding. The whole thing was just a

vision of God in all his glory being borne along by four cherubim (angels).

Nowhere did Ezekiel use the terms “craft”, “ship” or anything describing any sort of vehicle.

However, the Bible had become “fair game” for people with an agenda of their own. And they would pull a Bible passage totally out of context to prove a pet theory. They wanted to believe it was a UFO, despite the author’s actual words. The context was always ignored.

### **“God” not a UFO astronaut**

Numerous biblical accounts of the Supreme One’s intervention in history were reinterpreted to mean that ETs did it.

Roland now had a few questions for those who were taking such liberties. He would ask them, “Were you there? Is it not arrogant to suggest that the original writers were ignorant – or that they misunderstood what they saw?”

He sensed that those ancients were more spiritually attuned than people today. Our preoccupation with the physical had blunted our spiritual senses.

In fact, it seemed prudent now to ask, Did the Bible writers know more than we suspect? Why did they (as Brad Sheed claimed) – why did they warn us against these spirit entities? If aliens were really overseeing mankind’s development, you would expect the Bible writers to encourage contacts with them. But, according to Sheed, the *Intelligence Report* spoke strongly against them.

### **Couldn’t God communicate?**

So why shouldn’t one take this *Intelligence Report* (the Bible) at face value? Just as we are pleased to do with other documents?

It claims to be the words of the Creator himself. And, as Roland was now becoming aware, millions of level headed people, including some world-class scientists, were accepting that.

After all, don't aliens dictate words to contactees, and aren't these written into books? So couldn't the Creator be able to do as much?

As Gary Bates had asked:

If this Creator supernaturally and inter-dimensionally transmitted coded information into DNA molecules, couldn't He give further information in written documents via mankind, whom He created, too? (Gary Bates, *Alien Intrusion*. Green Forest, AR.: Master Books, Inc., 2004, p. 139)

## **The Bible central to the UFO debate**

These were questions that Roland was having to grapple with. And even before he turned up information about CE-4.

CE-4 was founded by Joe Jordan and Wes Clark. Each of its dozen or so Florida-based members was also a trained field investigator for MUFON (Mutual UFO Network). MUFON was unquestionably the most respected clearing house in the world for UFO reports. CE-4's president, Joe Jordan, also served as a state section director of MUFON.

By means of practical research and *not* a pre-existing belief in Christianity (Clark believed in God, but no more; Jordan was a "crystal-rolling New Ager") this group stumbled upon a discovery. It was, to their astonishment, that the Bible provided answers to the nature of a behind-the-scenes drama going on.

These researchers did not start out as "Bible bangers" with a point to make. Rather, it was the opposite. All they wanted was the truth. It was the results of their research that made believers of them. ("The Premise of Spiritual warfare," <[www.alieresistance.org/ce4premise.htm](http://www.alieresistance.org/ce4premise.htm)>, March 7, 2003)

Roland reflected. According to Sheed, the Bible claimed that the truth could be easily discovered. One just needed to take its Author at His word.

\* \* \* \* \*

... "Hey, off with your shoes," said Al. "Let's go down to the beach. It's a good place to talk."

Soon the two men were sitting on the grass verge. Roland gazed out to sea.

Al was a sympathetic listener. Roland was starting to feel better.

He pushed his toes into the grass. “This whole ET question... aliens , the bastards... I was never interested until Angie was raped. Do you understand?”

“I know.”

“Now I want to know everything about them. Who they are... why do they claim we belong to them?... What is their plan?... What will happen now?... What can I do about it?”

“Well,” said Al, “If you’re ready for this...”

“I’m ready.”

“I’ve been telling you the answer was in the *Intelligence Report*. Are you willing to accept that?”

“Yeah... I think so.”

“You accept now that it’s a reliable source?”

Roland moved his big frame and looked Al in the eye. “Well, you understand, I first had to determine whether or not this was a credible document. As you know, I had my doubts. But they’re pretty much resolved now. However, I’m curious. Why does the UFO movement focus so much on that book? They quote it when it suits them. Yet they put it down as written by superstitious primitives.”

## **Why are aliens against the Bible?**

Al flicked a pebble onto the sand. “Would you really like to know *why the aliens are against it?* Why they’re so obsessed with *trying to discredit* the Bible? The key is in *just who* they are. And when you discover that, then it will all make sense.”

“I’m cracking my brain to know... who are they?”

“As I said before, you must first understand the BIG PICTURE. It will knock your socks off! But can it wait till after dinner?”

Al arose, rubbing the seat of his pants. “Beat you to the end of the beach!”

\* \* \* \* \*

In the next few chapters we shall uncover that *big picture* AI was about to reveal. But I shall relate it to you in my own words...





## **Part 3:**

# **LEGION OF LUCIFER**



# 17

*Life in deep space? -*

## ARE OTHER WORLDS INHABITED?

As early as 1971, the renowned British astrophysicist Fred Hoyle told a London press conference that an unseen force was controlling the world. And “they” could manifest in many forms. To astonished journalists he announced, “They are everywhere, in the sky, in the sea and on the earth.” He asserted that they control the human race through the mind.

Was he exaggerating? Not at all. As unbelievable as this may sound, it is actually true.

Is there evidence of this? Yes, good evidence.

The aliens have already revealed themselves and what they hope to accomplish.

### **The Intelligence Report**

In Section 2 of this book we discovered a neglected source of information that, above all other ancient documents, bears impeccable credentials. Brad Sheed called it *The Intelligence Report*.

It blows the cover off the aliens’ agenda – and exposes their plans for all to see.

The credentials of the *Intelligence Report* are watertight. We have referred to only three of these:

1. archaeological confirmation of its historical claims
2. its fulfilled prophecies and
3. an inbuilt code.

This is a cosmic document, furnishing a world history so very different from that of the evolution theory.

For this reason there has been a relentless attempt to discredit the *Report* itself.

This is unfortunate for the critics, because its credentials have proved impossible to overthrow.

## **Reveals behind-the-scenes information**

This document (otherwise known as the Bible) exposes what is occurring behind the scenes, not just on Planet Earth, but in deep space.

Drawing aside the curtain, it identifies two spiritual forces at work in the universe – one good, the other evil. Just two. There is no middle ground. These two are diametrically opposed.

One side is active in the UFO and ET phenomena. And when you lay out all the clues, you can arrive at the TRUTH. You can know which side is behind the UFO phenomenon.

You will also discover how the conflict between these two opposing forces began, and how it will end.

The *Intelligence Report* will stretch the smartest scientific mind, yet be understandable by a child.

This document makes a claim that at first may appear audacious: that the Creator Himself selected humans who were in tune with Him and revealed vital messages to them. It claims that they were mysteriously guided as they wrote.

This claim is repeated within the document more than 3,800 times. The entity inspiring these writings asserts, “I am the Eternal One. I am giving you the GAME PLAN of history on earth *before* it happens. Test it. Prove all things. And you will *know* these messages are from me.”

## **Worth investigating**

Were you aware that this document:

1. is a best seller?
2. is the most widely translated and most widely read document on Planet Earth?

That alone should make it worth investigating.

Yet, as you very well know, the Bible has, in our day, fallen into disfavor with many. This is due in large measure to

the entrenchment of the evolution theory in all places of learning.

Darwin's 19th century evolution theory was, as you know, hammered into us as school children, and the media continues to parrot it to us. Therefore, so many of us assume it to be correct.

As a general rule, this theory denies the need for the supernatural. And whilst only a *theory*, it is often taught as a *fact*.

However, with the discovery of the DNA information code, this theory is looking increasingly shaky. Both the DNA code and the Bible's unique credentials point to a Supreme Intellect at work.

### **The book the aliens hate**

It boils down to this: If we want to know what is behind the UFO phenomenon, we must take into account this *Intelligence Report*. It is a reliable source.

Not only is the *Intelligence Report* *a more credible source of information than anything else* available to us, you are about to discover why the aliens hate it so madly!

### **Is history following an agenda?**

Today, many thinking persons are recognising patterns in the events of human life and history that mock the idea of mere coincidence. Some events almost shriek out that someone is behind it all.

And how shall we explain that events predicted in the *Intelligence Report* are working out, move by move, just as though pre-planned?

So is the nature of UFOs and ETs, knowable? Indeed, it is.

### **The original "Star Wars"**

According to the world's most ancient traditions, the conflict began with a real "Star Wars" rebellion. Yet it was a strange, cosmic war – in which not a shot was fired, and in which not one participant died.

Since then it has escalated so as to personally concern every living human on this planet.

## **Are other worlds inhabited?**

Planet Earth spins through space at the edge of the Milky Way galaxy. But beyond... out there in that universe whose flickering lights we observe at night, astronomers reason that there must be many other worlds.

There is already strong circumstantial evidence that other stars do have planets. Numerous red and yellow dwarf stars like the sun rotate more slowly than might be expected of bodies their size, indicating that they have planets in orbit around them. An infra-red astronomy satellite launched by the United States found that some stars had a blurry appearance, suggesting they had cooler material – probably planets – orbiting around them.

The first discovery of planets beyond our solar system was claimed by Professor Robert Harrington of Washington Naval Observatory and Professors Donald McCarthy and Frank Lowe of the University of Arizona.

Since then, several other scientists have claimed discoveries of planets orbiting other suns (stars). Dr Alan Wright, of Parkes Observatory, New South Wales, Australia, says: “It’s the height of egotism and arrogance for us to believe that, of the thousand million stars in our galaxy alone, ours is the only one that has a planet that supports life.” (Melbourne Age, February 10, 1989)

Did you know, the *Intelligence Report* alludes to the fact that the universe is teeming with intelligent life. (Nehemiah 9:6; Hebrews 1:1,2; 11:3; Job 38:4,7; 1:6-12; 2:1-6; 1 Corinthians 4:9; Revelation 12:12)

And that all are in harmony with the Creator. Unlike this rebellious planet, they are loyal subjects of His universal domain.

But these purer civilizations *are not coming here*. And we shall discover why.

# 18

*The original “star wars” -*

## REBELLION IN OUTER SPACE

“Look,” said Roland, “I can accept that these aliens – these intruders – are not from Venus, Planet X, Sirius, or what other place they claim, but who on earth are they... really?”

“That’s what we’ll now discover,” said Al. “By the way, how did Angie take the news?”

Roland’s voice trembled. Al sensed a mixture of anger and despair.

“She won’t talk to me. All she said was, “He’ll fix it.”

“Who does she mean?”

“Her alien rapist, the b.....!” exclaimed Roland. “She no longer makes sense. It’s like there’s a very different woman in the house.”

“I’m sorry,” replied Al. “I understand.”

“I want to know...” cut in Roland. “Give me the worst... so I know what I’m dealing with.”

And Al began...

\* \* \* \* \*

To keep abreast with what Al was about to explain, let’s recap.

In chapter 7 we saw evidence of a Designer, or Creator, who is outside time and space – outside creation - yet who is its origin.

Not some vague force, but rather a Supreme Being who put a lot of thought into designing you to be a person. Think carefully, now. You and I, although less than that Supreme one, have personality. Since He is greater than you and I, can He be *less a personality* than we?

I am suggesting, as the most reasonable inference from the evidence, that this Creator is *a self-aware, personal, thinking*

**Being...** greater than us in every way, including personality!  
Does that make sense?

## **Behind the television news**

Now for the BIG news... *the overall picture.*

Are you ready for this? Behind the scenes, a deadly drama is being played out. It is much BIGGER than you and I ever suspected. The action is on this planet, but involves the whole universe.

Were you aware that the earliest civilizations knew about this?

Did you know that your ancestors and mine universally held that there had been a rebellion in the heavens – in the spiritual realm? And that the banished rebels, led by one called Lucifer, had in fact hijacked this infant planet?

A Babylonian tablet calls it “The Revolt in Heaven”. Mexican tradition likewise recounts the war in heaven, the fall of Zontemonque and the other rebellious spirits, the Creation, and the subsequent entrapment of mankind by the rebel.

Yes, they believed this little planet had been hijacked. And that a conflict was raging between two major personalities... and their followers.

When the truth is known, America, George Bush, the European community, Arabs, Israelis, the Pope, China... these are just minor players. And you and I are caught up in it too.

In fact, you can discover just how this drama began and how it will end. Indeed, it’s a drama that is being watched with breathless interest by all the universe.

Fantasy? No, it’s fact!

According to the *Intelligence Report*, there is not only a physical kingdom or realm, but also a spiritual world, or kingdom, unseen by the human eye. Both were created by God. That spiritual world also has kings, rulers and authorities ruling over it. (Colossians 1:15-16)



## Heart of the universe

Most facts concerning the universe are still unknown to science. It would be presumptuous to imagine that we know as much as one octillionth of what the universe holds in store. Our planet is a mere speck on the edge of the galaxy. But it is believed that all the galaxies revolve around a central axis. This grand central region – the crown jewel of the universe, and the governing center – is generally given the name “heaven”.

While we on planet earth might call ourselves “humans”, heaven is the home to millions of created beings called “angels”, a term which means “messengers”, since these beings travel on errands between the worlds. They also exercise powers superior to our own.

If life exists out there, is it any less reasonable for us to believe in angels, than for them to believe in us? Admittedly, some would prefer that we believed in extraterrestrials rather than believing in the possibility that the same are angelic in their nature, since this would seem to indicate that life is created rather than a product of evolutionary chance.

## It began out there!

Now, concerning that rebellion. It began out there... in the deep reaches of space – beyond the Orion nebula. At a real place, generally known as heaven, the governing center of the universe, the home of millions of created beings called angels.

Lucifer, a brilliant, handsome and powerful commander, was the very Chief Aid that the Creator had placed at His throne.

Lucifer had it pretty good. But he had a problem – pride. He became dissatisfied with his own position. He wanted it all. And he allowed himself to fall into the attitude of “*Get*”. He became vain and envious. He thought that he could rule as well as, or better than, his Creator.

Though he was respected and loved by the legions of angels under him, that seemed not enough. It was unlimited power he wanted, unlimited control, independence. (Isaiah 14:12-14; Ezekiel 28:12-19) So he proceeded to spread his discontent to them.

“The Creator does not care for His subjects,” he asserted. “His laws are tyrannical. It is I who have your interest at heart.” The issue was the Creator's law of love, a law of *give* - as opposed to Lucifer's desire to *get*.

A charismatic personality in high position of trust, Lucifer was so respected that he managed to convince a third of the angels that his way of self centeredness was better than the Creator's way of unselfish service.

Lucifer's ambition was to take over God's heavenly throne. And war on a grand scale - a great spiritual battle – took place.

Perhaps you've imagined a mythical devil with horns, hoofs and a pitchfork. Forget it. That's pure myth. Lucifer, according to the *Intelligence Report*, was a glorious, majestic being. He was created perfect, happy and free. But by choosing open rebellion, he made of himself a devil.

### **Did God create a devil?**

A university professor challenged his students with this question. “Did God create everything that exists?”

A student bravely replied, “Yes, he did!”

The professor answered, “If God created everything, then God created evil, since evil exists. And according to the principle that our works define who we are, then God is evil.”

Another student raised his hand.

“Yes?”

“May I ask you a question, sir?”

“Of course,” responded the professor.

The student rose to his feet. “Professor,” he asked, “does cold exist?”

“What kind of question is this? Of course cold exists! Have you never been cold?”

The young man replied, “In fact, sir, cold does *not* exist. According to the laws of physics, what we consider cold is, in reality, just the absence of heat. We can only study something when it has energy or transmits energy. We cannot study cold. Absolute zero (-460 degrees Fahrenheit) is the total absence of heat. All matter becomes inert and incapable of reaction at that

temperature. Cold does not exist. We have created this word to describe how we feel if we have no heat.”

The student continued. “Professor, does darkness exist?”

“Of course it does,” replied the professor.

The student looked at him. “Once again you are wrong, sir. Darkness does not exist, either. Darkness is, in reality, the absence of light. We can study light, but not darkness. In fact, we can use Newton’s prism to break white light into many colors and study the various wave lengths of each color. You cannot measure darkness. A simple ray of light can break into a world of darkness and illuminate it. How can you know how dark a certain space is? You measure the amount of light present. Isn’t this correct? Darkness is a term used by man to describe what happens when there is no light present.”

Finally, the young man asked the professor, “Sir, does evil exist?”

Now uncertain, the professor responded, “Of course, as I have already said. We see it every day. It is in the daily example of man’s inhumanity to man. It is in the multitude of crime and violence everywhere in the world. These manifestations are nothing else but evil.”

All eyes were on the student as he responded, “Evil does not exist, sir. Or at least, it does not exist in itself. Evil is simply the absence of God. It’s just like darkness and cold – a word that man has created to describe the absence of God. God did not create evil. Evil is not like faith, or love, that exist just as do light and heat. Evil is the result of what happens when man does not have God’s love present in his heart. It’s like the cold that comes when there is no heat, or the darkness that comes when there is no light.”

The professor sat down, stunned. The young student’s name was – Albert Einstein.

### **Evil = absence of God**

No, God did not create a devil. Lucifer, by choosing open rebellion – by choosing to cut off his connection with God - made of himself a devil.

Evil itself is a mystery, but it is *not* another face of God, the good Creator. Evil is the exclusion of good – separation from God.

God created a superbly beautiful and wise being. He invested him with power above all the other created beings. His name Lucifer means “son of the morning”, “bright and shining one”. He was a free moral agent with the power of choice. But he became filled with ambition to be higher than his Maker.

It was spiritual mutiny. Lucifer, one of God’s mighty cherubs, rebelled against Him. (Ezekiel 28:11-18; Isaiah 14:12-17) “And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against [Lucifer]; and [Lucifer] fought and his angels.” (Revelation 12:7)

This rebel would become known as the devil, or Satan (meaning “opponent”). Satan was *the product of his own choice*.

### **The fate of the universe at stake**

So what would God do now? Not only had His government been challenged, but His very character had been called into question. His reputation for truthfulness and for concern about His subjects was at stake.

Here was a conflict involving not a single world, but the entire universe. The fate of all who were loyal to the Creator was at stake.

### **The stain**

Those who were loyal must have had problems. After all, such an accusation as Lucifer had made would inevitably leave a *stain* that could only be erased by a long and careful demonstration of integrity, concern and wisdom.

Would the Creator respond with His superior power? Would He snuff out opposition with one great mushroom cloud?

### **An unknown deadly “virus”**

You might well ask, why didn’t God do just that – snuff out rebellion before it got worse? It might have saved us all a lot of future pain.

Here's why. When the rebellion began, it seemed incredible that "sin" could be as dangerous as the Supreme One said it was.

Shall we ponder this for a moment? Suppose the Creator had destroyed Lucifer there and then. Those who were still loyal might well have concluded: "Look what God has done! Perhaps Lucifer was right! God *must* be a tyrant." And they would have remained loyal out of fear.

No. According to the *Intelligence Report*, the Creator decided to fight the rebellion with LOVE. Lucifer's character must be UNMASKED. This mysterious virus of "sin" must be allowed to show its results to all. The Creator would place Himself on trial before His subjects and let them see just who it is that cares.

He wanted His creation to regard Him with love, not fear. No wonder, then, that He had to give the rebellion virus (or the spirit of evil, if you wish) a chance to develop – to show to the onlooking universe the true character of this spirit of evil and its effect. Its character had to be understood, for the future security of all.

## **Banished**

Lucifer, in open revolt, had disowned the supremacy of the Creator, and set up a rebel independence.

Now Lucifer, with his sympathisers, was banished from heaven. (Recorded in many ancient racial traditions. Also Revelation 12:7-9; Luke 10:18; 2 Peter 2:4; Jude 6)

And with what sorrow! The unfallen worlds, as they watched, must have joined in the tears.

This event, as we discovered, is recorded in the oral and written history of many ancient nations – from Babylonia to Mexico.

## **A rival government set up**

Now bitter and simmering for revenge, these rebels looked for a new homeland – and headed for our world. Planet Earth, newly created, was singing with life.

This would be the battlefield. From here Lucifer and his legion would fight back. Here Lucifer would set up his kingdom and prove that his plan was better.

The main stage of the war now shifted to earth, but the target of Lucifer's rage was still the One who threw him out, the Prince of God.

## **Plot to hijack a planet**

As Lucifer (Satan), himself now banished, saw the first man and woman appointed custodians over this planet, he was furious. He determined to wreak vengeance. And he waited.

That fateful day when the rebel appeared in a disguise and contrived the first séance was an electrifying experience.

A séance involves communication between a physical human being and an entity from the spirit dimension – in particular, a member of the Lucifer Legion. This will be substantiated shortly.

Sometimes a spirit entity may speak through another person (known as a medium), or even throw his voice via an object, so that it appears to be speaking.

In this case Lucifer chose a snake (serpent) as the medium through which to grab the attention of Eve, the first woman, and speak to her.

Like Lucifer, our first parents had everything they could need.

But Lucifer planted in Eve's mind the same attitude of "*Get*". He told the happy couple that their Maker was not being honest with them – that He was depriving them of something that they should have. Lucifer told them that he, Lucifer, had their best interests at heart, and that if they would do as he suggested they could even become like God Himself. (This is basically the same message the "space brothers" give today.)

"Go it alone," he urged. "Be independent. You don't need God."

So they joined the rebellion.

\* \* \* \* \*

## Why not make evil to be impossible?

“That’s all very well,” said Roland. “But why didn’t God make them so they couldn’t do wrong?”

Al smiled. “Sure, He could have. But then wouldn’t we just be machines, not human beings?”

“Sure, your Designer could have made you as a *robot*, so that when He pressed a button, you would get down on your knees and say, ‘I love you... I love you...’ - no matter what you really felt about the matter. No freedom in that!

“Doesn’t the fact that we have freedom to choose tell us something about the One who created us?”

## Why did He make us, anyway?

Roland leaned forward. “Well... yes. But why on earth did He make us, anyway?”

“Tell me, Roland. Wouldn’t it make sense for a God of boundless love to create intelligent beings as objects of that love?”

“That’s all very well,” responded Roland. “But there’s so much suffering. Is He all powerful, yet uncaring? Or, if He’s benevolent, is He powerless to help?”

Al pulled his seat closer. “Okay, imagine you had a fourteen year old daughter, Roland. “Would you let her ski?”

“Sure. I’d tell her to be careful. I’d give her some good advice, then tell her to go off and make her own mistakes.”

“Would you run behind her and molly coddle her? What if she fell and skinned her face?”

“She would learn to be more careful.”

Al nodded. “So although you have power to intervene – and even to prevent her pain – you would show your respect for her by allowing her to make her own mistakes and learn from them.”

“Yeah, that makes sense.”

“And if God loves what He has created, then He’ll want us to experience the greatest happiness possible, right?”

“So He gave each of His creatures free will.” Roland sat back.

“Exactly,” said Al. “Freedom to acknowledge His existence or deny it. Freedom to love Him or to spit in His face. Freedom to run the world and even to make a mess. Unless you can CHOOSE, you can never know optimum happiness.”

Roland thought for a moment. Yes, that did make perfect sense. Who would want to be a robot? He opened his mouth again. “Hi Al, would you like to be married to a robot chatty doll?... so that whenever you pulled a string you would hear the mechanical words, ‘I love you?’”

Al laughed. “Man, what kind of love would that be? Love is voluntary. That’s what makes it so beautiful.”

The big engineer straightened up again. “Yeah, I guess He could have made us as robots, but that would have robbed us of our precious freedom of choice... and a free heart.”

“I really think,” said Al, “that this must be one of the most winsome, beautiful and basic things about our Creator. His love of liberty. It has been inbuilt into us. The greatest power you have is the power to choose.

## **Cause of evil and suffering – man, not God**

“But, come to think of it, He hasn’t just left us without some guidance and protection. Just as there are physical laws by which this universe is run, so there are spiritual laws for our well-being.”

“Spiritual laws? What the heck are you talking about?”

“We can know from experience that physical laws operate (so that if you jump off a roof, gravity will crash you to the ground, or if you put your hand on a fire it will get burned).”

“I see that,” said Roland. “But...”

Al continued. “Spiritual laws are likewise experienced (so that if you sow joy to others you will reap joy from them, or if you treat others violently, you will bring ultimate suffering upon yourself.



“If I disregard these laws, then I will suffer the consequences. Live in harmony with them and we will experience well-being.”

Roland smiled. “You sound like a preacher.”

“Come on, it’s simply stating a universal, scientific fact. Westerners tend to focus on the physical laws, and to their detriment ignore the spiritual. These laws, when we understand them, make sense. It’s when we ignore them that we suffer. And our actions can make others suffer.”

Al reached over to a flower vase. “See this dahlia? It still looks alive. But it is cut off from the water and soil that give it life. I lay it here on the table – and tomorrow it will be dead. There are lots of folk who are spiritually dead. That’s why they’ve not got peace and happiness.

“So it seems that the basic reason for suffering in the world is man’s exercise of free choice to cut himself off from his Maker. That’s our responsibility, not God’s.

## **Satan, Prince of Earth**

Al reached for the cookie jar and passed it to Roland. “We gave in to Lucifer – and he took over. He’s now the prince of this world, even its god. (John 12:31; 2 Corinthians 4:4)

“And this earth has become the theater of a drawn out, incessant contest with those hijackers. These are your aliens, Roland.”

“Tell me more...”

# 19

## *The sinister Legion of Lucifer -*

# PLANET HIJACKED

A man went to a barber shop to have his hair and his beard cut as usual. He and the barber talked about many things. Suddenly, they touched the subject of God. The barber said: "Look man, I don't believe that God exists as you say."

"Why do you say that?" asked the client.

"Well, it's so easy. You just have to go out in the street. Tell me, if God existed, would there be so many sick people? Would there be abandoned children? If God existed, there would be no suffering nor pain. I can't think of loving a God who permits all of these things."

The client stopped speaking. He didn't want to cause an argument. The barber finished his job and the client went out of the shop.

Just outside, he saw a man in the street with long hair and beard. Actually, he looked quite untidy, as though he had not had a cut for ages. The client re-entered the barber shop and said to the barber: "You know what? Barbers do not exist."

"How can you say they don't exist?" asked the barber. "I am here and am a barber."

"No!" exclaimed the client. "Barbers don't exist - because if they did there would be no people with long hair and beard like that man who walks in the street."

"Ah, barbers do exist," intoned the barber. "But what happens is that people do not come to me."

"Exactly!" affirmed the client. "That's the point. God does exist. What happens is people don't go to Him. They do not look for Him. That's why there's so much pain and suffering in the world."

After you see what follows, you may have a much better idea as to why this world is in such a mess. And I think it's worth a hearing.

## **The original Golden Age**

There was a Golden Age, said the Greeks, an age when human beings lived with no evil desires, when they lived without guilt or crime.

The same idea was echoed in India. The *Mahabharata*, an epic poem containing the history of the world, says that in the First Age there was no disease, hatred or evil.

The Chinese likewise recall that First Age as one of perfect harmony.

Even the native Americans speak of an Age of a First People who were happy and at peace with each other. All food was plentiful, with no need to plant or work to get food.

It was a beautiful world. An age in which there was *no suffering* at all.

You know as well as I do, that this racial memory is very different from what the evolution theory tries to tell us... that the sordid and wasteful mechanism of evolution (embodying tooth and claw, painful upward struggle) was used to produce mankind.

And assuming as some do that God Himself may have used evolution to produce mankind, then God was a "cruel Creator". You cannot call Him a God of love.

Believe that evolution myth? Not on your life! Not a shred of evidence supports it.

The racial memory of mankind – as well as the *Intelligence Report* – both agree on this: that all was perfect in the beginning.

Among the earliest records unearthed are some written by the ancient Sumerians of Mesopotamia, more than 4,000 years ago. Preserved in their records are their laws, history and culture, as well as stories concerning events that had occurred before their time.

Their writings speak vividly of a time when animals were neither wild nor harmful, when there was no rivalry or enmity among men, when there was plenty, security, harmony, and right living on earth, everywhere. (S.N. Kramer, *Sumerian Mythology*. Philadelphia, Frontispiece. For corrections made after additional fragments of the same story were found, see Kramer, *Journal of the American Oriental Society*, vol. 88, 1968, p. 109)

Those Sumerian paradise myths are supported by the records of other cultures. They are the *fact*. The Enki “extraterrestrial” interbreeding story is the *fiction*. Today we have our popular works of fiction... and our books of fact. It was the same in Sumerian times.

### The “garment of light”

A *basic quality* underlying all the Paradise myths of the ancient races was the *divine presence*. God was walking on the earth, according to the Bible. God was speaking to people through their hearts, according to the native Americans.

At first there was a perfect state of union between the people and their Creator.

The myths again and again say that the First People glowed with visible light. But that this visible “aura” or robe of light vanished when mankind fell.

### A “fall” from paradise known

That’s right... *fell!* Would it surprise you to learn that nearly all writings of ancient peoples worldwide tell the same story, that of *a fall* from this original paradise state of peace, love and happiness?

Sacred records affirmed that there had been a departure from harmony with the Creator. Such accounts are in the oral and written history of many ancient nations.

The “Fall” as it was termed, became fixed in our racial memory. In many traditions this “Fall” is described as the origin of our sense of separateness, our sense of being alienated and at odds with each other.

## **Alienated and dying**

Our first parents had been involved in that tragic event.

There was no escaping their guilt. They were aware that their Maker had surrounded them with evidences of His love, yet they had listened to the enemy's slander – and doubted the Creator's integrity. They had failed Him.

They had known nothing about evil. And their Maker had desired they should never know evil. But they had chosen – and evil they would know.

Up to that time, our first parents had lived in innocence. They were able to commune direct with their Maker. But wrong-doing marred this harmony. It biased them against the divine law and defiled them. From now on they and the entire human race would no longer enjoy that luxury.

At first, they were clothed with a glory of visible light perhaps similar to that with which He communicated Himself to them.

The Creator's glory would then have no ill effect on the two. It was only when they first sinned by rebelling against God, that this cover of glory suddenly disappeared, revealing to their startled eyes their now naked bodies.

At first, they hid, possibly realising that they would no longer survive in His presence.

But there was also another dreadful result of this loss of their glorious covering. Their bodies would no longer be protected from the effects of external forces and the entrance of disease. They had lost their immunity which was provided by their 'glory' covering. In other words, they had now commenced to die.

Now that they were separated from the Life-Giver, the natural consequence would be death. From that day, the process of dying commenced within their bodies, cell by cell. This process would be passed on to all their children.

Lucifer had won the first round. Man was now in his grasp, alienated from his Creator.

What would the Creator do now?

Two things.

Firstly, limit the human life span. They were now subject to *the curse of death*.

How could a good God institute such a penalty, you ask? Answer: to limit pain. Yes, He knew what He was doing. Even today, so much evil is messing up the world from men and women with brief life spans –up to the day they die. If we were to live forever, this world might well have been destroyed *by us* long ago.

It was an act of mercy for the Creator to bar them from endless life. If He had not done so, and they had continued to live endlessly, they would gradually have become more and more ill as time passed. Then no matter how agonising their illness became, they would have still lived on with no possibility of any release from their suffering. Death, then, became an act of mercy on the part of our Designer. It was the only way He could limit their suffering.

Can you see it? Death was necessary – to place a limitation on the pain that was about to come... pain resulting from mankind's choice to sever himself from God.

Secondly, there was another response from the Creator: *a promise of hope and rescue*. We shall learn about this in the next chapter.

## **Racial memory of it**

In any case, as it turned out, this painful experience suffered by our first parents became etched in our racial memory.

From Sumeria to the Americas, art and literature recorded the Fall. In China, Egypt and Babylonia, indeed among all peoples, this tragedy of Satan's invasion is the oldest racial memory – from the beginning of history.

The loss of immortality caused by man's disobedience to divine law seems to have been keenly felt by more than one ancient writer. (For example, the *Adapa Myth* and the *Gilgamesh Epic*. A translation of the *Adapa Myth* made by E.A. Speiser is found in J.B. Pritchard, ed., *Ancient Near East Texts Relating to the Old Testament*, 3<sup>rd</sup> ed. Princeton, N.J., 1969, pp. 101-103. A translation of the *Gilgamesh Epic* made by Speiser is found in *Ancient Near East Texts Relating to the Old Testament*, pp. 72-79. See especially, pp. 88,90,96.)

Many prayers and hymns of the ancients impressively reveal how these people clearly understood the principles of the biblical Ten Commandments and knew quite well what was right and wrong. (Jonathan Gray, *Ark of the Covenant*, page 56. <<http://www.beforeus.com/abook.html>>)

They were fully conscious of their rebellious condition and were longing for forgiveness. One prayer of an ancient penitent may serve as an example:

O my god, who art angry, accept my prayer;  
 O my goddess, who art angry, receive my supplication,  
 Receive my supplication and let thy spirit be at rest.  
 O my goddess, look with pity on me and accept my  
 supplication.  
 Let my sins be forgiven, let my transgressions be blotted  
 out.  
 Let the ban be torn away, let the bonds be loosened.  
 Let the seven winds carry away my sighs.  
 I will send away my wickedness,  
 Let the bird bear it to the heavens.  
 Let the flowing waters of the river wash me clean. (L.W.  
 King, *Babylonian Religion and Mythology*. London: 1899, p. 212)

Although the people who wrote this had by that time slipped into polytheism, they realised their true spiritual condition.

In ancient Babylon, man was felt to live under a curse, a spell, from which only a divine act of cleansing could free him.

Egyptian writings reveal a similar understanding: that the people were aware of a condition of wrong doing, that they had a longing for eternal life and even felt a need for some kind of rescue.

Disobedience had marred the original harmony. And, since the Fall, human nature had become so weakened through habitual wrong-doing that it was impossible in one's own strength to resist the power of the Lucifer Legion.

The first man and woman had been appointed custodians over this planet. But now the Legion of Lucifer had taken over the world.

## “Other forces here”

As an earlier Prime Minister of Britain, the Marquis of Salisbury, acknowledged, “We are in the presence of forces far larger than we can wield.”

Sir Edward Grey, a former British Foreign Secretary concurred. Speaking in the House of Commons on November 27, 1911, he said:

It is really as if in the atmosphere of the world there were some mischievous influence at work, which troubles and excites every part of it.

## Lucifer involved

The ancient world understood that our first parents, known as Adam and Eve, had been led into rebellion by Lucifer (Satan), the commander of the rebel angels exiled from heaven.

This fallen being had tricked our first parents into coming under his power by the clever use of a serpent, through whom he spoke, as a ventriloquist does, or as in a séance.



*The Temptation Seal (British Museum)*

It had happened in that original paradise world. According to the book of Genesis, Eve had wandered from her husband’s side, and despite a warning from the Creator, she approached a



tree where the tempter was waiting. Using a *serpent* to attract her attention, he then enticed her to disobey the divine warning. And she fell for it.

According to some archaeologists, the oldest piece of art known to the human family is one termed the Temptation Seal. This pictures a tree, on the opposite sides of which are seated two persons. Behind one of them is the upright form of a *serpent*, who is whispering to one of them.

A Sumerian poem laments that “the maiden ate that which was forbidden, the maiden, the mother of sin, committed evil; the mother of sin had a painful experience.” (Alfred Jeremias, *Das Alte Testament im Lichte des Alten Orients*, 4<sup>th</sup> ed. Leipzig: 1930, p.99)

We encounter this same image of the eating of a forbidden fruit among some African tribes, the Nepalese, the Burmese and others.

Mankind’s entrapment by the “*evil serpent*” was remembered from Egypt to China to the Americas. (W.H. Prescott, *Conquest of Mexico*, vol. 1. London: J.M. Dent and Sons Ltd., 1948, p. 380)

The Hindu Krishna sat under a banyon tree upon a coiled *serpent* and bestowed spiritual knowledge upon the human race.

The Persians recalled a region of bliss called Heden, before the first humans were tempted by the evil spirit in the form of a *serpent* to take the fruit of the forbidden tree. (Heden is recognisable as the biblical Eden.)

The Mexican version of the event involves a great male *serpent*.

Likewise the Greeks recalled the Garden of the Hesperides where grew a tree which bore the golden apples of immortality, the garden being protected by a *dragon*.

And the Chinese, in their sacred books, remembered a garden in which grew trees which bore the fruit of immortality, and this garden was guarded by a *winged serpent called a dragon*.

In the historical chants of the Lenni-Lenapi, the tribe that originally dwelt along North America’s Delaware River, is the story of the Creation, the Golden Age and the Fall, in these words:

All were willingly pleased, all were easy thinking, and all were well-happified. But after a while [came] the *snake-worship* (Initako) of the god of the snakes, Wakon. And there came wickedness, crime, and unhappiness. And bad weather was coming, distemper was coming, with death was coming. All this happened very long ago, at the first land, Netamaki. (C.S. Rafinesque, *The American Nations*, quoted from Egerton Sykes, *Atlantis: The Antedeluvian World*. A modern, revised edition of Ignatius Donnelly's book. New York: Gramercy Publishing Company, Harper & Rowe, ch. 9, p. 91)

We could go on. But you get the picture. Over and over, we see this racial memory of the past.

### **The snake became his symbol**

Stories from the ancient past are cross corroborative.

Racial memory of someone called Satan, or the “Devil” is very much the same around the globe. It has been recognized in just about every culture in history.

And the *serpent, snake* or *dragon* came to be regarded as his symbol.

### **Planet Earth placed into quarantine**

The rebellion was to be confined to this world. The Supreme One now put a restraint on the spread of the “sin” virus or the spirit of evil, to the rest of the universe. This meant that rebellion could not be allowed to infect the rest of God’s creation outside this earth and reach his created beings on other worlds. This is a crucial point in understanding about UFOs and ETs.

To recognize this helps us to refute the assertions of those claiming to be ETs – and it identifies without question – as we shall further see – the source of these appearances.

It is of the utmost importance to recognize that when our first parents rebelled, the Creator IMMEDIATELY QUARANTINED SIN! IT WAS ISOLATED TO PLANET EARTH!

This cut off all contact between planet Earth and other galaxies – until the earth would be restored.

We have previously noted the word “sin”. Since this is a term often misunderstood, perhaps we should define it? “Crime”, as you know, is a violation of a nation’s laws. In the same sense, “sin” is a violation of divine laws... wanting to get along without your Maker.

The *Intelligence Report* infers that outside of Planet Earth, the “sin” thing does not exist. *No other planet* in the universe has been *contaminated* by the rebellion of Lucifer.

### **Alien visitors *not* from other planets**

The living beings on other planets are beautiful, pure, perfect, radiant beings. They are clothed in garments of light. And they are tall and majestic, compared with us. There is peace throughout the universe.

Only on earth is there found war, envy and conflict.

Compare this with what the so-called ETs look like, say and do, and it becomes clear that ETs ARE NOT, cannot be from other planets as claimed.

### **Earth became the stage**

So Earth became the lesson book to the universe concerning this “sin” thing and where it would lead. To let it play out its course, was the only way the lesson could be learned. Earth became the stage, the theater of the universe, where the drama was to be acted out, scene by scene.

As Shakespeare perceived, “All the world’s a stage and men are only players.”

When the rebellion began, it had seemed incredible that the “sin” virus could be as dangerous as the Supreme One said it was.

But as the universe proceeded to watch the centuries of hatred, heartache and death on planet Earth, they would begin to understand. They would watch Lucifer’s kingdom in operation.

However, it would take time for the Legion of Lucifer to be discredited.

And they would see the Creator’s eventual rescue bid.

Nevertheless, it would take a whole long series of events to be enacted out before God's love for His creatures could be vindicated.

Interesting, don't you think, how much we humans tend to blame God for things?

Listen, Jack, if your dog bit you, would you kick your wife? Of course not. Then, will you please stop blaming God for the world's problems?

And this brings us to the long promised BIG PICTURE... which gets interesting.

## 20

### *The Big Picture –*

# MOVES AND COUNTER MOVES

The teacher and the engineer sat on the front lawn.

“Now for the overview of this drama,” said Al.

Just then, a batch of Californian quails wandered close. They appeared so unafraid, it was a delight to watch them. There were sixteen of them... including eight chicks. Now they started pecking into the freshly mown ground cover.

“Angie would love this,” sighed Roland. “But she’s obsessed with only one thing now... her alien mentor, as she calls him. She can’t think of anything else. That entity has completely taken her over.”

He looked at Al, sadly. “I don’t know what to do.”

Al’s heart was torn for him. “Oh, God,” he thought. “This man needs help.”

“If you’ve got the answer,” said Roland, “I want to know what I’m up against. And if there’s a solution. Paint me in.”

“Well,” said Al, “Here’s the **BIG PICTURE**. After our planet was hijacked, subsequent history is a story of moves and counter-moves. Behind the interplay of nations, the two unseen players are guiding history to its **PLANNED CLIMAX**.

“Okay, give it to me,” sighed Roland.

Al sat straighter. “Very well. During the first 2,000 years, the Legion of Lucifer were feverishly busy. Lucifer himself was jealous of the Creator and coveted His creative ability. He still wanted to overthrow God’s creation. And one way to do it, he decided, was to develop a new pseudo science that would alter nature.

“Although he could not create something from nothing, he could amalgamate, change the composition, alter and

contaminate the gene pool. By working with nature, he could cross, juggle and mix the genes of different species to produce monstrosities. We see this in the subsequent tooth and fang change in the animal kingdom, as well as in noxious plants, thorns and weeds. Thus he bent his energies to contaminate and deface what his “enemy” had created.

“The best Satan and his cronies can do is to juggle the chemistry, physical and molecular properties.

“Pre-Flood generations of men were far more intelligent than are we today. Their brain capacity, as well as their technology, far exceeded our own. This knowledge would later be carried through to the post-Flood era by the survivors of the Flood catastrophe.

### **Did the Creator enjoy destroying His creation?**

Roland turned his big frame sideways.

“You speak of God destroying the world with a Great Flood? I have a problem with a God who would take pleasure in mass destruction of his creation. It is like a father killing his son because he didn't obey him. No rational parent would do that... so what gives here?”

Al slapped at a mosquito. “You have a sense of justice, Roland. “And that is something precious that has been planted inside each of us. So where do you think that quality came from, in the first place?”

“Are we human beings more fair and just than the One who designed us?”

The logic struck home. “I get it,” said Roland. “Our study of DNA does suggest an all-knowing, wise Creator who knows how not to make a mistake. So...”

“Look,” Al cut in, “like your ant beneath the baseball game. To understand what’s going on above him would require that ant to confront the BIG PICTURE... if he was capable of understanding.

“So let’s focus further on the BIG PICTURE – and I think you’ll understand something of our Creator's true character.

“Was He an angry God whose patience had worn thin, because His creatures failed to obey His every dictate?”

“I think not. The BIG PICTURE will reveal instead a disappointed God, aghast at the wickedness and violence conjured by the human race, which He had wanted so much to be perfect and pure!”

Roland nodded.

“Enoch, a pre-Flood prophet, describes in detail how the fallen angels imparted great stores of knowledge to pre-Flood mankind.

“The Legion of Lucifer corrupted the human race. They almost succeeded in provoking mankind to the point of self destruction. The future of humanity would have been in doubt had not the Creator interrupted world history.

“So was orchestrated what ancient civilizations termed the Great Flood.

“This Deluge would prove to be a catastrophic setback for the Legion of Lucifer. In one clean sweep Lucifer would lose virtually all his human subjects.

“Through a chosen handful of right-living survivors, mankind was given a breather. It meant that, as far as Planet Earth was concerned, the Legion of Lucifer would almost have to start over again.”

## **Our Maker’s gift to us**

“Remember,” said Al, “the Creator had fashioned a paradise world, and appointed man to look after it.

“And man was given laws – both physical and spiritual – to ensure his unending happiness. Violate them and misery would follow.

“Of course, as we also noted, they were given free choice.

“For a while, as we saw, all was perfect harmony, peace and joy. But then they chose to experiment with rebellion – to turn their back on their Creator, break the laws and do their own thing. With what result? They cut themselves off from the Life-giver, and death was the consequence of their choice. And the death process came to be passed onto all their children.”

“I must admit,” said Roland, “that makes sense.”

“More sense than the evolution myth,” smiled Al.

“And to think that I wore blinkers for so long!” Roland exclaimed.

“Ask yourself,” said Al, “why is it that we grieve at funerals? You would think, if evolution were true, that we would have evolved some emotional immunity to death.”

Roland rubbed his neck. “We can never reconcile ourselves to death. It is an intruder... a curse.”

“Anyway,” continued Al, “this painful experience is remembered in the racial memory of all nations. Archaeology has found it recorded in the earliest writings.”

### **After we blew it – the salvage plan**

“So what was the Designer to do? It would have been quite simple for Him to immediately snuff man out, right?” Al snapped off a blade of grass, crushing it between his fingers. “So easy for Him. But He loved what He had created. And He was filled with compassion.

“And, according to the *Intelligence Report*, He already had a plan. And He communicated it to our first parents.”

Roland raised his eyebrows. “What are you saying?”

“Here’s what. They were now alienated from their Maker. They were biased against Him by their new, rebellious attitude.

“They were aware that He had surrounded them with evidences of His love, yet they had failed Him. Rebellion had marred the original harmony.

“The whole universe is based on physical and spiritual laws. The spiritual law had been violated. And every broken law brings a penalty. But would it solve the problem for God to simply say, ‘I’ll forget about that law that you’ve broken, so there’ll be no penalty’? No. the divine law, which had been violated, could not be altered to save the rebels. That royal law – the standard on which harmony throughout the universe rests – must stand unshaken. To abolish the law would have immortalised rebellion.



“I see,” said Roland. “And that would open the door to continuing rebellion.”

“Not to mention the misery,” added Al. “What is more, human nature was so weakened by wrong-doing, they had no strength to resist the power of the Lucifer Legion.”

Roland shook his head. “A hopeless situation, if you ask me. So what was this rescue plan you’re talking about?”

“Well, for the law to stand, would mean that man, separated from his Life Giver, would face death forever. The violation of the law must meet its penalty, death. The majesty of law, the very stability of the government, required that the sentence be executed.

A lump stuck in Al’s throat. He paused for a moment. “This really gets to me,” said Al. The Creator re-emphasised His love to our first parents and promised them ultimate rescue from their hopeless situation. He told them that One mightier than they would come to earth, endure the same struggles that each person faces. He would resist the Legion of Lucifer, without falling under their power. Then he would secure pardon for each person by taking upon himself the penalty of that violated law.

“Thus the law would stand unshaken, even though it cost the life of the this Deliverer. The law and the love of the Creator would thus both be established.

Roland looked at Al, and thought he saw a tear. The science teacher of Thornton High brushed his face quickly and then spoke strongly.

“Listen, Roland, this is real. In fact, all over the world, ancient civilizations recorded this promise that had been given concerning the Coming One.

“Of course, any person on death row (and that’s all of us) could still exercise his freedom of choice – whether to personally accept that rescue provision or not.

“The plan was that a demonstration (in real time history) of the Creator’s love for His subjects would draw from many a response of love, leading to transformation of their lives - and their individual rescue... a total reconciliation with their Maker and the eventual restoration of all that was lost.

“Archaeology has discovered, from the preserved records, that ancient races handed down this promise. They were expecting this promised Deliverer. (For evidence of this see Jonathan Gray’s books, *The Sting of the Scorpion* and *Ark of the Covenant*.)

“Not surprisingly, the Legion of Lucifer were furious to learn of this intervention plan. And in a succession of moves and countermoves, they would do all within their power to either thwart or discredit the plan.

“This is where the so-called alien ‘space brothers’ show their hand, as we shall now see.”

Roland sat bolt upright. “This I must hear.”

# 21

*ETs and the occult -*

## ALIENS AND SÉANCE SPIRITS

“Mom, look - the spirit left his glove behind!”

Kate grabbed Mildred by the hand and dragged her into the bedroom.

“All right, Mom, explain this!”

Mrs Fox stood by the desk and cautiously lifted the glove. “Well,” she admitted, examining it carefully, “this is not an impress of your hand or of your sister’s. So whose is it?”

The Fox family had just moved into a house in the town of Hydesville, New York, not far from Rochester.

They began to hear strange noises that they could not identify, but which caused them considerable annoyance.

Finally, the youngest daughter, Kate, challenged the mysterious rappings. “Here, old Splitfoot,” she called, alluding to the devil, as she snapped her fingers. “Do this!”

She expected no reply, so was startled when the same number of snapping sounds came back.

She tried it again and again and was soon receiving answers to her questions. Kate, and later her sister, Margaret, claimed to be in communication with the spirits of the dead.

At first other folk were skeptical. But, after investigations, they had to concede there was something superhuman about what was happening.

Soon there followed the most unusual phenomena. Musical instruments were played without any visual contact. Tables moved and sometimes rose from the floor and floated through the air. Spirit messages were written on slates. At times spirit forms seemed to appear. A spirit would dip its hand into hot paraffin, disappear, and leave behind it a paraffin glove.

So was re-launched the ancient phenomenon known as spiritualism.



*A spirit would dip its hand into hot paraffin, disappear, and leave behind it a paraffin glove.*

We are dealing here with something real and tangible, something that cannot be explained away.

Every person who honestly investigates spiritism and phases of the occult with a degree of thoroughness comes to the place where he has to admit that there is a supernatural power involved.

A host of spirit entities – both good and malicious – are active, affecting the lives of millions on this planet.

In chapter 6 we noted the existence of another dimension which contains entities that are definitely real. They have consciousness and personality, just as you and I do.

And yes, it is from this other dimension that modern satanists summon their demonic entities in black magic rituals.

## **A personal feud: You and I are caught in it**

You'd better believe it. Though usually invisible to us, these other forces are indeed here on earth. And they're very active. The messengers of light and the messengers of Lucifer are in serious conflict.

The *Intelligence Report* agrees that we're not up against mere human enemies, but opponents who are not human – spirit enemies, diabolical and powerful:

*We are not struggling against people made with flesh and blood, but against persons without bodies – the evil rulers of the unseen world, those mighty satanic beings of darkness who rule this world; against huge numbers of wicked spirits in the spirit realm. (Ephesians 6:12)*

These malicious spirits are in rebellion against the Supreme One. They have brought their rebellion to this planet.

## **Unseen powers behind the scenes**

In mercy, their forms are beyond the light spectrum, so that we are not able to see them. Nevertheless, they are, by condensation, capable of visibility. And in spiritualistic séances, this occurs.

My paternal grandfather, Dr Fred Gray, was a prominent spiritualist (or, as I prefer to term it, spiritist). In Australia, he conducted séances in the Sydney Town Hall.

Manifestations of this fourth dimension have occurred in my own home in front of witnesses.

Many folk think that spirit phenomena are accomplished by trickery, sleight of hand, or black magic.

“Yes,” concedes former spiritist Victor Ernest, “it is true that many mysterious happenings associated with prominent psychics and small-town fortune-tellers are hoaxes – perhaps 85 percent of them. But I believe the rest are actual deeds of evil spirits counterfeiting the power of the Holy Spirit.

“At one trumpet séance, to prove there was no hocus pocus involved, the control spirit sent the trumpet sailing between the

rungs of the chair on which I was sitting. Since I was in my own home, I knew no props had been arranged and that no strings were attached.” (Victor H. Ernest, *I Talked With Spirits*. Wheaton, Illinois, Tyndale House Publishers, 1972, p.35)



Granted, spiritists have used sleight-of-hand methods to deceive. Also, mass hypnotism can make people see things that do not exist. Yet, there are some things which cannot be explained by trickery, but prove, rather, an intelligence behind them.

The spirits involved can speak. They can send messages through spirit mediums. They can slam doors, move furniture,

and toss things through the air, hurl objects across a room, press hands around your neck to choke you and leave finger mark bruises as evidence.

Moreover, they can materialise visibly as persons – or in any shape. These are not imagination. They are definitely REAL!

The noted spiritist, Thomson Jay Hudson, in his book *The Law of Psychic Phenomena*, correctly states: “The man who denies the phenomena of spiritism today is not entitled to be called a skeptic, he is simply ignorant.”

## **ET encounters - and séances**

Now this may shake you. Are you sitting down?

There is a ***confirmed connection*** between ***UFO*** occupants conversing with men, and the various experiences associated with modern ***Satanism*** and the ***occult***.

On Monday, September 7, 1992, a television program, *Inside Edition*, aired a story about six people – five men and a woman – who were in the United States Air Force, stationed in Germany. They were there to gather highly secret information for the Air Force.

Then one day they suddenly disappeared. An all-points bulletin was issued to find them, capture them and return them to the Air Force authorities. Should they resist arrest, they were to be “exterminated”.

They were finally found in Florida, in a small town near Fort Walton Beach, when one of them was stopped for a minor traffic violation.

One of the men, a USAF officer, finally consented to an interview. He talked with the *Inside Edition* investigative reporter, but would tell only a bare minimum. However, the little he did say was most revealing. It supports my contention that ***saucers and aliens are linked with spiritism***.

The six of them had been playing with a Ouija board (a ***spiritualist*** method of “contact” disguised as a game). The message was spelled out to them that they were to go to a certain town in Florida to meet the “christ”, who would be

coming in a *flying saucer*. (Devon Grey, *Comings*. Middleton, Idaho: CHJ Publishing, 1997, pp. 95-96)

In case you didn't know, Avitar, witchcraft's "christ" is also the "christ" of the New Age movement.

*Witchcraft* believes that this Avitar will come in a *saucer* and precede the coming of the [false] Christ.

The connection with witchcraft is unmistakable. In Ohio *witches* routinely "conjure up" at their covens (meeting places) *spacecraft* and their aliens. Every time they do this, there is a rash of sightings. The Ohio town where this occurs is known for frequent sightings of saucers. Many photos of saucers have been taken by observers here.

The Ouija board connection is proof positive of the nature of the saucers. They emanate from the same source.

## **The spiritism link**

Their strategy is simple. Just convince humans of their "saving" mission and it is half way to control.

Naturally, this will involve communication.

Stop right here! What you now have is the *encounter of humans with non-human spirit beings*.

At this point there is a definite connection with spiritism, demonology, séances, and other forms of exchange with the spirit dimension. As John Keel observes:

The UFO manifestations seem to be, by and large, merely minor variations of the age-old demonological phenomenon. (John Keel. *Operation Trojan Horse*. Lilburn, GA.: Illuminet Press, 1996, p. 266)

## **Same physical abilities: both ETs and séance spirits**

Notice these points of convergence.

### ***1. Aliens appear temporarily as physical beings***

Although it sounds unbelievable, here is a reality we shall have to face. Aliens can be present with us in an invisible state. They can make themselves only partially visible. Or they can appear temporarily as totally physical.



This is true both with UFO occupants and the appearances at spiritistic séances. As Ankerberg and Weldon concur:

...it seems evident that these phenomena are produced in the same manner that other occult manipulations are produced. They involve dramatic manipulations of matter and energy. Although they originate from the spiritual world, they can produce very powerful, temporarily physical manifestations at the material level. (John Ankerberg and John Weldon, *The Facts on UFOs and Other Supernatural Phenomena*. Eugene, OR.: Harvest House Publishers, 1992, pp. 36-37)

Many characteristics attributed to aliens conform precisely to the biblical “spiritual yet physical” descriptions of angelic beings.

Angelic beings are mentioned on dozens of occasions in the Bible. The Bible states that angels are spirits. (Hebrews 1:14) However, as visible messengers of God they appear to mankind as men. (Genesis 19:1; Luke 24:4) And so physically real can they appear that we do not recognise them as angels. (Genesis 18:1-16; Hebrews 13:2)

The Legion of Lucifer (so-called “aliens”) are *fallen* angelic beings (see chapter 18).

## ***2. Aliens appear in any number of guises and shapes***

Aliens can control what we think we see. You should be aware that these entities can impersonate or take any physical appearance they choose. They have enormous mind abilities.

They have the ability to use their minds to project physical images for people to see. Everything in energy vibrates at different speeds. If you could use your mind to re-vibrate that energy to a different resonance – that is, to change the sound range of the body - you could appear in any form you wanted.

Physical matter is the result of sound resonating energy into form. This is simply the natural laws of creation at work. Hence the Legion of Lucifer can materialize or dematerialize. They can appear in any form - as humans, or as snarling, hideous creatures. But that is just a vibrational overcoat.

Of this you can be certain. These spirit entities do *not* have the ability to create something from nothing. But they *can* materialize existing matter. They can manufacture UFOs and juggle genes.

Abductees claim that the aliens have sometimes *disguised* themselves as *Jesus*, as well known celebrities, the pope, and even the *dead spouses* of the abductees. Let a spiritualist tell us:

Sometimes this was done in order to get the cooperation of the abductee, even to the extent of having sexual intercourse with him or her. (Dr Karla Turner, "Aliens – Friends or Foes?" UFO Universe, spring 1993, cited in "The Premise of Spiritual warfare," < [www.alienresistance.org/ce4premise.htm](http://www.alienresistance.org/ce4premise.htm) >, March 7, 2003)

This is true both with regard to UFO occupants and with the appearances at spiritistic séances.

The Legion of Lucifer, not limited physically, as are we, can impersonate or take any physical appearance they choose. As we noted, they materialize inanimate objects. Spirit beings have that ability. Also, they have had thousands of years of practice at manipulating man's senses, causing him to see, hear, feel, smell and taste things that are not real.

### ***3. Aliens visibly change shape***

Just as in spiritistic séances, so in ET encounters.

The spirit being can use an apparent human form to hide his true nature. There are numerous encounters in which the spirit or alien has later changed his appearance. Some people who have been abducted by ETs have recalled how their abductors at first looked quite human, but then changed to look like humanoid *reptiles*. Changing from one shape to another is true both with regard to UFO occupants and with the entities at spiritistic encounters. The term for this is "shape-shifting".

### ***4. Aliens can appear as beings of light***

When Lucifer confronted our first parents, he was able to appear as something he wasn't. He did so by either altering his form, or by using the serpent as the medium.

Lucifer literally means “light-bearer” or “shining one”. Speaking of Lucifer, the Bible warns us that “Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light” and those with him are not what they appear to be. (2 Corinthians 11:14,15)

Not only do UFOs commonly manifest as objects of light, but contactees have described some aliens as changing into “beings of light”. This gave the illusion of a divine encounter.

This is true both with regard to UFO occupants and with the appearances at spiritistic séances.

### *5. Aliens can pass through walls*

Aliens have been reported as passing through walls. Beings also materialise through walls at spiritualistic séances.

The Legion of Lucifer are fallen angels. According to the Bible, angels reflect the same body characteristics as these aliens show. When Peter, one of Jesus’ apostles, was imprisoned, a heavenly angel is reported to have entered the prison (through the solid wall) to unchain and free him.

### **Same incredible abilities: both ETs and séance spirits**

These “spiritual yet physical” characteristics of aliens (exactly like angels) enable us to understand why the Legion of Lucifer are able to perform such incredible physics-defying feats in their masquerade as aliens.

Certainly so many reports of encounters with aliens resemble ancient stories and descriptions of what the Bible calls “demons”.

It seems incredible that so many researchers have noted this similarity, yet they have ignored the world’s most famous and best-selling book, which explains their identity and origin.

### **Aliens posing as extraterrestrials**

Knowing these things, it should not surprise us if they are materializing as various life form shapes to push their evil agenda. These are evil agencies posing as something they are not.

They make claims of having arrived from Venus, the Pleiades or some other part of the universe. Sometimes they claim to serve a Higher Being, or to be reincarnated humans. They voice all sorts of fabricated claims.

### **“We’ve been watching you”**

In May 1957, two sisters, Helen and Betty Mitchell, had been shopping. And as they stopped off for a coke, two men in grey suits approached them.

They introduced themselves as from a large space craft which was orbiting the earth. Their names were Elen and Zelas.

“For the past 8 years, our people have been closely watching you,” they told the girls. “In fact, your progress has been watched since you were born.”

The girls sniggered. “Oh come on, is this some sort of joke?” they asked.

“Very well, how about this?” said one of the men. And he began to tell them things about their family life *that only the girls would know about*.

“You have been chosen as contacts – channels,” said one of the men. “Through you we plan to give certain information to people on earth. We’re here because of brotherhood and science. We’re very concerned about man’s nuclear weapons program and its pollution of your planet. We are on a mission of mercy to warn earth’s inhabitants.”

There appeared to be kindness and warmth in the men’s eyes. They talked for a little over two hours. Then they promised to contact the girls again.

Later, outside of St Louis, Helen was taken to a circular craft, then up to the “mother craft”.

They told the girls that the Space Brothers wanted to prepare the people of earth to accept their existence. They wanted to guide the people to proper understanding, so peace would be possible.

## “Good and bad guys”

The girls were warned of crafty and mischievous aliens who abduct people. There was a struggle between the good and the evil aliens, it was said. “We, the good guys,” they said, “are being opposed by an evil force.”

Then they asked the girls a favour. “We want you to prepare a book for us. We want you to *expose* the whole untruth connected with *the story of the fallen angels*.”

Shrewd move, “Space Brothers”! Take the attention off the Legion of Lucifer – and place it on non-existent “visiting aliens”.

Disarm people and make them believe that evil is good. What a charade!

These two aliens then made some predictions, which (remembering these were prophesied in 1957) have mostly turned out to be false. The predictions largely concerned how things on earth would be.

They also spoke of “evolving souls” – bringing in the idea of *evolution*. Another clue to the nature and source of these imposters.

(In book 1 of this series, *The Discovery That’s Toppling Evolution*, we presented compelling evidence that evolution has been the greatest hoax of the past 200 years. If you’re not convinced this is so, then please get the report and read it thoughtfully.)

These “aliens” can appear with Eurasian features, with Caucasian features, as long and spindly, or short, and pumpkin-headed.

Others are somewhat large-headed, with small, thin slit-like mouths, small nose slits, no ears to speak of and large slanted or round eyes. These are reported in about 90 percent of abduction cases.

These are the so-called bad guys, who perform surgery on abducted humans.

The rest of the ETs appear as peace-loving, concerned and interested in our welfare. They claim that their master has sent

them to warn the world to change its ways, or disaster will befall us.

Sometimes they will confess their real identity. Other times they will deny who they are.

But WE CAN KNOW that their master is the father of lies, Lucifer. They are operating UNDER A MASQUERADE.

Just how convincing they can be, we shall now discover...

## 22

### *ETs and the occult -*

## DEAD LOVER RETURNED?

I received a letter the other day from my friend Evan Sadler, of Dunedin, New Zealand. He told me of a lady he knows well, whose boyfriend was killed in an accident. Some time passed. Then late one night he “appeared” to her and said he was in heaven, and that he still loved her. She was so overwhelmed with joy that they had sexual relations together. If that girl had only known the truth! She was *had...* by an impersonator.

Evan learned from another source that sexual relations of this sort were reasonably common in some places. Sometimes the woman has become pregnant, but if a child was eventually born, it was always a runt, and died soon after birth.

There are many astonishing tales of supernatural encounters with “dead loved ones”. Grieving wives or husbands have had their “deceased spouse” talk with them in the night and in some cases they have materialised and cuddled.

### **Impersonating the dead**

In séances, these evil agents play the ultimate cruel trick, posing as departed loved ones to the bereaved who grope for comfort. This gives them a direct line to the soul. Then it is but a short step to CONTROL.

Spiritism is very attractive because it promises knowledge of the future and communication with dead loved ones.

Today countless messages from the spirit realm are accepted simply because they contain information *that supposedly nobody else but a loved one would know*. But wait! Are you sure that nobody else knows those family secrets? If evil spirits are all about us – out of sight but watching us all the time – don’t you suppose they know as much as we do?

When the medium at a séance enters a trance, a control spirit takes over and allegedly introduces the spirit of a dead person. In reality, the unseen visitor is a “familiar spirit” who intimately knows the dead person. Apparently these familiar spirits accompany a person throughout life, becoming so well acquainted that they can convincingly imitate the dead person’s mannerisms and knowledge of personal details when called upon at a séance. In this way even close relatives are tricked into believing they are hearing their dead loved one.

If these impersonators, these spirits, are *willing to lie* (as psychics themselves admit), they have all the cards – shrewdness, convincing information, a willingness to lie, and the advantage of being invisible. By revealing hidden things of the past, the spirit inspires confidence in his power to foretell things to come.

Thousands today – it may be unwittingly – are playing games with the perpetrators of a *giant cosmic hoax*.

### **“Mother, is that you?”**

A typical encounter was that of Edward B. He went to a séance and “saw” his deceased mother appear, clothed with light. She drifted across the room to him, stopped, and gave him a gentle smile. He impetuously leapt up, shouting “Mother!”, only to have her disappear.

The *Intelligence Report* is emphatic that the dead know nothing and cannot return to visit the living.

It indicates that the spirits who appear at séances are rebel angels... the Legion of Lucifer... the ones who “kept not their first estate”, but were banished from Paradise. (Revelation 12:7-9; Jude 6)

### **“Killed in Vietnam”**

An American soldier was reported killed in Vietnam. His grieving mother was told by a friend that if she came along to their meeting she would meet her dead son.

At the meeting, her friend was proved “right” when the “dead son” appeared before his emotional and happy mother.



They hugged and kissed, and told each how much they loved one another. Then the “son” said, “I must return to heaven.”

The mother went home that night the happiest mother in the whole of North America. Some time later, she answered a knock on the door. When she opened the door, there was her son, dressed in his military uniform.

He had just returned unexpectedly from Vietnam.

What a shock!

Her son explained how his group had been cut off by the Viet Cong and captured. The United States Army had reported them dead. But now they had been found, rescued and given an immediate pass for home leave.

“But who was it?” she gasped. “Who was it that I hugged and kissed down at the local charismatic church?”

Who was that non-human being who resembled him in every minute detail... from the smile, the dimple and even the voice? Certainly not her son!

If only the two ladies in this incident – both of them Christians - had read and believed their Bibles, which told them that the dead know nothing (Psalm 6:5; 115:17; 146:4; Job 14:10,12,14,21; John 11:11-14), they would not have fallen for the trick.

Passages such as these could have alerted them to the clever séance deception:

*For the living know that they shall die: but the dead know not anything.... Also their love, and their hatred, and their envy, is now perished; neither have they any more a portion for ever in any thing that is done under the sun.... Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest. (Ecclesiastes 9:5,6,10) He that goeth down to the grave shall come up no more. He shall return no more to his house, neither shall his place know him any more. (Job 7:9,10)*

Some, under the effects of anaesthetic, thought they had died and were looking down on their bodies on the operating

table. Later, they were not quite sure about their experience. The truth is, they had not died.

A teacher's son was killed in Vietnam. Years later, the teacher was awakened to hear his dead son's voice and see his smiling face. He asked his father to give him a hug. The sleepy father desired to embrace him, but he quickly awoke and responded, "It is written, the dead know nothing."

The "son's" smile turned into a terrible sneer, and he vanished.

Believe it! The aim is to trick a bereaved person, open a direct line to the heart and then gain total CONTROL.

So who are those "spirits and ancestors" who manifest themselves among people belonging to traditional religions in Africa, "Folk-Islamic" Muslims in the Middle East, Hindus in southern Asia, and Christians in the West? None other than these same fallen angels in disguise! Satan (former head of the angelic hosts), commands them.

Whether in the sophisticated West or in cultures where spiritual forces play an important role in daily life...whether by spiritism or by alien impersonation, the actors are the same... the Legion of Lucifer. And their aim is the same... CONTROL.

\* \* \* \* \*

Angie had been abducted and raped – and was now totally controlled. And Roland knew it. Earlier on, she had suffered depression. Comments she had made on occasion still rang in his head. "Is it ever getting better?" or "I will never accept it." One weekend he had caught her trying to overdose. He determined to be more alert.

## 23

*ETs and the occult -*

# CLINCHING CLUES

Roland had purchased a hand gun. In recent weeks Angie's mood was firing his suspicions that maybe her abductor was continuing the contact.

While her first encounter had apparently occurred at her mother's house, what Roland had been learning lately had him worried.

According to researchers, many (even most?) alien abductions occurred at night. Was that uninvited visitor now intruding into their bedroom?

Roland slipped the gun under his pillow. He would be ready for him.

\* \* \* \* \*

*Modus operandi.* That is a term understood by police detectives who are tracking down a serial killer. To identify the guilty one they will assemble clues which indicate a pattern of behaviour. It is a procedure that often enables them to identify their man.

In our plan to identify the so-called aliens, you and I are detectives. We are fitting into place some more clues that will enable us to identify these imposters beyond any reasonable doubt.

### **Same messages: both ETs and séance spirits**

Let's compare now what they are saying.

The messages reported by numerous people from séance sessions and from UFOs are often of the same nature.

### ***1. Both say they are here to help us***

“ETs” pretend to be the good guys. They say they are here to help us. That’s precisely what Lucifer did when he hijacked this planet. He cast doubt on the Creator’s integrity, then told Eve that he was there to help her achieve something better.

### ***2. Both tell us we can be as gods***

Lucifer aimed to sabotage God’s purposes for man by telling our first parents that they had the potential to reach godhead. “You shall be as gods,” was his classic yarn. (Genesis 3:5) This is ***basically the same message*** the aliens bring today.

### ***3. Both give identical predictions***

In May, 1967 UFO contactees were told to expect a large power failure. On June 5 in the northeastern U.S. a massive power failure did occur. Guess who planned and triggered it?

Other prophecies were given, with New York City to slide into the ocean on July 2... the pope to visit Turkey and be assassinated, and so on.

An interesting point here is that UFO contactees, trance mediums and automatic writers were also receiving the same messages. Sometimes the **PHRASING WAS IDENTICAL**.

### ***4. Both reveal information known only to the hearer***

The “space brothers” must be genuine, some think, because they sometimes impart life histories and incidents from an individual’s past that only that individual could know are true.

This is identical to disclosures in spirit séances. We saw evidence of such spirit ability in the previous chapter.

### ***5. They together predict the Second Coming of Christ***

A leading spiritualist in England has actually recorded a voice claiming to be from a UFO - the sweetest voice you ever heard. And what did it say?

“My little children, I am about to return according to my promise.”

Just another connecting link between so-called “aliens” and spiritualism.

### **Some medical and emotional symptoms from ET and séance encounters**

Researcher John Keel makes another pertinent observation:

Demonology is not just another crackpot-ology. It is the ancient and scholarly study of the monsters and demons who have seemingly coexisted with man throughout history. Thousands of books have been written on the subject.... The manifestations and occurrences described in this imposing literature are similar, if not entirely identical, to the UFO phenomenon itself. Victims of demonomania (possession) suffer the very same medical and emotional symptoms as the UFO contactees. (John Keel, *Operation Trojan Horse*. Lilburn, GA.: Illuminet Press, 1996, p. 192)

There is a clear pattern. Although many are unaware that New Age practices have the potential to unlock this doorway to the supernatural, it remains a fact.

It is a fact that the majority of people who are abducted by aliens have already dabbled in the occult. And after abduction most develop a deeper interest in the occult.

Why is this?

It seems that such a shattering and profound experience as being abducted and “chosen” completely changes one’s world view and attitude toward the occult. And if one perceives the aliens to be real, it will be natural for one to perceive their New Age messages as true also. These evil entities can definitely influence the way some people think and act.

### **Both ET and séance spirit encounters can result in possession**

Many victims of repeated abductions give themselves completely over to their abductors. They become continually *possessed*.

In New Age terminology, experiences of demonic possession are styled as “walk-ins”. It is thought that a more evolved or “ascended” alien entity has literally taken over a person.

This is the same as satanic spirits *possessing* humans (a fact which we shall later examine in more depth).

We have already noted that sometimes members of the Lucifer Legion will appear as an apparent human, or in some other form. This hides their true nature.

But frequently, they overshadow and control people. Satanic spirits will basically live within a person’s physical body. And sometimes speak out of it, using their own voice. As far as the human is concerned, we would call this being outright possessed.

Many of the possessed persons have no clue that this is so. However, their thoughts are the spirits’ thoughts and they act in ways that advance the Lucifer Legion’s agenda, without realizing it.

Some psychiatrists who do not especially care for spiritual realities at the personal level, nevertheless, often grudgingly, acknowledge the very real possibility of demon possession in some patients.

### **Both ETs and séance spirits sometimes speak through trance mediums**

The following incident (condensed and paraphrased here) was related by retired Lieutenant Col Robert Friend of the United States Air Force and former head of Project Bluebook:

Two naval intelligence officers were sent to investigate the assertions of a woman who claimed to be in contact with extraterrestrials.

After going into a trance, she answered scientific and technical questions put to her easily. Then the woman told them that the extraterrestrials were willing to communicate directly through one of the naval officers.

This then occurred, with one of the officers answering questions put to him by his colleague. One of the questions put to the entities was, Did they favour a religious group? The answer was, No.

On asking to see if they could see a spaceship, they were told to go to the window and look. This they did, and they observed a UFO. A call was made for radar confirmation and they were told that that particular quadrant of the area was blanked out on radar at the time.

UFO entities talking through people? Just as in spiritualistic séances? Evidently.

### **Both ETs and séance spirits often appear as reptiles**

Abductees often report aliens appearing as *reptiles*. It is significant that this is the trademark, or symbol, of Lucifer, “the great *dragon*... that old *serpent*, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world.” (Revelation 12:9)

(We saw that in chapter 21, and shall meet it again in chapter 26.)

It is significant that in the Sumerian tablets relating to the Anunnaki (those posing as extraterrestrials from Planet Nibiru), their leader Enlil was called the *Splendid Serpent* of the shining eyes and the emblem of his brother Enki was two entwined *serpents*!

This identifies the alleged extraterrestrials with the Legion of Lucifer who were banished from heaven. The identification is unmistakable.

The validity of these Sumerian tablets is considered in chapter 26.

Francie Steiger, first wife of well-known writer Brad Steiger, claimed that an angelic being named Kihief had channelled messages through her. UFO researcher William Alnor reports that:

Kihief gave her an alternative history of the world and explained a way of salvation – a different gospel from the one outlined in the Bible and believed by Christians for twenty centuries.... According to Kihief, the *serpent people*, who, he says, were represented by the *serpent* described in the biblical Garden of Eden, *helped create humankind*. Francie Steiger says we should believe him because ‘he speaks only of God and of goodness. (Brad Steiger, *Gods of Aquarius*. New York: Berkeley Press, 1983, p. 115., Emphasis mine)

Should we be surprised that Kihief presents himself as a good guy? You will observe that he redefines the evil *serpent* of the Garden of Eden (Lucifer) as being a good character.

I perceive here a parallel to those people who rewrite history by saying that “Hitler was just a misunderstood genius.”

Similar corrections of history are reported by many channelers and contactees.

### **The “starry hosts” linked with spiritism**

As we all know, the “space brothers” claim to be coming from the “stars” (or planets which orbit them).

On this point, case histories recorded in the Bible should be a warning to all.

In one particular case, the people of Israel followed their leader Manasseh in a manner similar to those who follow cult leaders today. And he led them astray.

The record of this event plainly links the “starry hosts” (or the hosts of heaven) with the practices of witchcraft and spiritism. It makes no distinction between them. They are one and the same. (2 Kings 21:3-6)

In that passage, the warning is given. And it is for our good.

Our “star” brothers of the UFOs are not what they say they are.

### **Amazing parallels**

Can you grasp these parallels between the UFO phenomenon and that of spiritism? Uncanny, isn't it?



A major source of influence in the UFO/New Age movement is the practice of channelling, or communicating with “spirits”, “vibration”, “frequency”, “a higher evolution”, and so on. This is unmistakably akin to spiritism.

### **Here is the reality**

1. There are angels both fallen and those loyal to the Creator.
2. The members of the Lucifer Legion are posing as aliens. They have no interest in helping this planet or mankind, as they claim. Their one goal is to destroy and prevent people from finding out about the Creator’s rescue plan – and His love for every person.
3. They assert that they worship the Lord of the universe, when in fact they hate Him.
4. They twist biblical passages to support their claims.
5. The inhabitants of other planets, who are loyal to the Creator, have no need, nor desire, to come to this hell-hole of a planet. The Creator does not use them to come and warn us. Heavenly angels are His couriers and messengers to mankind (see chapter 40).
6. Our Creator does not need or use spaceships to travel in.
7. The Lucifer League (supposed ETs) did not create our human race.
8. They deceptively claim:
  - (a) that we evolved from lower forms of life over millions of years
  - (b) and/or we are reincarnated into or from some other life form
  - (c) that they are used by God to bring judgment upon mankind.
9. Many writers about UFOs and ETs are honest and have done extensive research. But they do not recognise that their research, based upon ancient texts, tablets and pictographs, is faulted, because some of it was written by ancient scribes under the direct influence and guidance of the Legion of Lucifer! What they take as truth is in fact lies, from the father of

lies. And so many who read it – trustingly, I must say – come under its influence.

10. Writers on UFOs and ETs take unwarranted liberties when interpreting key words in the Bible to support their views. Much of their argument rests on semantics. For example, the biblical mention of angels, clouds, light, eagles, fire, thunder and earthquakes, is claimed to be evidence of saucer and ET activities. This is totally false. Likewise they read into the Bible what is just not there. They visualise UFOs and aliens in every supernatural event mentioned in the Bible. They stretch biblical accounts into unbelievable lengths to make their theory fit.

### **Warning signs to be aware of**

Look for these signs and the alarm bells should ring:

1. Statements supporting the *evolving* of man into a higher state of being, or that ETs were once like we are, but now have *evolved* into something better. And that they are here to assist our “evolution”.

Their strategy is based on – and reinforces – the notion of evolution.

The strategy is to rob the Creator of the credit that is His due. And hopefully this will lead us to ignore our responsibilities to the One who made us.

2. Likewise, any message about *reincarnation* or talk of an afterlife on a “higher plane”, is a dead giveaway.

3. Also that there is *no “death” or “sin”*.

4. Messages of *peace and unity*. This is heard everywhere. It is the heart and core of the New Age movement. Biblical prophecy states clearly that when the world is crying peace and safety, then sudden destruction will come upon them.

5. That you have *power within you to save yourself*. “You are god”.

6. That the *Master is coming soon* in a saucer to set up his kingdom.

This next warning sign relates specifically to Lucifer’s spiritism strategy.

7. More commonly you will find spiritism dressed up in a religious cloak so as to reassure the unwary that this is from God Himself. The aim is to allay suspicion and create a sense of false security. Spiritualistic papers abound, in which the religious camouflage is so subtle that uninstructed individuals might almost imagine that spiritist teachings differ little from Christianity.

### **The aliens' master is Lucifer**

You can be sure the Legion of Lucifer are not here to entertain us. Nor to save us. They are “lying” spirits (2 Thessalonians 2:9). This is the work of an enemy that seeks your ruin and that of your children.

Based upon their own claims, we can know without any doubt that their master is none other than the Father of lies, Lucifer. Thus these creatures can be identified as fallen beings operating under a masquerade.

It is not generally known that David Spangler, one of the most prominent New Age religious leaders on earth, also claims to be in contact with alien entities.

Spangler claims that the following information was dictated to him by spirit beings. He terms this the “Luciferian Initiation”. Those who follow this path, he claims, will become “light” bearers. The ETs, it seems, are obsessed with (masquerading as) light!:

“Spangler teaches that Lucifer is an agent of God’s love. He believes that Lucifer is the angel of man’s inner evolution, that:

...the light that reveals to us the path to Christ comes from Lucifer... the great initiator. Lucifer comes to give us the final initiation that many people in the days ahead will be facing, for it is an initiation into the New Age. (David Spangler, *Reflections on the Christ*, pp. 36-39, cited in “The Lucifer Connection: The NAM ‘Light’ Experience,” <[www.spiritual-wholeness.org/churchte/newage/lucifer.htm](http://www.spiritual-wholeness.org/churchte/newage/lucifer.htm)>, August 17, 2003)

## **Coldness of heart**

Pro-UFO writer Thomas Bullard acknowledges this concerning the “space brothers”:

Though polite, the outward courtesy of the beings hides an innate coldness. They show little concern or understanding for human feelings and care only for accomplishing their mission. (Ronald D. Story, *The Mammoth Encyclopedia of Extraterrestrial Encounters*, in an article by Thomas Bullard, pp. 4-10)

## **Adversaries of the Creator**

Here is one factor that many researchers miss. The aliens expend great effort to promote the idea of an *impersonal god or force* behind the universe, rather than a Supreme Creator.

You may wonder why.

Clearly they do believe in God, otherwise they would not be expending such an immense effort to convince us otherwise. The simple truth is, they are hostile toward God.

And, knowing their past involvement, is it any wonder?

They also seem to be obsessed with the Bible.

Again, you may wonder why. The answer, again, is simple. This is the Book that speaks of a divine rescue plan for the human race and exposes the nefarious agenda of these aliens, the Legion of Lucifer.

The Bible speaks very plainly against them and tells us not to dabble in their affairs. (Deuteronomy 18:10; Ezekiel 13:6) Why? Because dabbling in the occult opens the door to immense danger.

## **Caught in a cosmic war**

As we have seen, our planet is caught up in a conflict between the forces of good and those of the Lucifer Legion.

Might this help us understand why our world has descended into such a mess?

Certainly we are responsible for our own actions. But we may well ask, is there a bigger and more sinister play going on behind the scenes? Is it super-energised by evil forces?

Could it be that these forces have permeated politics, religion, science, the media, education and business?

Indeed, it is time we faced the truth, however startling. There is a cosmic war being waged for the control of the human race. Lucifer and his hosts are no myth!

Indeed, they are the REAL force behind all the poverty, violence and corruption.

Their destructive powers are restrained from fully destroying this rebellious world by the power of our merciful Creator.

He is allowing some destructive calamities to come upon the world in order that men and women may turn from their evil path. He allows them to suffer calamity, that their senses may be awakened.

And, like it or not, we are all involved. Rebellion placed the whole world in jeopardy, under the death sentence.

What is more, you and I both know that it is only a matter of time before each of us will be dead. It might be tonight or seventy years from now. But it is certain. Yes, we are all, so to speak, on death row.

And yet life is so precious. How many dreams would you like to fulfill? Wouldn't you like to extend your time?

## **Some solutions**

As I write this, scientists are attempting to work on solutions that might add 20 years to your life.

But suppose I could show you a secret that would get you an age increase far better than that?

Yes, we all must die.

But you don't have to die without hope. You at least have the right to *die with a future*.

Because I value you as a reader (after all, you've been decent enough stay with me up to this page), I promise to share with you a powerful, life-extension secret in Book 3 of this series.

So hang in there!

## How to halt an alien abduction

And here's another tip.

Did you know that among the millions of claimed alien kidnappings occurring, some individuals are able to stop their own abduction in its tracks?

This information is another result of the global UFO research being undertaken.

That's right, there is one group of people that, by and large, is safe from alien abduction. It's as if ETs tend to avoid this select group of people.

This is a startling reality, and whilst it has been largely ignored by many researchers, it was discovered by one group of UFO researchers known as the CE-4 Research Group Inc.

We shall look into this astonishing fact later in *this* book. It could save the life of someone you know.

\* \* \* \* \*

“Roland, I don't want to butt in.”

It was Ben Harris on the phone. Because of Angie, Roland had entrusted the every day running of his engineering firm to Ben.

“Did you know there's an information source that's older than the Bible? Thousands of years older. The older, the more reliable, wouldn't you think?”

“Yeah, what source?”

“It's an old Sumerian text, the *Lost Book of Enki*.”

“Tell me more.”

“It says the aliens came from Planet Nibiru. Just thought you might like to know.”

“Thanks, Ben.”

With a chuckle, Roland set down the receiver. Dear Ben. A thoughtful guy. Always wanting to help. But he's obviously not dug very deep, thought Roland. Well, that's where I was six months ago.

Then the thought prodded him. He said *older* than the Bible... *thousands of years older*.

Roland Brown, you must cover all bases. Okay,  
Archaeologist Sheed... where are you?





## **Part 4:**

# **WHICH SOURCE IS OLDER?**

## 24

### *Pre-Flood world under threat -*

# NO WAY OUT

“Yes?”

“Brad, this is Roland Brown, over in Thornton. “Can you spare some time?”

“Of course, Roland. What’s happening over there?”

“You said, if ever I had further questions...”

“How may I help?”

“This will take some time,” said Roland. “I need information about the comparative dates of some ancient documents. Do you mind if I visit?”

...It was a 40 minute drive to the archaeologist’s home. Brad Sheed was waiting. He ushered Roland in.

Roland explained.

And Brad began...

\* \* \* \* \*

As we saw, Roland had finally cracked the answers to these questions:

1. Who are the aliens?
2. Why do they claim we belong to them?

### **But are the Sumerian documents older?**

And he was pretty well assured by now that the *Intelligence Report* towered alone in ancient literature for reliability.

However, since big claims were made by well-known writer Zecharia Sitchin for the Sumerian documents and their alleged superiority of ranking due to age, and because they

claimed such a different origin for both the aliens and mankind, it was vital to spend time on this issue.

You see, *The Intelligence Report* and Sumerian texts, such as the *Epic of Creation*, clash head on! Only one can be right. But which?

*Whether we ever get to know the truth*, will depend on it.

This is so important, that the next 12 chapters will be explore the timing factor. And it's not dry and dull. Just wait and see.

## **Background information**

To get our bearings, let's flash back to the early days of the Lucifer Legion's reign of terror on Planet Earth.

As the rebellion developed, the human family polarised into two groups: the Sethites who preserved and respected the laws of the Creator; and the Cainites who were obsessed with materialism and raw pleasure. The Cainites were haughty and shrewd. And eventually they had just about conquered the minds of the Sethites. The number of faithful was diminishing at an alarming rate.

Finally, those who stood out were confined within the narrow limits of a single family group.

Except for intervention, there would soon be no survivors.

According to the book of Genesis, "the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and... every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually."(Genesis.6:5) The human race had become almost totally corrupted. (Genesis 6:12)

And "the earth was filled with violence." (Genesis.6:11) A beautiful world was transformed into a house of destructive madness. The balance of nature and the very existence of life on earth was on the brink.

Men like Enoch spoke up loudly that a day of reckoning lay ahead. Noah tried to save his contemporaries from the coming disaster. Few listened.

The *Intelligence Report* portrays the stubbornness of human nature:

*And the Lord God of their fathers sent to them by his messengers, rising up betimes, and sending; because he had compassion on the people... But they mocked the messengers of God, and despised his words, and misused his prophets, ...till there was no remedy. (2 Chronicles 36:15,16)*

When gangrene in the leg endangers the survival of the body, the decision will be painful, but the leg has to go.

Human life on this planet was poised to blast itself to extinction.

Unless intervention came, the family line that was being prepared, into which the promised Deliverer was to be born, would be wiped out or corrupted – then there could be no ultimate rescue.

## **Intervention absolutely necessary**

So it was time for supernatural power to intervene.

The Creator communicated to chosen prophets that He had “no pleasure in the death of the wicked; but that the wicked turn from his way and live... for why will you die, my people?” (Ezekiel.33:11)

He regarded the coming destruction as his “strange act”. (Isaiah.28:21) It was strange to His loving nature to inflict pain, let alone pronounce death upon people He had created and loved. It would deeply hurt the Creator to have to intervene in this way.

Just as this greater Being is capable of love to a greater degree than are we, so the pain of inflicting a penalty on those He loved would be much more intense than we can imagine.

However, there was no other option. The global rebellion needed to be set back, so that the ultimate plan of rescue could succeed.

By filling the world with violent brigands, Lucifer almost succeeded. But the line of the promised Messiah was maintained through Noah, and Lucifer’s nefarious plan came to nought.

This cleansing of the planet would prepare it for future generations. So the surface of the entire earth would now be disturbed, refitted as a more austere and less bountiful home, where a rebellious race would be better off with less ease and

abundance, in an environment not conducive to longevity. Then there would be less opportunity for the rebellion to advance again so quickly.

For this new start, an untainted family was spared. They were to be rewarded with life in a new world free from the immediate human threat.

Had God NOT intervened the way He did, it is almost certain that you and I would not be here today. Mankind would have wiped itself out. There would be no future restored planet with people reconciled to one another and to their Creator.

The Supreme One is very merciful, and as long as there is hope, He will not destroy. But when men become each others' worst enemies, and incurably set in their ways, mercy must give place to judgment.

So the Deluge struck. In one clean sweep Lucifer was to lose virtually all his human subjects.

**NOTE:** If our story appears to be deviating from UFO aliens for a time, please be patient, because we must necessarily establish the comparative age of certain documents that are an essential part of the UFO drama.

# 25

## *The Deluge -*

# THE DAY OF THE DEAD

Animals and birds racing to mountains all over the world – a scene enacted on *hundreds of thousands* of hills in every part of the earth.

What drove strange mixtures of animals – creatures that don't normally live together – into caves and crevices all over the world? And buried them together?

What brought arctic and tropical animals to the very same mountain top?

What are **deep sea** creatures doing high up in the Himalayan **mountains**?

Why are human remains found inside coal, mixed in with the remains of vast forests that were violently uprooted, then piled mountain high, by some stupendous force, then buried?

We are talking about *history's biggest physical catastrophe...* ... and today there are powerful men **AFRAID** that **YOU** will find out about it. **WHY?**

This was the event in which 2 billion people, with their astonishing technology, vanished from the face of the earth.

*Something deadly and very SUDDEN* changed the climate in a flash, reversed the land and water distribution of the globe and virtually wiped out the world's population.

## **A damaged planet**

In fact, I have rarely investigated anything I thought was more factual.

There is compelling evidence that not so long ago there occurred a watery catastrophe of such magnitude that the earth is still reeling from its onslaught.

This global Deluge explains why today's world is far from perfect. We inhabit a planet that has been DAMAGED and IMPOVERISHED, still suffering the effects of a worldwide disaster.

## **The Great Flood**

The evidence suggests that it began with a sudden, violent tilting of the earth's axis. This triggered enormous stresses in the crust of the earth, to a depth of several miles.

A crack opened in the crust, then at a speed of 2½ miles a second began to move around the planet.

Confined under enormous pressure, jets of hot underground water shot 70 miles high, penetrating the pristine water canopy above the atmosphere. Amidst lightning and the worst thunder ever heard by man, the vapour canopy began to disintegrate. A floodgate of rain was released upon the earth.

Hot lava also pushed upward through the newly opened cracks in the crust. With a deafening roar, thousands of fiery columns spouted miles high into the atmosphere.

The volcanoes also gave off vapour in quantities almost beyond comprehension, adding to the rain on an unprecedented scale.

There could be no gentle rising of water. Colossal waves surged over the planet. The winds, now of uncontrollable force, whipped them to enormous heights. Boulders of up to 18,000 tons were carried hundreds of miles. Some were hurled to levels 2,000 feet higher.

Indeed, this was a Flood of global proportions. All the latent forces of nature – volcanoes, earthquakes, waves and hurricanes – were unleashed in a terrible alliance for a universal destruction. For many months, their continued action created power for destruction and transportation that is beyond human calculation. Erosion and sedimentation took place on a gigantic scale.

**THIS EVENT CAN EXPLAIN MANY OTHERWISE PUZZLING GEOLOGICAL FEATURES OF TODAY'S EARTH.**

## Evidence of the volcanic factor

Large areas of solidified volcanic magma stretch over Africa, India, the U.S.A., Iceland, Brazil, Argentina, the Baltic, Siberia and elsewhere.

India's 700,000 square mile Deccan Plateau is 10,000 feet thick! Did you get that? - *lava 10,000 feet thick!*

In Idaho, Oregon and Washington, U.S.A., are the remains of an enormous volcanic eruption. The Columbia Plateau covers 250,000 square miles. **The lava flow is up to 5,000 feet thick** in places. (W.J. Miller, *An Introduction to Historical Geology*, 5<sup>th</sup> ed., 2<sup>nd</sup> printing, 1946, p.355) The Seven Devils Canyon of Snake River has cut a channel over 3,000 feet deep into this.

Immanuel Velikovsky concurs:

Only a few thousand years ago lava flowed there over an area larger than France, Switzerland, and Belgium combined; it flowed not as a creek, not as a river, not even as an overflowing stream, but as a flood, deluging horizon after horizon, filling all the valleys, devouring all the forests and habitations, steaming large lakes out of existence as they were little potholes filled with water, swelling ever higher and overtopping mountains and burying them deep beneath molten stone, boiling and bubbling, thousands of feet thick, billions of tons heavy. (Immanuel Velikovsky, *Earth in Upheaval*. London: Sphere Books, Ltd., 1978, p.83)

At Nampo, Idaho, in 1889, during the boring of an artesian well on this plateau, a small figurine was brought up from a depth of 320 feet – evidence of human activity before the disaster struck.

The Canadian Shield comprises 2,000,000 square miles of lava flow. Only a tremendous catastrophe could cause such an eruption. Nothing today compares with this.

From Lebanon almost to South Africa's Cape runs a mighty rift – a zone which shows a *tearing apart of the crust*, produced by a direct tension. It covers about one sixth of the planet's circumference. Concerning this, Gregory wrote:



It must have some *worldwide cause*. (Gregory, "The African Rift Valleys," *Geographical Journal*, LVI, 1920, 31ff)

Indeed! The geologist Eduard Suess observed that **immense floods** of lava gushed from the earth along the Rift. Vigorous volcanic action was generated.

In many places the bottom of the sea consists of a lava bed covered only by a thin veneer of sediment.

The Indian Ocean is largely circled with extinct volcanoes; the ocean bottom is of lava. This is true also of the Atlantic and Pacific.

Most of the oceanic islands, both above and below sea level, were primarily of volcanic origin.

All of the world's huge seas of lava seem to have flowed out from rifts in the crust. This is *not normal* volcanism, but **HAS THE FLAVOUR OF CATASTROPHE**. These rifts appear to be huge tears in the crust of the planet, from which lava poured like a flood.

Nothing seen in recognised historical times can compare with whatever catastrophe caused these tremendous formations. The theory of uniformity breaks down completely in the face of this undeniable catastrophe.

## **Vast fossil graveyards**

There is a most crucial circumstance concerning the earth's strata and the fossils that is not generally disclosed to the public, and which many geologists apparently do not recognise.

On every continent, and in numerous places on each, are vast "fossil graveyards", where masses of flora and fauna have been swept to a *sudden death in their millions*.

These areas are often packed with both land and sea creatures from different habitats and even different climatic zones – all mixed and buried together *in a completely unnatural way*.

There is evidence that a great disaster took place, in which creatures of all types perished together – mostly fit, young and old, with fleet legs, strong muscles and sharp teeth. And with plenty of food around. Artefacts of man are found among them.

They all died together, suddenly and violently, high up on hills and mountains.

It happened all over the world. These examples from France paint the picture well:

In the Mediterranean coastal area of France, numerous clefts crammed to overflowing with animal bones have been found. Along with them are human remains.

One could mention Mount Genay, near Semur in Burgundy – 1,430 feet high. Here, capped by a breccia (a cemented mass of stone fragments), is a fissure filled with mixed bones of numerous animals.

Again, near Chalon-sur-Saone, between Dijon and Lyons, stands an isolated hill, flat-topped Mont de Sautenay. It rises 1,030 feet above the plain. Near the summit is a fissure crammed with bones. The bones are unweathered and ungnawed.

Albert Gaudry, professor at the Jardin des Plantes, asks:

Why should so many wolves, bears, horses and oxen have ascended a hill isolated on all sides?" These broken and splintered bones are "evidently not those of animals devoured by beasts of prey; nor have they been broken by man. Nevertheless the remains of wolf were particularly abundant, together with those of cave lion, bear, rhinoceros, horse, ox and deer. It is not possible to suppose that animals of such different natures, and of such different habitats, would in life ever have been together. (Prestwich, "On Certain Phenomena," *Idem, Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society*, 1893, pp.37-38)

Velikovsky directs us to note that "the state of preservation of the bones indicates that the animals – all of them – perished in the same period of time." (Velikovsky, p.54)

Prestwich concluded that the bones were "now associated in the fissure on the summit of the hill" because "all these animals had fled (there) to escape the rising waters." (Prestwich, p.38)

Caves and fissures on the Cote d'Azur have yielded *mixed land and sea remains*. For example, in the Vallonet cave at

Roquebrune-Cap-Martin, between Monaco and the Italian border, were bones of lions, rhinoceros, hyenas, macao monkeys, elephants and **whales**. All together. (H. de Lumley, S. Gagniere, L. Barral, R. Pascal. 1913 “La Grotte du Vallonet, Roquebrune-Cap-Martin, A-M, Note preliminaire”, *Bulletin du Musee Anthropologic Prehistorique de Monaco*, vol.10, pp.5-20)

Gripped by the same terror, wild beasts and tame stampeded to higher ground. In great numbers they thronged together – until the waters rose and covered them.

Then the huge waves smashed upon them large rocks and debris, until their bones were crushed or smashed.

So the bones of the large and small, the gentle and ferocious, were thrown together in wild confusion in a common grave.

It's a similar story worldwide. You can go just about anywhere: to Britain... Germany... Gibraltar... Sicily... Malta... Cyprus... Greece... Lebanon... United States... Canada... South America... Australia... Africa... Siberia... India... China... Korea... Burma... and discover this same bizarre graveyard phenomenon. (Jonathan Gray, *Surprise Witness*, chs.5, 6. <<http://www.beforeus.com/second.php>>)

Central Burma has water-laid deposits **two miles thick!** Two great horizontal masses of fossils are separated by a 4,000 foot depth of water-laid sands.

The deposits also contain huge quantities of fossil wood. Hundreds of thousands of entire trunks suggest the destruction of thick forests. (Wadia, *Geology of India*, pp. 274-275)

Velikovsky comments:

Animals met death and extinction by the elementary forces of nature, which also uprooted forests and from Kashmir to Indo-China **threw sand over species and genera in mountains thousands of feet high**. (Velikovsky, p.72)

Similar finds of animal graveyards, sometimes mixed with human artefacts, have been unearthed **ALL OVER THE WORLD**.

## Only a global Flood could do it

It is clear that nothing but a flood would have driven such strange mixtures of animals – animals that don't normally live together – into caves and crevices in all parts of the world. And buried them together.

The evidence everywhere strongly suggests that they were drowned *en masse* by violent water action.

This bone-cave phenomenon is *of world-wide extent*.

Was this a global Flood? Of course it was.

And apart from the burials in caves and crevices, all over the world are found *vast fossil graveyards* in sedimentary (water-laid) rock.

And wait for this. These average *a mile deep*, around the globe.

## Rapid burial

The very existence of fossils indicates two basic facts:

1. rapid burial of the organism
2. followed by rapid compaction of the sediments encasing them.

Otherwise they would not have been preserved.

Here is a fact of utmost importance: **ANIMALS OF EVERY KIND DIED IN GREAT NUMBERS AND WERE BURIED ALMOST INSTANTLY.**

Each of these animals, by the unbelievable uniformitarian explanation, fell into their graveyards by accident – one at a time!

However, the facts reveal not normal, slow processes, but unusual transportation and rapid burial mechanisms.

Such depth of fossils (to a worldwide average of one mile deep) required *rapid burial under great pressure*.

Often the remains of animals are found *crushed, pressed flat*, **EVEN TO THE CELLULAR STRUCTURE!** - by the huge weight of the sediment layers above them.

This could have occurred only if the strata containing them **HAD NOT HARDENED** before the next layers above were deposited. The weight of these higher layers piling up

*compressed the strata below, which was still fresh and soft*, and crushed the still-soft bodies it contained.

This proves RAPID DEPOSITION of large volumes of sediments in quick succession. There was no time for hardening first.

I would hate to be an evolutionist trying to explain this. Present-day processes are NOT a key to the past.

## **A series of local floods?**

You may ask, Could all this be the result of a series of local floods?

Actually, the memory of a global Flood lingers on in the folklore of many cultures around the earth.

This points heavily against the idea of the Flood being simply a myth or just a local flood.

All accounts have three features in common:

1. that a worldwide Flood destroyed both man and animals;
2. that a vessel of safety was provided; and
3. that only a small number of people survived.

A statistical analysis of Flood accounts reveals that as the tribes migrated farther and farther from a central point in the Middle East, the stories become more and more distorted.

This substantiates the view that these stories do have a common origin. They are not exaggerated tales of local catastrophes. (For more complete evidence, see Jonathan Gray's book on the worldwide Flood, *Surprise Witness*, chs.5, 6. <<http://www.beforeus.com/second.php>>)

## **The time frame is important**

In the next ten chapters we shall establish the *time* of this Great Flood and of the emergence of the civilizations such as Sumeria, which sprang up after it.

This will enable us to establish the *relative age* of the Sumerian "extraterrestrial" texts, as compared to the Bible.

*Why is this important?* Because these same Sumerian writings are used by some modern authors as an authoritative source on the extraterrestrial question.

In any case, you should find this a fascinating excursion...

\* \* \* \* \*

*"We are dealing with a yet unrecognized level of consciousness, independent of man but closely linked to the earth.... I do not believe anymore that UFOs are simply the spacecraft of some race of extraterrestrial visitors." --Jacques Vallee*

*"One theory which can no longer be taken very seriously is that UFOs are interstellar spaceships." -- Arthur C. Clarke*

*" ... the UFO phenomenon simply does not behave like extraterrestrial visitors. It actually molds itself in order to fit a given culture." --John Ankerberg*

\* \* \* \* \*

## 26

### *Enki and the Sumeria cover-up –*

# THE LUCIFER LIE

“Have you heard of the Anunnaki?” asked Roland.

“Sure have,” replied Brad.

“And what do you know about them?”

“Frankly, the Sumerian text about the Anunnaki was a work of fiction. And due to its clever mixing of some truth with the error, it has been mistaken as fact by some modern writers.

“It is one of those documents from Mesopotamia which give us an insight into the beliefs of the groups that stemmed from Nimrod of ‘Tower of Babel’ infamy. There was a bid by Nimrod, with help from the Lucifer Legion, to *re-write* and present a version of history that would help promote their long term agenda for control of this planet.”

\* \* \* \* \*

And may I add, these aliens have not ceased in their bid to *re-write* history. They attempt it even today in their UFO contactee program.

### **A program of deception**

Do bear this in mind. When a person claims to have had an encounter, one can accept that. The experiences may be real. It is the alien entities that are doing the pretending... claiming to be what they are not.

There’s the deception.

As the famous UFO researcher John Keel reminds us:

The thousands of contacts with the entities indicate that they are *liars and put-on artists*. (John Keel, *Operation Trojan Horse*. Lilburn, GA.: Illuminet Press, 1996, p. 266. Emphasis mine)

In fact, Ankerberg and Weldon reveal what the common view is among other researchers:

These researchers believe that the UFO entities are *deliberately programming* the human observers with *false information* in order to hide their true nature and purpose. (Ankerberg and Weldon, *The Facts on UFOs and Other Supernatural Phenomenon*. Eugene, OR.: Harvest House Publishers, 1992, pp. 10-11. Emphasis mine)

UFO researcher Gary Bates concurs:

They appear to be operating in a covert manner, similar to a ‘fifth column.’ Their efforts resemble a propaganda war that tries to convince the enemy that their intentions are not hostile, that is, that ‘we’re the good guys.’ Human combatants have used similar methods in conventional warfare on this planet, where one side tries to ‘soften up’ a country prior to invasion, giving the impression that they are no threat. It is a *classic deception*.

As the CE-4 researchers discovered, there is a battle going on in another dimension or a spiritual realm, and control of humankind and the earth appears to be the goal. (Gary Bates, *Alien Intrusion*. Green Forest, AR.: Master Books, Inc., 2004, pp. 269-270. Emphasis mine)

He adds:

Remember that these are the same beings who have apparently gone to great lengths to manufacture the illusions of arriving in spacecraft to *cover up who they really are* (whether they do this through hallucinogenic suggestion, manipulation of energy, or whatever. (*Ibid.*, p. 310. Emphasis mine)

“Who should we believe?” he asks. “Beings with *questionable origins* who abuse humans and treat them with disdain?” (*Ibid.*, p. 271. Emphasis added)



## Should we trust them?

Should one trust these deceptive beings' claims? Have they come from other planets? You've got to be kidding.

Did they come here willingly? No way!

Are they here to help us? Not on your life!

Here are beings that act deceptively. They talk about doing good, but behave abominably. They leave peoples' lives scarred, physically and emotionally.

These are the ones who have been deceiving mankind since the beginning of history.

Humans have been lied to. And they have believed the lies. And they still accept them today. These same lies constitute the central theme of New Age ideology. Decent people are being misled.

## A pattern of lying to us

Some folk are only too keen, observes Bates, "to imbibe the stories told by these visiting entities, though they *cannot scientifically establish their origin* or indeed their reality in the physical realm. We do know that the so-called space brothers have established a pattern of telling us things that have been proven to be demonstrably false. One should then ask, 'Should they be trusted either?' After all, *if they have lied, should they not be treated as liars?*" (*Ibid.*, p.221. Emphasis mine)

## Their version of the Flood

The defeat which the Great Flood inflicted upon Lucifer's control of the planet was a blow to his inflated ego.

But he must not permit this to continue! Therefore, after the Great Disaster, as civilizations began to rebuild, the Legion of Lucifer had *its* version of the Flood events ready to offer.

## Ancient documents inspired by the Lucifer Legion

So it was that, after the Flood, these same deceivers came to the Sumerians in *typical disguise* as ancient astronauts and in saucers. This is the source of the Sumerian tablet *The Epic of*

*Creation* in which, may I say with respect, Zecharia Sitchin places his trust, when he speaks of Enki and his astronauts splashing down in the Persian Gulf.

Don't be disappointed if this document turns out to be a farce. How utterly foreign and opposite it is from the account in the *Intelligence Report*!

Arguments using the Bible and ancient clay tablets may sound very convincing and seem credible. But – it needs to be pointed out - Sitchin's use of the Bible to support his findings, is, with respect, flawed. Simply, much of what he uses as proof of the visits of extraterrestrials from ancient writings disagrees with that same Bible. The *Intelligence Report* makes it clear that the story found in those Sumerian tablets emanated from Lucifer himself, hiding his true identity through lies and deceit.

After the Flood, then, was concocted this tale of the Anunnaki from Planet Nibiru, imparted to the early Sumerians.

The word "Anunnaki" literally means "those who came from heaven to earth". These were beings who claimed to have come down to earth.

And indeed they had! But would they admit the truth - that they were only here because they had been banished from heaven as rebels? Not on your life! These renegades spun a tale to the Sumerians that they were here by choice, from a planet named Nibiru.

This Nibiru, they asserted, was populated by a *reptilian* super race.

Here you see the shrewdness of the Lucifer Legion. Lucifer's symbol – since his first séance - was, indeed, the *reptile*. Take your pick... *serpent*... *snake*... *dragon*. All basically resolve into the same symbol.

If you've been wondering about the identity of those *reptilian beings* mentioned by some writers nowadays, you now have the truth.

These are none other than the fallen angels who were exiled from heaven when they rebelled. The serpent has always been their emblem. And they have frequently been seen to materialise in the form of reptiles.

The Legion of Lucifer are the genuine “reptilians”, if that’s what you want to call them.

But they did NOT come to Planet Earth willingly. Nor did they come from a planet named Nibiru. They had been banished from heaven for rebellion!

Most accounts of the planet Nibiru are based on the writings of UFOlogist Zecharia Sitchin. In fact, this topic has been heavily promoted by him.

In contrast to the airy speculation of von Danicken, Sitchin claims to be a scholar. He graduated in economics. However he claims to be an expert in ancient Sumerian texts and Hebrew.

Sitchin says that modern Bible translations are not true to the real beliefs of ancient times or the beliefs of the original Hebrew authors. And he sees UFOs right through the Bible.

So was Sitchin correct about UFOs in the Bible?

Well, for starters, it can be said that Sitchin did get some things right.

### **Sitchin got this right:**

1. That there was a Flood which covered and destroyed the entire world.
2. That there was a civilization after the Flood that started in Mesopotamia, from descendants of the Flood survivors.
3. That such a high early civilization needs explaining.
4. And that some beings did come from heaven to earth.

Mr Sitchin got these correct.

### **The story of the Anunnaki**

But the Anunnaki story? That’s something else.

According to Sitchin, the Anunnakis’ own planet was dying. So the Anunnaki came to Planet Earth to attempt a rescue of their planet. The gold on Planet Earth was needed to create a shield for preserving Nibiru’s dwindling atmosphere.

One can actually feel sorry for the Anunnaki.

When the toil became unbearable, Enki ‘created’ ‘primitive workers’ by mixing the genes of male Anunnaki with

the eggs of early female hominoids, to bring about human beings.

And their version of the Flood event was that they themselves had been forced to trigger it, to wipe out the wickedness.

But the story went that there arose conflict between the Anunnaki royal half-brothers Enki and Enlil. Enki defied Enlil's plan to let mankind perish in the Deluge. So, due to the efforts of the good Anunnaki prince Enki, mankind survived that Great Flood to repopulate the earth. And so we have the Sumerians, descended from these Flood survivors. Hurrah, again, for Enki of the Anunnaki (the Legion of Lucifer)!

Oh, do come on. No sympathy should be felt for these Anunnaki.

## **Unmasking the truth**

You want the absolute truth? They are dreadful, sneaky, deceptive, manipulative, vengeful conquerors of Earth.

When the facts are known, we find the Anunnaki ("those who came from heaven to earth") to be a belligerent and conquering mob. They are fierce, evil, lustful, incestuous, bloodthirsty, deceitful, jealous and domineering. They want nothing better than to degrade the human race. Cannibalism excites them. They also demand human sacrifices - particularly of virgins - from those whom they enslave.

If you imagine the worst characteristics you can conceive in Satan, you have well concocted an impression of the Anunnaki.

To be more specific, they *are* Satan (Lucifer) and his cast out followers, the Lucifer Legion.

As world events continue to unfold, more and more we shall witness the ugliness of this predominance of bullying behaviour.

Do you see it in action today?

The rulers of the stronger nations are forcing their will upon the weaker nations and will become more demanding and

unreasonable. Nation states are using an enormously oppressive power much like that of masters over slaves.

And who are the driving entities behind this? They are the demons who were cast out of heaven and have made this planet their battleground.

But that's just touching the surface.

The evidence will show that Sitchin has become another victim – albeit unwittingly - of the trap laid by the Lucifer Legion. He took a fatal leap of faith into that Enki document. And fell for their story hook, line and sinker... then used his own theories to support his claims.

## Here is where Sitchin missed the mark

1. ***Re EVOLUTION:*** I submit this with respect, that Mr Sitchin has, like so many among us, fallen hard for the evolution fairytale – the myth that things evolved. And all this was taking painful multi millions of years - until the extraterrestrials came and jumped the gun on evolution through genetic engineering. Sitchin's extraterrestrial theory is based on this notion.

If it hasn't struck you yet, the Legion of Lucifer has a craftily planned agenda... designed to ***trap people one way or another.***

They know that there are many folk who will be drawn into the traditional ***evolution*** camp. But others will not fall for it.

So a theory involving ***space men*** is designed to catch as many of these others as possible. Just convince people of the reality of UFOs and of their occupants' "saving" mission!

2. ***Re THE GREAT FLOOD:*** Sitchin suggests the Flood was caused by the sliding of Antarctic ice shelves into the oceans, generating a huge tidal wave. I am sorry, but this is 100 percent speculation. Firstly, it does not agree with the weight of geological evidence. And secondly, it is out of harmony with the very Bible account to which he refers.

The truth is, there was no ice cap to slip into the water to form a tidal wave.

Why, because – according to the evidence - the pre-Flood climate was temperate from pole to pole. (See Jonathan Gray’s book *The Killing of Paradise Planet*, pp.15-29 <<http://www.beforeus.com/first.php>> )

We saw in the previous chapter that the Great Flood was more than a Flood. It was a *cataclysm*. A sudden, violent tilting of the earth’s axis triggered stresses in the crust of the planet, resulting in a total break-up of the crust several miles deep. Earthquakes opened up gigantic fissures, to pour forth water, steam and molten rock.

Enormous pent up pressure ejected water and volcanic ash high above the atmosphere to puncture the canopy envelope, which disintegrated and collapsed upon the earth. It poured down for six weeks with such volume and force, the result was disastrous. Flora and fauna buried thousands of feet deep.

All the latent forces of nature – volcanoes, earthquakes, waves and hurricanes were unleashed in a terrible alliance of destruction. For a year, destruction and reshaping continued on an enormous scale. It was beyond calculation.

Just a tidal wave from an ice slide? You’ve got to be kidding.

3. **Re THE “NIFILIM”:** Sitchin is also confused in his statements about the “Nifilim” (plural) mentioned in the Bible account. He misapplies it to extraterrestrials or ancient astronauts.

(a) The “Nefilim” were NOT extraterrestrials, but real humans. According to the very book of Genesis to which he refers they were human offspring of two groups intermarrying.

(b) Sitchin’s translation of “Nefilim” as “those who had come down from Heaven to Earth” is not even implied by the biblical Hebrew. He claims this translation was obtained from ancient Sumerian writings. He might apply this meaning to the Sumerian “Anunnaki”, but not to the biblical “Nefilim”. And the word “Nefil” (singular), while translated “giant”, means, just as correctly, “bully” or “tyrant”.

4. ***Re THE ORIGIN OF HUMANS:*** Although Sitchin appeals to the Bible as a source of information, yet he negates it by saying humans were the product of crossbreeding by visitors from the planet Nibiru.

The “sons of God” who intermarried with “daughters of men” were, he says, these extraterrestrials. He thinks that “primitive” biblical authors used the term “sons of God” only because they did not understand the technology.

In this he stumbles - because the Bible provides its own explanation as to the identity of the persons called “sons of God”. (See Appendix C)

Apart from that, the Bible clearly states that humans were NOT the product of genetic juggling. Humans were a special creation of the Supreme God of the universe Himself.

In any case, the same source book for the “sons of God” expression - the Bible (Genesis 6:2) - refutes the “primitive” idea. It emphatically declares that mankind was created fully intelligent from the start. (Genesis 2:19-20) Adam’s descendants were craftsmen and musicians (Genesis 4:21,22) and civilization, with schools of metallurgy, was flourishing *before* Sitchin’s alleged events took place.

The “primitive authors” notion is impossible if we grant that the earlier descriptions in the same book are also true.

And something else. The appearance of human beings cannot be explained simply by the cross-species breeding of humanoid space aliens and primitive ape-like creatures. Nor by the genetic engineering of animals. It might sound scholarly, but such claims show a distinct lack of a basic knowledge of genetics.

5. ***Re THE NEED TO MINE GOLD:*** This just occurred to me. Think about it. Why would beings with advanced space ships capable of collecting solar energy (solar panels) require mining when, with unlimited energy from the sun, elements could be transmuted into gold?

6. **Re THE DATE FOR SUMERIA:** Sitchin says that “Shumerian (or Sumerian) civilization had blossomed in what is now Iraq almost a millennium before the beginning of the Pharaonic age in Egypt,” and that documents in the Sumerian language go “back almost six thousand years.” (Zecharia Sitchin, *The Earth Chronicles*) That is wishful thinking, and not fact. We shall see later that the Sumerians do not go back earlier than c.2244 BC. (See chapters 29 and 35. Also: *The Corpse Came Back*, chapters 22 and 23)

7. **Re THE PRE-FLOOD KING LISTS:** Zecharia Sitchin appears to have swallowed hook, line and sinker a Babylonian history of the ten pre-Flood kings which covers “432,000 years’ total reign”. (Zecharia Sitchin, *The Earth Chronicles*) This calls for a little sensible thought. Did you know that in this king list to which he refers, one king is said to have reigned for 64,800 years! The obviously overstated “reign” of each king raises immediate doubts. It seems dubious that the highly civilised and intelligent Babylonians could believe such a figure. Yet, Mr Sitchin has attributed such nonsense to them... even, it seems, to believing it himself.

The solution to this absurdity is simple. The Babylonian unit of measurement, the *sarus*, had two different values - (1) the astrological (corresponding to a time period of 3,600 years) and (2) the civil (corresponding to 18½ years).

When this is understood, the problem evaporates.

You need only divide the reign of each Chaldean pre-Flood king by 3,600 to arrive at the basic number, then multiply it by 18½ to obtain the writer’s intended meaning.

The changes brought about through this method are so startling that in some cases the so-called reigns of the legendary Chaldean kings become almost identical with the important highlights in the lives of the biblical patriarchs; that is, the birth of their eldest sons.

“432,000 years’ total reign” becomes “2220 years”!

8. **Re THE SOURCE OF THE SUMERIAN TEXTS BEING OLDER THAN THE BIBLICAL:** Sitchin says that “the biblical tales of Creation, of Adam and Eve, the Garden of



Eden, the Deluge, the Tower of Babel, were based on texts written down millennia earlier in Mesopotamia, especially by the Sumerians.”

So, he says, the Sumerian texts are thousands of years older than ‘the biblical tales’.

Having read Sitchin’s theory, a gentleman asked me, “Do you dismiss the finds of clay tablets of Sumer?”

“I certainly accept all ancient writings for what they are worth,” was my reply. “But contrary to what some arm-chair researchers ask us to believe, the Sumerian tablets contain grotesque and clumsy accounts of events, and a clearly inferior version. Closer examination will reveal that they and the Hebrew scriptures both contain some information handed down from the *common source*, but the difference between the two is *not* in favour of the Sumerian account.”

“But I read that...” And he stopped short. “Well, I never really knew for sure.”

“If you think that what I am saying here is wrong,” I said, “then just supply me with evidence that the Sumerian accounts are (a) older; (b) superior. Please take this seriously. I am throwing to you a challenge.”

“I read it on the Internet, and in a book,” he responded. “No one’s told me that it might be wrong.”

“Are you sure you want the truth about this?” I asked. “There is *absolutely no evidence* that the Sumerian writings are an OLDER text than the source of the biblical writings. The sustainable evidence indicates the opposite.”

“What evidence?” he asked.

Some of that evidence will be presented in chapters 33 to 35 of this present work.

## Hoaxed

Now, about that Sumerian Enki document. You have to admit, arguments using ancient clay tablets do, at first, sound scholastic. Even credible.

However, in the writings of Sitchin and others, there is not the slightest indication that they understand what they are

dealing with. They appear to be honest but unaware of the *sinister forces* behind this theory. But sadly, in the process, they are unintentionally leading their students and others astray.

The bottom line is this. The weight of evidence suggests that the ancient Sumerian Enki document is a *fictitious work posing as fact*. Sitchin has fallen into the trap of believing it.

The Sumerians, says Sitchin, obtained their knowledge of past events from the Anunnaki.

The Anunnaki?

So just who were these Anunnaki who claimed to be from a planet called Nibiru, otherwise known as Planet X? You now have a pretty good idea. These “aliens” are still up to their old tricks of misleading men and women today concerning their origin.

I have no problem with another planet beyond Pluto. In fact, on August 1, 2005, scientists announced they had discovered one, unofficially called 2003 UB313. At about 3,218 kilometers across, it is bigger than Pluto.

“Aliens” have claimed to come from all sorts of places that we know to exist, even Venus. So is it a big deal to claim they’re from a planet beyond Pluto? Anyway, we know who these hoaxers are.

The question will arise, If not from outer space, where did the Sumerian civilization get its high starting knowledge? How did the Sumerians know the relative sizes of our solar system planets, or that Saturn had rings, or that Jupiter had the greatest gravitational pull of all the planets? Well, think now, how do **WE** know such things are true? By our telescopes and space probes. How did **THEY**? By similar human effort. No extraterrestrial help needed.

The answer is simple. The Sumerians, the Egyptians and others inherited their knowledge from the civilized world that was wiped out in the Flood. They continued where the generation of the biblical Noah left off! For some good evidence of this, you might go to *Dead Men’s Secrets*, especially chapters 1 and 2 (available from <http://www.beforeus.com>) – and *The Corpse Came Back*, chapter 13. ( <http://www.befores.com/third.php> )

## Attempting to re-write history

To many New Agers, Sitchin appears as a hero for attacking the historicity of the Bible, claiming it has been misunderstood and is not to be taken literally.

Bill Alnor, researcher and cult specialist puts his finger on the real aim of Sitchin's works. It is to:

... demolish the foundations of every ancient tradition in favour of his notion of ancient astronauts coming to earth.  
(William T. Alnor, *UFOs in the New Age*. Grand Rapids, MI.: Baker Book House, 1992, pp. 200-201)

Now may I ask you, is it good scholarship to rely on one's own wishful notions? Is it sound scholarship to impose one's personal view upon the text – to make it say what you want it to say?

With due respect, this fact needs to be stated. It is deceitful to twist the Bible to read into it what one wants to believe. The original authors were in their own right, intelligent people. They should be fairly represented. Their writings deserve to be portrayed accurately. They should not be regarded as ignorant simply because they lived long ago. Or because they disagree with our view.

Clearly, Mr Sitchin's teachings are in agreement with those of the fallen angels, whose tale he believes. Both Sitchin and these aliens are filling a need that many want satisfied – a wish for a non-supernatural interpretation of the Bible.

Isn't it interesting?... this willingness to believe tales told by visiting entities - whose origin they cannot scientifically establish, nor even their reality in the physical world.

And since these same "space brothers" have demonstrated a *pattern of telling us things that have been proven false*, we might ask, Why should we trust anything they tell us?

If these aliens have lied, shouldn't we treat them as liars?

## Sex employed to cement the hoax

Take, for example, the aliens' *alleged breeding program*.

In past history, hundreds of men and women (not necessarily under torture) confessed to having sexual intercourse with demons. There were occasions when shape-shifting entities were said to lie with a man to obtain sperm, then impregnate it into a woman. (“Loving the Alien,” <[www.forteantimes.com/articles/121\\_alien\\_sex.shtml](http://www.forteantimes.com/articles/121_alien_sex.shtml)>, August 23, 2003)

You don’t need anyone to tell you that the sex drive is probably the most powerful of all natural physical human drives. In certain situations, sex can have an addictive quality. Some people find it to be one of their great weaknesses. Once having entered into a promiscuous lifestyle, many find it difficult to escape.

And this helps us to understand the methods that aliens use.

Many abduction victims fall into the same web as sexual abuse victims. They often have feelings of being used and degraded. Unfortunately many reach out for reassurance and comfort to the same persons who triggered their emotional collapse – their abductors or abusers. Hence the ability of those entities to control.

Breeding programs? I doubt it. The aliens’ sexual agenda has nothing to do with such things. Rather, sex is a primary tool to control and manipulate human beings.

You ask, then what about the descriptions of alien-human hybrids and nurseries placed on display in flying saucers?

Really? Oh, come on! There is no escaping the fact that these are elaborate illusions to cover the truth... and to make the sexual abuse more palatable to the victim. These entities have that ability.

There may also be a secondary purpose to this “hybridization” pretence – and that is to reinforce the whole “extraterrestrial” impression.

Other aspects of the encounters – such as the video screens and the messages they give – are part of the charade.

These entities are always “up front” in telling abductees about their alleged hybridization program.

This is no secret. It is a key part of their attempt to make themselves appear to be more evolved – a more advanced species.

But think about this. If it is really true that these so-called ETs have been breeding hybrid offspring for so many thousands of years, we might well ask, where are these offspring now? The truth is that no plausible explanation has yet emerged.

On this subject of UFOs and abductions, people are looking for answers everywhere – and neglecting the one source that holds the key – the *Intelligence Report* (the Bible).

This states clearly that Lucifer is out to wreck human lives and prevent mankind from learning of the Creator’s rescue plan.

### **A desperate mother’s confession**

Gary Bates recalls a phone plea he received from a desperate mother whose daughter had a history of illicit drug use:

The daughter subsequently claimed she was being visited by aliens in the middle of the night. After some discussion, I asked if Mary (not her real name) and I could meet because I felt there was something missing in the puzzle. Over coffee, we discussed her daughter’s problems. I mentioned, among other things, ‘If this is what I think it is, there is either something you are not telling me or something that your daughter has not shared with you. Have there been any encounters of a sexual nature? Does she believe that she is *specially chosen* for their mission?’

I’ll never forget Mary’s jaw-dropping reaction. Confirming my worst fears, she said, ‘Yes – oh my goodness! Something really is happening to her.’

I went on to explain that similar experiences are being reported by people all over the world – thousands of miles away in some cases. Mary was staggered, and realized that what was happening to her daughter was of a completely spiritual nature. She now realizes her daughter’s bizarre stories and behaviour are a result of deception by very

powerful and influential spiritual beings. (Gary Bates, *Alien Intrusion*. Green forest, AR.: Master Books, Inc., 2004, pp. 333-334)

Evidence grows that sinister forces often advance their cause by taking advantage of persons who may be at a stage where they are emotionally or physically weakened.

These entities are *ruthless*.

## Why evil seems to win

Have you ever wondered why evil appears so much to win?

A careful study of history will enable us to identify moves and counter moves. Those taking the side of right can be seen to have won some battles, and the Legion of Lucifer some. Those following the Creator might appear to be at a disadvantage, because Lucifer can use every form of *deception*. The Creator cannot.

He must wait for time to vindicate the rightness of his way. The strategy: destructive hatred versus love.

In this ongoing drama, Lucifer has made up his mind that if he must ultimately lose, he will take the whole human race with him.

And so it was that the Lucifer Legion was to mastermind their long *reign of terror* on this earth.

\* \* \* \* \*

The next few chapters are particularly important. Here's why.

## Comparative credibility of two alleged extraterrestrial documents

The ancient documents that are currently most cited in support of alien claims are, as we have seen, the Sumerian texts and the Bible. And claiming that the Sumerian texts are *older* has, for some, become a favorite ploy, aimed at establishing their *comparative credibility* over the Bible.

This issue, to many, is considered so important, that we shall now address it.

## Both written after the Flood

This much is agreed by all: that both the *Sumerian texts* and the Bible were *written* SINCE *the Great Flood*.

So, once we establish the *timing* of the Flood, we shall know the earliest possible dating for both documents.

## How we shall tackle it

Here is how we shall conduct our investigation.

**In chapter 27** I shall introduce you to ten independent witnesses from all over the earth which are in general agreement that a worldwide, earth-shaping disaster occurred as recently as 4,000 to 5,000 years ago.

**In chapter 28** we shall trace independent sources from around the world who testify to the common origin of their post-Flood populations. These nations represent the three branches of the human family. On the basis of the number of generations listed in the genealogies they have preserved, each genealogy would go back no earlier than 4,000 to 5,000 years.

**In chapter 29** we shall familiarize ourselves with the post-Flood event that gave rise to the Sumerian and other cultures. This can also be dated.

**In chapters 30 and 31** we shall address the question, If *all* races on the earth descended from a common ancestry of Flood survivors 4,000 to 5,000 years ago, then why do some cultures appear to show a much older history for themselves?

**In chapter 32** we shall ask, how could all of today's racial variations have emerged in this same brief period of just 4,000 to 5,000 years?

**In chapters 33, 34 and 35** we shall place the biblical book of Genesis under the spotlight of the critics and compare it for age and credibility with other ancient documents, including the Sumerian texts. Then we shall see how this impacts on the extraterrestrial theory.

**Then from chapters 36 to 40** we shall cover UFO abductions, ETs and Satanism, mind programming, and the coming international showdown.

Are you ready for this?... the timing of the Deluge...

**NOTE:** If our story appears to be deviating from UFO aliens for a time, please be patient, because we must necessarily establish the comparative age of certain documents that are an essential part of the UFO drama.



## 27

### *Dating the Flood -*

# TEN SURPRISE WITNESSES

The late George F. Dodwell, South Australian government astronomer, and director of the Adelaide Observatory, made an interesting discovery in relation to the earth's wobble.

Over 26 years, he studied what astronomers call "the secular variation of the obliquity of the ecliptic". He did an investigation of summer solstice studies at ancient sites, such as Stonehenge, Amen Ra, Eodoxus, and so on. Put simply, he studied measurements of the sun's shadow-length by ancient astronomers from five continents.

Available records of the position of the sun at observed solstices showed that an exponential curve of recovery had taken place in relation to the earth's axis.

In late 1960, he wrote to Dr. Arthur J. Brandenberger, professor of photogrammetry at Ohio State University. Dodwell stated:

I have been making during the last 26 years an extensive investigation of what we know in astronomy as the secular variation of the obliquity of the ecliptic, and from a study of the available ancient observations of the position of the sun at the solstices during the last three thousand years, I find a curve which, after allowing for all known changes, [shows] a typical exponential curve of recovery of the earth's axis after a sudden change from a former nearly vertical position to an inclination of  $26\frac{1}{2}$  degrees, from which it was returned to an equilibrium at the present inclination of  $23\frac{1}{2}$  degrees during the interval of the succeeding 3,194 years to A.D. 1850.

That is to say, the earth's axis had once been almost upright, but it had suddenly changed to a  $26\frac{1}{2}$  degrees tilt, from

which it had been wobbling back to its present mean tilt of 23½ degrees.

Dodwell's research was confirmed by Dr. Rhodes W. Fairbridge of Columbia University, in *Science Magazine*, May 15, 1970.

Dodwell concluded that something "struck" the earth at that time. He realised that this would result in massive, worldwide flooding and catastrophic geological effects. The date of this event, from his curve of observations, is 2345 BC.

A sudden displacement of the earth's axis would leave the earth wobbling like a disturbed top – and the earth is indeed **WOBBLING** on its axis today.

This sudden change in position would cause the destruction of the *entire surface* of the planet.

If we are to follow the evidence to its logical conclusion, there has been a *total global destruction* in the past.

And with that in mind, I shall now reproduce for you one chapter from my book *The Corpse Came Back*. (<<http://www.beforeus.com/third.php>>)

\* \* \* \* \*

## **How old is the ice?**

"You're kidding!" laughed the lab worker. "Only 4,400 years ago!"

"Yes," repeated Kent. "The surface of this whole planet was remodelled by the Flood only 4,400 years ago."

"No way! In case you don't know, Dr. Hovind, I work at the Denver National Ice Core Laboratory here in Colorado. And we've been taking cores of ice from Greenland and Antarctica. It's dry... very cold...the glaciers are MILES THICK... but their annual growth rings are very THIN."

He paused to observe Kent's reaction. Then he thrust home. "We've measured the ice... and I tell you, man, it's 135,000 years old! Your 4,000 years is a joke."

"I'd like to see your lab," said Kent, calmly.

The next day my friend Dr Kent Hovind met the worker at the lab.

The employee ushered him into the giant freezer which stored the long cores from ice drilling.

“See this core from Greenland?” said the worker. “We drilled down and brought it up from 10,000 feet. See the rings? This core takes us back 135,000 years. You’ll notice the rings along its length... dark – light – dark – light.

“Well, these represent annual rings, because in summer the top layer of snow melts and then re-freezes as clear ice, which shows up dark here. In winter, the snow doesn’t get a chance to melt, so it packs – and shows up as a white layer. These layers of dark – light – dark – light, indicate 135,000 summers and winters.”

Hovind looked him in the eye. “Aren’t you *assuming* those are *annual* rings?”

Let’s step back a few years... to the famous lost squadron.

## The lost squadron

In 1942, during World War II, some war planes landed in Greenland. When the war ended, those planes were left there and forgotten.

In 1990, an aircraft enthusiast came up with the bright idea to find them and fly them off again.

He organized a group and they went searching. As it turned out, they had to use radar, because the planes were under the ice... in fact, so deep under the ice, the men had a hard job finding them. Do you know, that lost squadron had got covered by 263 feet of ice in 48 years!

Let’s do some arithmetic.

- 263 feet divided by 48 years... that’s an ice growth of about 5.5 feet per year.
- Now divide 10,000 feet by 5.5. And you get 1,824 years for ALL of the ice to build up.

We should allow longer for the fact that the deeper ice is pressed into finer layers.

So 4,400 years is no problem!

Note: those planes did *not* sink into the ice, due to pressure on the ice. The ice had grown OVER them.

In April, 1999, Kent visited Bob Cardin at his museum in Middleboro, Kentucky. (<<http://www.thelostsquadron.com>>) Cardin had dug out and was restoring the P-38.

You may be wondering, how did they get that plane out? Ingenious. They had melted a hole down to the airplane, broken it apart and brought up the pieces through the hole.

“When you dug it out,” asked Kent, “did you see any layers of ice... dark – light – dark – light, above the airplane?”

“Yeah, I did, as a matter of fact.”

“How many layers of ice were there?”

“Many hundreds of them.”

## **Hundreds of annual rings in just 48 years?**

“How could there be many hundreds of annual rings in only 48 years?”

“THOSE ARE NOT ANNUAL RINGS. That’s not summer and winter,” replied Cardin. “It’s warm – cold – warm – cold – warm – cold. You can get ten of those in one day.”

And that’s a fact!

Yet, the scientific elite was still calling them *annual rings* in 1998. (See *Scientific American*, February 1998, p.82).

Somebody’s either ignorant... or lying.

I’m worried. The textbooks you read today are textbooks not only about science, but about evolution. They’re trying to sneak evolution in with the science.

Sneaking beer ads in with football matches doesn’t mean beer is football. Sneaking evolution in with the science, doesn’t make it science.

So let’s take a fresh look at the facts.

Is it possible that a Great Flood completely re-fashioned the surface of our planet only 4,350 years ago... really?

## **Glaciers – c.4,000 years**

Field work in the European Alps on the speed of glacier growth and retreat has revealed the fact (surprising to

evolutionists) that numerous glaciers there are no older than 4,000 years. (R.F. Flint, *Glacial Geology and the Pleistocene Epoch*, p.491)

The eminent French geologist A. Cochen de Lapparent noted the expansion rate of today's larger glaciers. For example, Mer de Glace, on Mont Blanc, was moving 50 centimetres a day. The Rhone Glacier would at this rate have taken 2,475 years to expand to its maximum from Valais to Lyons.

De Lapparent then compared the terminal moraines (debris) of several modern glaciers with those left by the Rhone Glacier when it retreated from its maximum expansion. The Rhone Glacier had taken 2,400 years to retreat.

Thus the total period of advance and retreat was 4,875 years.

One could expect that conditions soon after the Flood would hasten the ice build-up and thus *reduce the above time span*.

He also concluded that the entire Ice Age was of very short duration. (Immanuel Velikovsky, *Earth in Upheaval*. London: Sphere Books, Ltd., 1978, p.143)

Researchers Suess and Rubin concluded that in the mountains of the western United States ice advanced only 3,000 years ago.

According to the latest evidence, glaciers may NOT even need thousands of years to build up, nor to disintegrate. New Zealand's Tasman Glacier, for example, is dying within our lifetime. Brent Shears runs his Glacier Explorers cruise on a lake which didn't even exist when he was born. Lake Tasman, the result of the melting of the Tasman Glacier, is not much more than 20 years old. As the glacier recedes, at an ever-increasing rate, it is leaving in its wake the body of water now known as Lake Tasman.

Visiting the site, Stephen Lacey writes of:

...the creaks and groans of melting and movement. It strikes me that what I can hear is the death throes of the glacier as it

drags its body back up the valley... its long claws ripping and tearing at the ground like a great wounded beast. Suddenly I hear a sound like an express train, roaring through a tunnel.

All heads turn towards the direction of the noise, just in time to see a huge chunk of ice break away from the glacial wall and plunge 10 metres into the lake. The splash sends a shock wave through the water and the boat rocks steadily.

That was a serac fall. It was only a small one... I've seen them the size of houses. ("The Big Thaw", *Panorama Inflight Magazine*)

Over the years, on the glaciers around Mount Cook (including Tasman), one hundred people have vanished into crevasses and other spots. Now, as the glaciers retreat, bodies are appearing in the terminals.

In 1998, research by a team at the University of Colorado, in Boulder, revealed that mountain glaciers all over the world are in retreat. It was reported that the European Alps had lost about 50 percent of their ice in the past century, while 14 of 27 glaciers that existed in Spain in 1980 have disappeared. In Africa, the largest glacier on Mount Kenya has shrunk by 8 percent in the past 100 years, while those on Mount Kilimanjaro are only 25 percent as big. (Charles Arthur, in an article in *The Independent*, U.K., June 8, 1999)

A later report from researchers at Zurich University suggested that glaciers in the Alps may have lost up to a tenth of their volume in the hot 2003 summer alone, and the ice now only occupied between half and a third of its volume in 1850.

On May 2nd, 2006, Red China reported that they had just completed a four-year study involving 681 weather stations. The study, according to Professor Dong Guangrong, concluded that the "roof of the world glacier" was melting rapidly at a rate of seven percent per year. (Xinhua News Agency, May 5, 2006, by Zhu Jin, Nanning, Red China)

Such speed of change makes nonsense of the theory that an ice age in the past required many thousands of years to form and disappear.

## **Inland lakes - c.4,000 years**

Today's desert areas show evidence of recent water bodies.

Studies of salt and mineral deposits in numerous glacial lakes that have no outlet to the ocean suggest that none of them is older than 4,000 years. This is based on concentration, area, water composition and evaporation rate. (Velikovsky, pp.148-150)

A study by Claude Jones of the lakes of the Great Basin (from larger glacial lakes) showed that these lakes have existed only about 3,500 years. Van Winkle obtained the same result on Albert and Summer lakes in Oregon, and also Gales on Owen Lake in California.

The end of the Ice Age, therefore, as well as the remains of prehistoric animals found in the lake deposits, apparently goes back no more than 40 centuries ago.

Lake Agassiz, the largest glacial lake in North America, was formed when the ice of North America melted. Study of its sediments shows that its total life span was only a few hundred years.

The American glaciologist Warren Upham expressed surprise at the "geological suddenness of the final melting of the ice-sheet, proved by the brevity of existence of its attendant glacial lakes." (Warren Upham, *The Glacial Lake Agassiz*. 1895, p.240)

Erosion on the shores of Lake Agassiz and the condition of residue indicate that this great change took place no longer than "a few thousand years at the most." (*Ibid.*, p.239)

## **River deltas - 3,600 to 5,000 years**

The deltas of the Nile, the Volga and the Mississippi are all essentially alike and could be of about the same age.

The beginnings of these deltas were made by the enormous rivers whose old high terraces we see far above the present channels.

The Mississippi River brings down mud at the rate of 80,000 tons an hour. From an evaluation of the debris borne to the Mississippi delta as sediment, two scientists, Humphries and Abbot, in 1861, calculated the delta to be 5,000 years old.

Of course, excessive water flow during the early post-Flood centuries would *reduce this time span*.

On the Alaska-British Columbia border is the Bear River, a stream still fed by a melting glacier that enters the Portland Canal.

Concerning the Bear River delta, Immanuel Velikovsky notes:

“On the basis of three earlier accurate surveys made between the years 1909 and 1927, G. Hanson in 1934 calculated with great exactness the annual growth of the delta through deposited sediment. At the present rate of sedimentation the delta is estimated to be ‘only 3600 years old.’” (Velikovsky, p.145)

### **Waterfalls - c.4,000 years**

Rarely has a waterfall either deepened its bed at the top of the falls or shown more than slight erosion into the cliffs. This is evidence of “newness”.

We stand in awe before the mighty Niagara, deafened by the roar of its spectacular plunge. And we say, “What power!”

The rate at which the Niagara Falls are moving upstream indicates that they are no more than a few thousand years old. The rim of the falls has been wearing back from its original precipice to form a gorge. Examination of records shows that since 1764, the falls cut the gorge from Lake Ontario toward Lake Erie at the rate of 5 feet per year. If this wearing down of the rock has continued always at the same rate, 7,000 years would have been sufficient to do the work.

However, closer to the Flood, erosion was much more rapid. Therefore the age of the gorge must be *considerably younger*.

G.F. Flint of Yale, noting “the present rate of recession of the Horseshoe Falls to be, not five feet, but rather 3.8 feet, per year,” calculated the age of the Upper Great Gorge, the uppermost segment of the whole gorge, to be “somewhat more than four thousand years.” (Flint, p.382)



Careful investigation by another scientist, W.A. Johnston, of the Niagara River bed, disclosed that the present channel was cut by the falls less than 4,000 years ago. (Velikovsky, p.176)

### **Coral reefs - c.4,000 years**

Drill samples have confirmed coral reefs to be growing like tree rings.

The Pandora Reef in Queensland, Australia, has grown 15.3 mm (c. ½ inch) per year in 118 years. This was discovered by scientists from the Australian Institute of Marine Science at Cape Ferguson, south of Townsville. (Scientist Peter Isdale of A.I.M.S. reported his findings in *Nature*, vol.310, 16 August, 1984, pp.578-579. Also reported in *Creation Ex Nihilo*, November, 1985, pp.6-9) On this basis the whole 10 meter (32½ foot) thickness of coral that makes up this reef would have taken only about 660 years to grow!

Previously measured growth rates for massive coral colonies elsewhere on the Great Barrier Reef are from 5 millimeters to 25 millimeters per year. At their thickest part (at the edge of the continental shelf) the outer ‘barrier’ reefs are about 55 meters (180 feet) thick. On the basis of an average growth rate of ½ inch per year, the Great Barrier Reef can be no older than 4,320 years. (At 15 mm per year it would be less than 3,700 years old.)

### **Trees - c.4,000 years**

Today’s oldest living things date to the post-Flood times.

**Sequoia:** Some believe that these monsters may enjoy perpetual life, since they seem to be immune to disease and pest attack. Many are over 3,000 years old. A remarkable fact is that these still-living trees seem to be the original trees in their present stands. Edmund Schulmann, writing in *Science*, asks:

Does this mean that shortly preceding 3275 years ago (or 4000 years ago, if John Muir's somewhat doubtful count was correct) **all** the then living giant sequoias were wiped out by some catastrophe? (Edmund Schulmann, “Longevity Under Adversity in Conifers”, *Science*, vol.119, March 26, 1934, p.399)

**Kauri:** Late in the 19<sup>th</sup> century, on New Zealand's Coromandel Peninsula, a giant kauri was felled.

This lordly tree, measuring 76 feet (23.4 meters) in girth and 80 feet (24.6 meters) to the first limb, was discovered in the Mill Creek area, north-east of Thames. It was thousands of years old and still alive - when ruthlessly felled. Legend is that the stump thereafter supported a dance band and a goodly group of dancers.

If reports at the time were true, this would be the oldest of all living kauris. Its age was given as 4,000 years.

**Bristlecone pine:** The oldest bristlecone pine "began growing more than 4,600 years ago," according to Schulmann. (Schulmann, "Bristlecone Pine, Oldest Living Thing", *National Geographic*, vol.113, March, 1958, p.355)

Whitcomb and Morris comment:

Since these, as well as the sequoias and other ancient trees, are still living, it is pertinent to ask why these oldest living things apparently have had time to develop only one generation since they acquired their present stands at some time after the Deluge. There is no record of a tree, or any other living thing, being older than any reasonable date for the Deluge. (John C. Whitcomb and Henry M. Morris, *The Genesis Flood*. Phillipsburg, New Jersey: Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Co., 1986, p.393)

In regard to the 4,600 year figure for the oldest bristlecone pine, it should be stated that tree-ring measurement is not entirely satisfactory. In irregular years there can be two rainy seasons, and this would produce two rings instead of one.

Dr. Clifford Wilson summarises the position:

In fact, under certain conditions a tree may demonstrate more than two rings in a year. Three is not uncommon, as with a tree that grows on a slope. If the water supply runs off rapidly it sometimes gives an artificial wet and dry period three or more times in a year. There are even cases where the opposite sides of a tree have exhibited different numbers of rings. (Clifford Wilson, *The Chariots Still Crash*. Old Tappan, N.J.: Fleming H. Revell and Co., 1976, pp.53,54)

Taking this into account, the oldest bristlecone pines reflect fairly closely the date of the Great Flood, after which trees began once more to take root around the planet.

### **Oldest deserts - c.4,000 years**

The Sahara Desert has what's called a prevailing wind pattern (meaning, the wind usually blows the same way). And this creates a problem. The hot air blowing off the desert "cooks" the trees at the edge and they die. Then that area also becomes desert. (The process is called desertification.)

In 1999 it was announced that the Sahara Desert was about 4,000 years old. This figure was based on desert growth patterns, rate of growth, and so on. (Potsdam Institute for Climate Research, in Germany, July 15, 1999. *Geophysical Research Letters*)

Now, this does raise a question. If the date of this global cataclysm is so much earlier (say 10,000 BC, as some have been speculating), shouldn't there be a bigger desert some place? Why is the biggest desert on earth only 4,000 years old?

As we've noticed, there was a worldwide Flood some 4,350 years ago. It's pretty hard to have a desert under a flood, right? So the biggest desert *should be* – and is – less than 4,350 years old!

These foregoing lines of evidence, taken together, suggest a *colossal disruption to all natural processes all over the planet* about 4,000 years ago. THIS IS DIFFICULT TO IGNORE.

### **Population increase - c.4,000+ years**

What about world population growth statistics? Is it possible that these might also converge to around that time? Let's see.

Statisticians agree that 150 years is a reasonable average to assume for population to double itself, having made allowance for wars, famines, etcetra. Today's global population, if counted back to an original 8 persons, would require slightly less than 30 doublings. By a doubling process every 150 years, this would require about 4,400 years.

Or to calculate by a different method, world population increases at about 2 percent per year. Let's be conservative and halve it to an increase of 1 percent per year.

On average, every 82 years (through wars, diseases and natural disasters), half the population is wiped out.

Using this formula, over 4,350 years, how many people should we have now? - 7.3 billion. How many people do we have? - 6.6 billion.

Using the same formula, the population after 41,000 years would be  $2 \times 10^{89}$  (That's two times ten with 89 zeroes after it!) No standing room!

It can be argued that exceptional events, such as Hitler's massacres, plagues and natural disasters could have decimated populations. But even if HALF THE TOTAL WORLD POPULATION were wiped out, it would extend the historical span by only 150 years.

There have been periods of slow down and of rapid growth, but a continuous increase is evident throughout history.

If mankind has been around for as much as one million years, the population would have doubled only once in every 32,258 years, which is absurd.

All considered, the evidence is a pointer toward recency of the type the Bible suggests. Yes, it is entirely reasonable and scientific, by taking the rate of population increase, per century, and working back from our present world population (6,600,000,000), to trace the entire human race back to eight people some 4,350 years ago. The data is consistent with the proposition that Noah and his family were the only humans alive after a general wipe-out of the human race.

If man was **not** virtually wiped out, there should be a very much greater population across the earth's surface.

This was some of the evidence Roland and the archaeologist Brad Sheed got into, after a brief stroll around his garden. Stepping back inside, Roland found himself sipping... of all things... beetroot juice!

"My wife's a bit of a health freak," whispered Brad. "She says it's good for the blood."

Roland grinned. “It seems I’m bumping into guys like you everywhere. What’s up?” He took another gulp. “Not bad!”

### **Axis recovery - c.4,340+ years**

“Anyway, getting back to Dodwell’s evidence,” said Brad. “South Australian government astronomer George P. Dodwell discovered that the earth’s axis had suddenly changed from upright to a 26½ degrees tilt, from which it had been wobbling back to its present mean tilt of 23½ degrees.

“Dodwell realised that such a sudden change *would result in massive, worldwide flooding* and catastrophic effects. The date of this event, from his curve of observations, is 2345 BC - about 4,350 years ago.

“If you’ve heard anyone say that the earth has tipped over several times since then, don’t believe it. Dodwell’s findings disprove that theory.

“The evidence shows a tipping of the axis in 2345 BC, followed by a measurable corrective wobble. There is a clear pattern of recovery since 2345 BC that has not been disrupted.

“You’re full of surprises,” said Roland. “So Dodwell found the global wipe-out occurred in 2345 BC?”

### ***The very same year as in written chronology***

“But that’s not all. Another source gives us a date.”

“What source?”

“The ancient book of Genesis.”

“You mean *that* book again?” Greg said a little sheepishly. He sensed that the word “fairytale” he had once liked to use, no longer seemed to stick.

“None other,” said Sheed. “It so happens that if you calculate back from King Solomon’s accession year (a fixed date in history), totalling up the preceding biblical chronological records until you arrive at the Great Flood, the date that comes up is...”

“Don’t say it,” said Roland. “It’s that *same year*, 2345 BC!”

“What else? Here you have two independent sources – the scientifically measured disruption of the earth’s axis and the biblical date for the Global Flood – juxtapositioned precisely in time. Is this just an uncanny coincidence – or something else?”

Roland got out a rag and blew his nose. “You could knock me down!”

“So here we have a worldwide Deluge,” said the archaeologist “And the same date for it – from two totally unrelated sources.”

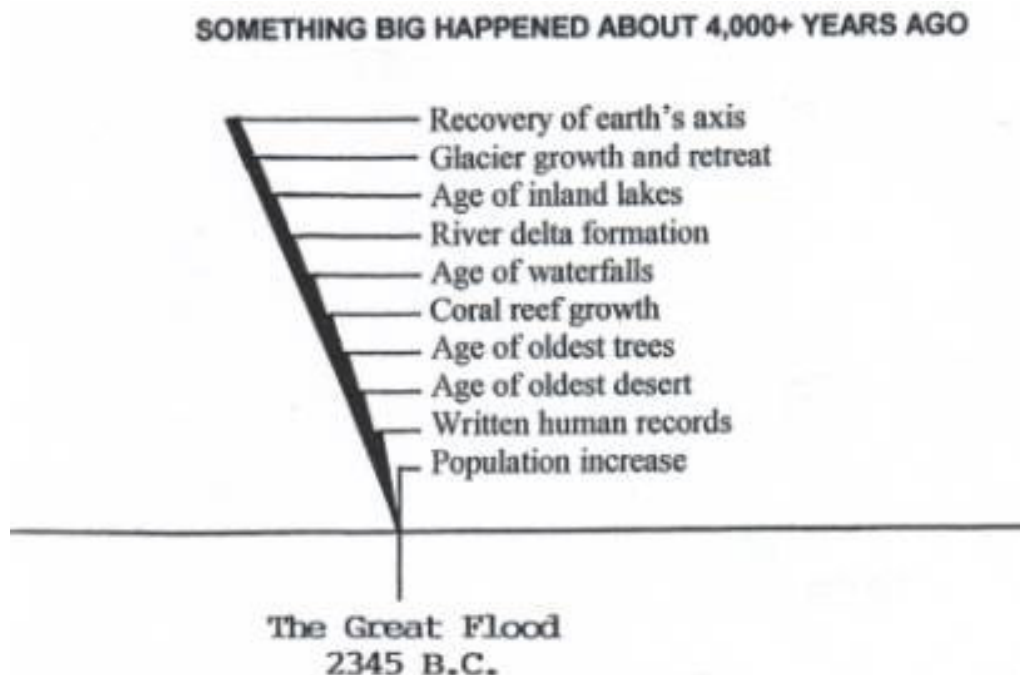
“Another score point for Genesis,” grunted Roland. “I never expected such...”

“Rock solid history, if you ask me,” Brad grinned.

### **Something global happened 4,000+ years ago**

“You see what’s going on here?” replied Brad. “We have the same approximate dating from all parts of the planet.

“More importantly, it comes from all types of clocks, calculations and approaches.”



Roland sniffled. “It could be a coincidence?”

“Think again, man. Isn’t this weight of evidence compelling that the biblical dating is correct? We need to face it. Human history is much, much shorter than established theory has been telling us.”

Roland nodded. “Okay, man. But I’m not so sure about that character Noah.”

Brad looked at him. “Okay. But, since Genesis – extraterrestrials or not – claims to be an authority on *our origins*, we’re stuck with this job to investigate it.”

“Yeah. Validate it or dump it,” replied Roland, gulping down his last drop of red fluid.

“Okay Noah, here we come...”

## 28

### *Independent family trees -*

# NOAH WHO?

“Am I descended from royalty? I’m going to find out.”

The pompous bishop was certain that he came from superior breeding. All he needed was the evidence. What great monarch was his ancestor?

He commissioned British genealogical experts to pore through old records and come up with the answer.

After a few weeks he decided to see how the search was progressing. He mounted his horse and headed for the house of the man in charge of the project.

“Come in!” said the researcher, opening the door for him.

The bishop sat down. “Tell me,” he said, “What have you found out?”

“Well, so far we’ve gone back 600 years through your family tree.”

“Yes...yes...” urged the bishop, impatiently. “What have you discovered?”

“It takes you back to Cornwall.”

“Yes... go on!” said the excited bishop. “Are you getting into some royal blood?”

“It runs back to a band of smugglers.”

The bishop’s face fell.

“We’ll keep tracking it for you.”

“STOP!” he screamed. “I don’t want to know any more.”

Have you ever thought you would like to know more about your ancestry? Perhaps, to some extent, I can help you. It can be traced back at least 4,000 years and you can even discover the names of some of your ancestors in that faraway time. Don’t fear. You come from good stock!

Some of our earliest ancestors DID NOT LOSE their records. And they provide clear, independent confirmation of



the early history we've been discussing. You are about to discover information that the established system has ignored or obscured. As a result, most folk are almost totally uninformed.

Firstly, according to the biblical book of Genesis, those who emerged from the survival vessel after the Great Flood were eight in number - *Noah* and his wife, and their three sons *Japheth*, *Shem* and *Ham*, with their wives.

Secondly, recorders in India, Greece and China, have bequeathed to us the names of their ancestors who survived the Flood –and these include names virtually identical to those given in the book of Genesis: Noah's three sons Ham, Shem and Japheth.

## India

There is an Indian account of the Great Flood. It says Noah (called Satyaurata) had three sons – *Iyapeti* (Japheth?), *Sharma* (Shem?) and *C'harma* (Ham?). To Iyapeti he allotted the regions north of the Himalayas and to Sharma the country of the south.

The father cursed C'harma, who had laughed at him when he was accidentally inebriated with strong liquor made from fermented rice. (*Institutes of Menu*, 1280 BC; J.H. Titcomb, "Ethnic Testimonies to the Pentateuch", *Trans. Victorian Institute*, 6, 1872:249-253) How strikingly close to the biblical account of the cursing of Ham!

## Greece

Homer, in his *Iliad*, shows us that the Greeks likewise recollected three brothers. To each was given a domain when the world was divided. The Greeks trace themselves back to *Japetos*. (Aristophanes, *The Clouds*. Roger's Trans., line 998); John Skinner, *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on Genesis*. Edinburgh: T. and T. Clark, 1930, p.196)

The Hindu *Iyapeti* and the Greek *Japetos* are recognisable as the biblical *Japheth*, son of Noah.

## China

The Chinese ancestor *Nu-Wah* (Noah) survived the destruction of the world by a flood and accomplished the

reconstruction. There followed legendary heroes sometimes referred to as the Three Sovereigns (Noah's three sons?). After these came the Three Dynasties, Hsia, Shang and Chou (held by scholars to initiate the historical period).

The Miautso people of China (who first settled in what is now Kiangsi province, until driven out by the Chinese) are another early people who regard themselves as being descended from Noah's son *Japheth*. They also remember some of the other early patriarchs whose names appear in the biblical record.

When first contacted by the outside world, they were in possession of surprisingly accurate recollections of the Creation and the Great Flood. And some of the close detail of their world history coincides almost identically with the Genesis record.

The accuracy of their oral history owes its purity to the fact that it has been recited in full at weddings, funerals and other public occasions, since the earliest times.

Their names for Shem, Ham and Japheth, Noah's three sons, are *Lo Shen*, *Lo Han* and *Jah-phu*. (Transl. by Edgar Truax of the oral traditions of the Miautso. Bill Cooper, *After the Flood*. Chichester, UK.: New Wine Press, 1995, pp.243-246)

Thus, in regions as distant from each other as Greece, India and China, the names of the Noah's three sons have been preserved, in agreement with the book of Genesis. This points to an historical common point of origin after the Great Flood.

## Armenia

Until early in the 20<sup>th</sup> century, when driven out by the Turks, the Armenians dwelt in the Ararat area of eastern Turkey. The Armenians trace their ancestry to Hiak, the "Son of *Targom [Togarmah]*, a grandson of *Noah*." (Moses Chorenensis, 1.4, sec.9-11; compare Genesis 10:2,3) They claimed to have inhabited the Ararat region since that time. *And Ararat was, according to the book of Genesis, the landing place of Noah's survival vessel.*

## Africa

It is possible that all of Africa, despite the different shades of colour of its native populations, was initially settled by various members of the one Hamitic family. We find the

Yoruba, who are black-skinned, claiming to be descendants of *Nimrod*, grandson of *Noah*. (K.C. Murray, "Nigerian Bronzes: Work from Ife," *Antiquity*, England, March, 1941, p. 76; compare Genesis 10:8)

The Libyans, who are white-skinned, are usually traced back to *Lehabim*, a son of *Mizraim*, son of *Ham*, son of *Noah*. (Compare with Genesis 10:13)

The Egyptians were direct descendants of Mizraim. And the Arabs still call Egypt *Mizr*.

The Hottentots also speak of Noah, remembering him as *Noh* and *Hiagnoh*.

The natives of the Sudan called him *Nuh*.

## South America

In the Amazon region he was known as *Noa*.

## Pacific Ocean

And in Hawaii he was remembered as *Nu-u*.

## Europe

Also, certain European peoples kept an accurate record of their beginnings. They wrote down the names of their founding fathers and continually brought their genealogies up to date with each new generation. And these preserved lists, annals and chronicles give us a surprising link between the early post-Flood era and more modern times.

During more than 25 years, British researcher Bill Cooper amassed astonishing evidence showing how the earliest Europeans recorded their descent from Noah through his son Japheth in meticulously kept records. He investigated in detail these various records and was able to establish good evidence for their antiquity and authenticity. (Bill Cooper, *After the Flood*. Chichester: New Wine Press, 1995)

Of course, the Table of Nations in the book of Genesis originated in the Middle East. But these independent records originated in Europe – and pre-date the arrival of Christianity in Europe, which nullifies the argument that they may have been medieval forgeries.

These records contain the early post-Flood history of Europe. They bear unsuspected and striking marks of authenticity – and contain certain material that can be dated to at least the 12<sup>th</sup> century BC – with important details that no later forger would have been aware of.

The Britons left to posterity a list of the ancestors of the early British kings as they were counted generation by generation, prior to their migration to Britain, and back all the way to *Japheth*, the son of Noah. These pre-migration records are in the form of genealogies and king-lists.

Cooper researched the lists of six separate Anglo-Saxon royal families whose kingdoms were hundreds of miles apart, who spoke different dialects and whose people rarely wandered beyond their own borders unless it was to fight. He discovered that each had a list of ancestral names that just happens to coincide in its earlier portions with that of every other.

And each goes back to Japheth, the ancestor of the Indo European races. For example, “This *Sceaf* [Japheth] was Noah’s son, and he was born in the Ark.” (*Reliq. Antiq.*, p.173)

These pre-migration ancestral lists of the Anglo-Saxon kings would be astonishing records even if they existed on their own. But, in addition, there are the separate genealogies of the pre-Christian Norwegians, Danes and Icelanders. And the genealogies of these diverse nations, in their earlier portions, though strictly individual, are practically identical.

## **The dispersal after 5 generations: agreement**

But there’s more, much more. When we compare the genealogies of the early Irish with those of the Anglo-Saxons, Norwegians, Danes and Icelanders, we see the same ancestral names for the first FIVE generations.

The genealogies show a *mixing* between the various children of Japheth – a uniting into a single people – just as Genesis states their intention was, *before Babel*. But after generation FIVE the pedigrees diverge. And this is remarkable!

You see, it was only *after Babel* that the nations were *separated*. From this moment in time, the pedigrees branched away from each other in an emphatic way.

And in the book of Genesis, the dispersal is likewise depicted as having occurred in the FIFTH generation after the Flood.

To repeat, after the FIFTH generation, the lines of the Irish and the other Celts diversify, exactly in accordance with the historical movement of nations as depicted in Genesis.

## **Two different branches recorded independently – from Japheth**

Something else of interest. The biblical Table of Nations begins thus:

Now these are the generations of the sons of Noah, Shem, Ham, and Japheth: and unto them were sons born after the flood. The sons of Japheth; Gomer, and *Magog*, and Madai, and *Javan*, and Tubal, and Meshech, and Tiras.” (Genesis 10:1,2)

Quite independently, in their records, the Irish Celtic kings – decidedly pagan – traced their origins back through *Magog*, the son of Japheth.

This descent through *Magog* in the early Irish chronicles is in direct contrast to the claims of the Saxons and other European nations, whose genealogies were traced back to *Javan*, another son of Japheth.

Modern archaeology (not genealogy) has confirmed that the early Irish, the early British and some other Europeans were Celts.

But the Saxons were not Celts. These two groups were each from a different line – confirming what their genealogies show.

Celts and Saxons. Both these pagan sources *independently confirm* the biblical record of history.

## **Accurate records kept**

You may wonder, were these ancient Celts serious enough to take the trouble to keep records over long periods of time, that were accurate? Let the scholar Cusack answer:

The Books of Genealogies and Pedigrees form a most important element in Irish pagan history. For social and political reasons, the Irish Celt preserved his genealogical tree with scrupulous precision. The rights of property and the governing power were transmitted with patriarchal exactitude on strict claims of primogeniture, which claims could only be refused under certain conditions defined by law... and in obedience to an ancient law, established long before the introduction of Christianity, all the provincial records, as well as those of the various chieftains, were required to be furnished every third year to the convocation at Tara, where they were compared and corrected. (M.F. Cusack, *The Illustrated History of Ireland*. 1868. Published in facsimile by Bracken Books, London, 1987)

It is impossible to see how anyone could have contrived even a minor alteration to their pedigree without every one else becoming immediately aware of the fact.

These records may be relied upon, therefore, to be as accurate as any record can be. (See Irish genealogy, Appendix D)

## **Worldwide agreement with the Genesis account**

So we are faced with this astonishing fact: that so many peoples from diverse cultures actually recorded their descent from the patriarchs of the biblical book of Genesis long before they could have heard of the Bible or have been taught its contents!

Here is a question for the skeptic who asserts that the biblical characters are fictitious. What knowledge could pagan Saxons (and all the other races) have had of supposedly non-existent biblical characters?

Thus, in regions as far distant from each other as Greece, India, China, Britain, Ireland, Denmark, Norway and Iceland,

the name of Japheth the son of Noah has been preserved, in agreement with the Hebrew book of Genesis.

This points to an historical common point of origin after the Great Flood.

On the basis of the *number of generations listed* in the preserved genealogies, each genealogy would go back 4,000 to 5,000 years.

All of these sources differ from one another in many and various points – which rules out inter-dependency or copying. But they also agree on many independent points – which demonstrates the historicity of the patriarchs who are listed.

To discover these biblical patriarchs listed amongst such diverse and independent sources – what should this tell us?

The historicity of many other characters from the ancient world is accepted on much less evidence than this – often merely upon the single appearance of a name.

Why have we, as a society, forgotten these things?

Because of the current evolution theory, we have developed collective amnesia. Although in the past 150 years we've been trying to deny it, our ancestors have kept clear records of our pedigree.

What precious information this is!

## **All nations included**

Indications are that the descendants of *Japheth* divided into two major bodies. One of these comprised the ancestors of the Indians and Persians, whereas from the second there issued eventually the nations of Europe. Thus the word “Indo-European” sums up the group as a whole.

The descendants of Noah's second son *Shem* comprised the Arabs, the Hebrews and the ancient Assyrians and Babylonians.

And from the other son *Ham* descended ultimately the Negroid and Mongoloid races, the so-called coloured races.

This dividing of the whole human race into three families in a way that does not concord with modern concepts of racial

groupings, is not thereby discredited, but shown to be based upon a much clearer insight into the framework of history.

## **All races linked back to Noah**

### ***(a) The Indo-Europeans***

We have noted that the Indo-European races trace their ancestry back to Noah, through *Japheth*.

### ***(b) The Semites***

Likewise, the Semitic races trace their ancestry back to Noah through *Shem*. The Hebrews as well as the Arabs.

### ***(c) The Negroids and Mongoloids***

And we noted that, among the coloured races, there are people in Africa who trace their ancestry back to Noah through Nimrod, son of Cush, son of *Ham*. Also Noah, Ham's father, is remembered under variations of the same name. Likewise, the Chinese, the native Americans and the Hawaiians have remembered their ancestor Noah.

Here we have ***all three branches of the human race tracing their ancestry to the same family*** - Noah and his family, who survived the Great Flood.

Now we shall investigate the post-Flood event that gave rise to the Sumerian culture with its "extraterrestrial" texts.

**NOTE:** If our story appears to be deviating from UFO aliens for a time, please be patient, because we must necessarily establish the comparative age of certain documents that are an essential part of the UFO drama.



## 29

*The language break-up incident -*

# THE BATTLE OF DRIPPING GARMENTS

You can recapture past events from place names. Did you know that?

This story will illustrate what I mean.

The fortified Maori settlement of Totara Pa in New Zealand sat on the sea coast, on a hill which dropped down on three sides.

In 1819, it was besieged by the forces of the Maori chief Hongi Hika. This man wanted to be king of New Zealand. His advantage was that he had acquired a large army and English firearms. The defenders possessed only clubs as weapons.

His miscalculation: Totara's impregnable defences - steep approach banks and two rows of palisades with a deep trench in between. His bullets simply went into the air.

Hongi soon realised his only option was to starve out the inhabitants. So began a lengthy siege.

The time came when the food and water within the citadel was gone. Morale ebbed. Clearly the end was in sight.

In such an hour, some fertile brain concocted a plan. Desperate, mind you, but it just could work.

Along the southern tip of the fortress ran a small stream ending in a miniature waterfall and a pool of clear, cold water. Until the siege, this had supplied Totara.

So now 80 of the bravest defenders wrapped themselves in flax mats (which rendered them bullet-proof), took up their clubs and headed for the south-west entrance.

With a defiant cry they burst out through the enemy. Dashing toward the waterhole, they battled every step of the way through furious enemy gunfire. Many fell. Those who

reached the pool plunged into it, soaked up all the water they could, then, in their dripping garments, struggled back through the rain of bullets.

A large number failed to return. But those who did manage to stagger into the citadel were soon wringing out the dripping garments into containers and into the parched mouths of their women and children.

Such a heroic display was too much for the invaders. They packed up their weaponry and headed off.

Thus was fought the Battle of Dripping Garments. Totara Pa became the Fortress of Dripping Garments.

### **Place names: clues to past events**

Place names, you see, can give valuable clues for events in history... ancient history as well.

Archaeologist Nelson Glueck observed that the most ancient geographical names are faithfully reflected in modern designations.

For example, Eriha is the word Jericho; Beisan is old Bethshan, and so on.

When an explorer or archaeologist is searching for an ancient site it is crucial for him to pay attention to the modern place names in the area he is searching.

We can follow the path of Alexander the Great as he conquered the East by observing the place names that still exist all the way from Macedonia to India. These place names capture moments of history 2,300 years ago.

Place names go back still further.

### **Before the Egyptians and Phoenicians**

There is abundant evidence that before the Phoenicians and Egyptians travelled the world, certain key names and words had already been taken throughout the world.

Although these names and words have undergone change, they can still be recognised.

They are found in the native names of rivers and mountains, of volcanoes, waterfalls, lakes, islands, regions, towns and cities.

They are found also in tribal names, in mythological and deified names, and the names for animals, birds, fish, flowers, trees, foods and parts of the body.

## **Two human dispersals**

These KEY WORDS, blended into many combinations in many languages, can be identified in TWO DISTINCT GROUPS.

Long term studies by Irish etymologist John Philip Cohane have established that there were anciently TWO MAJOR DISPERSALS of people from the Middle East, of root words.

He says:

If one puts a charted overlay containing only the first group of names on top of a map of the world and then puts on top of that another charted overlay containing only the second group of names, the most logical conclusion is that, in prehistoric times, instead of one there were two dispersions from the Mediterranean. (John Philip Cohane, *The Key*. New York: Crown Publishers, Inc., 1970)

## **The first dispersal**

Words of the first group are found in all parts of the world.

The FIRST dispersal covered the “whole world” in a very short time. This included people who were mapping the planet.

If we were to trace the footsteps of that first migration wave, we would discover that it has left its traces in just ONE UNIVERSAL LANGUAGE.

Some very valuable work into the evidence for this “First Tongue” has been undertaken by researchers like Gary Vey of Viewzone.com and others.

## **One original language**

The fact that the whole world once spoke the same language survives in the racial memory of many peoples.

A fragmentary Sumerian tablet copied by the Oxford cuneiformist Oliver Gurney speaks of a time when “the whole universe” spoke “in one tongue.”

The epic tale *Enmerker and the Lord of Araita*, published by Professor S.N. Kramer, of the University of Pennsylvania, acknowledges that all mankind spoke one and the same language until Enki, the Sumerian god of wisdom, confounded their speech.

The idea that there was a time when all men spoke the same language is found also in ancient Egyptian and Indian writings.

Even the *Popul Vuh*, a book of the Central American Maya, records that “those who gazed at the rising of the sun [the ancestors who formerly lived eastward of the Americas]... had but one language... before going west.”

And the book of Genesis records that “all the earth was of one language, and of one speech.” (Genesis 11:1)

Amazing evidence of this “First Tongue” is documented in my book *The Corpse Came Back*, chapter 8. (<http://www.beforeus.com/third.php>)

## **The second dispersal**

By contrast, the second migration wave left its traces in MANY DIFFERENT LANGUAGES. This was a widespread, though more limited dispersal.

This SECOND dispersal was heavily concentrated in this limited area of the world: the Mediterranean, Africa and parts of Asia, “petering out along the eastern coast of the Americas in one direction (and) in Japan, the Philippines, Australia and New Zealand in the other direction.” (*Ibid*)

Thus two ancient dispersions of people have been identified and recorded.

This amazing fact, discovered only in our time, reminds us of an intriguing claim made in the biblical book of Genesis.

It says that there were TWO DISPERSALS after the Great Flood.

1. An initial rapid dispersal from what is today eastern Turkey. It claims that at this time there was one language over “the whole earth”.

2. Later, a sudden language disturbance in Mesopotamia resulted in the inhabitants being scattered “abroad upon the face of all the earth.” So says the book of Genesis.

And that’s precisely what archaeology is now discovering!

## **The memory of the tower from which originated the dispersion of languages**

Linked with the Flood is the memory that

- (a) everyone spoke *a single language at first*, that
- (b) a great tower was built, and
- (c) from thence the people were scattered to the ends of the earth.

Again, *all three branches* of the human race recall this.

## **The Tower of Babel**

The native Mexican chronicler, Ixtilxochitl, in his *Relaciones*, records an ancient Toltec tradition that the descendants of the Flood survivors built a “zacuali” (tower) of great height. After this, their tongues became confused and, not understanding one another, they went to different parts of the world. The 7 families who spoke the Toltec language set out for the New World. They wandered 104 years over large extents of land and water. Finally they arrived at Huehue Tlapallan in the year One Flint, 520 years after the Flood.

Other peoples, such as the Chaldeans, the Hindus and the Chiapa of the Americas, to name a few, were discovered with a tradition which not only agrees with the Genesis account of the manner in which Babel was built, but with the confusion of tongues and the subsequent dispersal.

A clay tablet has been unearthed in Mesopotamia, which reads:

*The erection of this tower highly offended the gods. In a night they [threw down] what man had built, and impeded*

*their progress. They were scattered abroad, and their speech was strange.* (Robert T. Boyd, *Tells, Tombs and Treasures. A Pictorial Guide to Biblical Archaeology.* Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Book House, 1969)

From ancient Sumer comes a passage in *Enmerkar and the Lord of Aratta*:

*The whole universe, the people in unison, To Enlil in one tongue gave praise.* (S.N. Kramer, *The Sumerians*, 1970, pp.284-5)

While “Enlil” was the “god” to whom “the whole universe” gave praise, another ancient Sumerian text says it was “Enki” (sometimes called “the son of Enlil”) (*Larousse World Mythology*, 1965, p.58) who was responsible for the “confounding of the languages”:

*Enki... Changed the speech in their mouths/brought contention into it/Into the speech of man that [until then] had been one.* (G.H. Livingstone, *The Pentateuch in its Cultural Environment*, 1974, p.144)

Berosus, the Babylonian historian of the 3<sup>rd</sup> century BC, in his history of mankind, noted that the “first inhabitants of the land, glorying in their own strength... undertook to raise a tower whose ‘top should reach the sky.’ But the tower was overturned by the gods and heavy winds, ‘and the gods introduced a diversity of tongues among men, who till that time had all spoken the same language.’

Even the Fijians recorded a tradition of a building just like the Tower of Babel.

There are also Australian Aboriginal tribal legends which appear to be corrupted memories of those events up to, and including, the time they separated from the other peoples. These legends include the “dispersion of the tongues” which occurred at Babel.

In his writings, the Greek historian Hestaeus speaks of “olden traditions” that the people who escaped the Deluge came

to *Senaar* [compare this with the biblical “*Shinar*”] but were driven away from there by a diversity of tongues.

Likewise, Alexander Polyhistor (1st century BC historian) writes that all men formerly spoke the same tongue. Some of them undertook to erect a large and lofty tower. But the chief god confounded their plans by sending a whirlwind – and each tribe received a new language.

So we discover that the Babel explanation of languages is not just some biblical fairytale. This ancient event has been burnt into the racial memory of mankind as a whole.

## **No evolution of language**

The question is often asked, How did human speech come about in the first place? Are there any simple primitive languages that could be a transition from animal speech?

You see, according to evolution theory, human languages are developing from meaningless sounds to ever more perfect languages.

All right, then. If the origin of man, including his ability to speak, occurred by evolution, then may I ask this question: Why are the most **HIGHLY STRUCTURED AND COMPLEX** languages found among the most primitive tribes?

Why is there no such thing as a primitive language?

The evolutionary idea of **SIMPLE** languages among primitive people does not coincide with fact.

Linguists have found *the most* highly constructed, complex and *sophisticated languages* among the most backward and culturally “*primitive*” tribes. Most of them are actually more complicated in grammar than the tongues spoken by civilised people.

That’s right. The languages of even the most ‘primitive’ tribes are extremely complex – and are removed by a great gulf from the chatterings of the most ‘advanced’ apes, as well as other animals.

In every culture on this planet, the language is complex.

All animal sounds are more or less on the same level of complexity. Human speech is absolutely distinct from animal

communication. And the ability to articulate and communicate even abstract concepts is the basic aspect of human culture.

Noam Chomsky, a leading linguist of the 20<sup>th</sup> century, has indicated that human language and animal vocables are so different, they are not even comparable entities. (Henry Hiebert, *Evolution: Its Collapse in View?* Beaverlodge, Alberta: Horizon House Publishers, 1979, p.63)

No society is known at any point in history which did not have a fully developed language. (“*Encyclopaedia Britannica*”, 15<sup>th</sup> ed., Macrop., vol.19, p.1033).

We find no support at all for any kind of evolutionary development of language. There is NO EVIDENCE nor any EXPLANATION for such an assumed evolution of language.

Certainly there has been much change, but ***not in a simple-to-complex sequence.***

If anything, the evidence clearly shows that languages have become simplified out of a more complex past. We see indications of deterioration after a previous higher level which hints at catastrophic events.

In fact, scholars who know ***modern*** languages (modern Hebrew, Greek, Arabic and neolatinic, etc) ***as well as*** those same languages’ ***ancient classical counterparts***, state that ***the ancient language was the most perfect.***

Linguistic authority Suzette H. Elgin, for example, assures us:

The most ancient languages for which we have written texts – Sanskrit, for example – are often far more intricate and complicated in their grammatical forms than many modern languages. (Suzette H. Elgin, *What is Linguistics*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall Inc., 1973)

In the light of these findings, may I ask, How does language development fit into the “evolutionary model”? How did the diversity and complexity of new languages help humans in their struggle for the “survival of the fittest”?

It didn’t and it doesn’t. Evolution cannot account for one language, much less hundreds of languages, in any meaningful manner.



I mean, who had time to formulate grammar when we were all supposedly running around simply trying to survive the next few minutes of life?

## **Sumerians arise *after* this dispersal**

The importance of the Babel incident is that it provides us with a time peg for the Sumerian texts. Sitchin has been claiming those texts are older than they really are. So how old are the Sumerian texts? When did the Sumerians arise? Not until ***after this language break-up incident.***

It was as a consequence of the sudden confusion of languages that the second dispersal occurred. The Sumerian culture sprang up in Mesopotamia (close to the Babel incident) soon after. For more comprehensive evidence of this, I refer you to my book *The Corpse Came Back*, ch. 13. (<http://www.beforeus.com/third.php>)

In the ancient book of Jasher, there's an intriguing notation concerning a man by the name of Peleg. This book was apparently written while the events of Peleg's life were still fairly recent. It records that "***in his days the sons of men were divided.***" (*The Book of Jasher*. New York: M.M. Noah and A.S. Gould, 1840. Trans. 1830, ch.7 v.19)

Peleg is also mentioned in the biblical chronology, where it is stated that he was born in the 101<sup>st</sup> year after the Flood, that is, in 2244 BC. It would be fair to conclude that the dispersion from Babel occurred somewhere around this time. The Flood: 2345 BC. Peleg: 2244 BC.

Since the ***Sumerian civilization*** did not spring up until ***after this event***, this would give us an approximate dating for the Sumerian texts of no earlier than 2244 BC, and probably some time later. It is important to bear this in mind, in view of attempts to claim superiority for the Sumerian "extraterrestrial" document, on the basis of age.

## **Why claims of an earlier history?**

Now, you may be wondering, If all races descended from this common Flood ancestry (and most of them from the Babel

language confusion of 2244 BC), then why do some cultures appear to show a much longer history for themselves?

That's a pertinent question. So in the next three chapters we shall go searching for the answer...

**NOTE:** If our story appears to be deviating from UFO aliens for a time, please be patient, because we must necessarily establish the comparative age of certain documents that are an essential part of the UFO drama.

# 30

## *Dating shocks -*

# HISTORY ARTIFICIALLY LENGTHENED

“I can see now,” said Roland, “that the evidence does point to ALL races on the earth having descended from a common ancestor 4,000 to 5,000 years ago. This being so, then why do people such as the Maya, the Egyptians and Babylonians speak of longer past ages?”

He emptied his glass. “And while we’re at it,” he added, “what about the 9600 BC date for the destruction of Atlantis?”

“Good questions,” said Brad Sheed.

\* \* \* \* \*

Several centuries had passed since the devastation of the Great Flood.

The new population multiplied fast and spread rapidly across the globe.

Within just two centuries after the Deluge, they had resettled in lands from northern Europe and Spain to Ethiopia and Iran.

However, those on the furthest fringes of the great migration found themselves, in their new environments, struggling to survive.

Hamitic pioneers (Mongoloid and Negroid in particular) blazed trails and opened up territories in every habitable part of the earth. At a basic level they made maximum use of the raw materials and resources of each locality.

This seems to have been done under pressure, since in a remarkably short time the descendants of Ham had established beachheads of settlement in every part of the world.

Ham's contribution is essentially practical – technological. Wherever they went, they seem to have had a remarkable skill in adapting local raw materials for survival.

They invented most of the world's basic technology, that the Indo-Europeans subsequently adopted and refined. In fact, generally speaking, and with few exceptions, the inventions developed in the Western world owe their original inspiration to the prior, basic technology of the Negroid or Mongoloid cultures.

Centuries later, spreading at a more leisurely rate, Japheth's descendants settled slowly into the areas opened up by Ham's descendants.

### **Focused on practical needs**

Among the tribes descended from Ham were the Sumerians, the Egyptians and the American tribes, such as the Maya.

The Sumerians were an entirely practical people, with *no urge to search for truth for its own sake*. They sought for no underlying principles, and undertook no experiments for verification. (Samuel M. Kramer, *From the Tablets of Sumer*. Indian Hills: Falcon's Wing Press, 1956, pp. xviii, 6, 32, 58, 59) Their mathematics arose out of a practical need, that is, business records and transactions.

Likewise, in Egypt, geometry was developed to satisfy entirely practical needs – being required originally to measure the land in order to re-establish property boundaries obscured each year by the flooding Nile. (Philip E.B. Jourdain, "The Nature of Mathematics," in *The World of Mathematics*, Vol. 1, ed. By James R. Newman. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1965, pp. 10-13)

All the evidence goes to show that the Egyptians were severely practical. They sought to learn, not from any joy in the attainment of truth for its own sake, but simply for solving everyday problems. (James Baikie, *The Story of the Pharaohs*. London: Black, 1908, p. 59) As practical men, they were *not given to abstract enquiries*.

The truth for its own sake, as an intellectual treasure, was *not* of greatest priority. It is important to understand this, when considering the length of history that each claimed.

For the Egyptians and Sumerians (both Hamitic nations), *keeping a strict record of their beginnings was not a practical need.*

And this can be said of the Hamitic nations in general, whether they be Oriental, American, or African.

### **A mythological, exaggerated history took over**

Although they retained their national or tribal identities, even so, they soon lost all trace and memory of their own beginnings – and *went on to invent fantastic accounts of how they came to be.*

It's amazing, but true. This mythological invention emerged early and grew rapidly in many cultures.

The Egyptians, to cite one example, extended their genealogies to absolutely incredible lengths. *National pride* led them to belittle their enemies and to *magnify their own age* upon earth.

Perhaps you weren't aware of this before. It is a fact that their true histories were obscured beyond all recognition.

We find Josephus complaining that this had happened even to the Greeks of his day. And he lamented that by obscuring their own history, they had obscured the histories of other nations also. (Flavius Josephus, *Against Apion*. From *Josephus's Complete Works*. Tr. William Whiston. Pickering and Inglis, 1981, pp.607-636)

### **The Mayan cycles theory**

The origin of the Mayan theory of *long cycles* can be traced back to Shinar in Mesopotamia around 2000 BC. And we shall detail this development in Book 3 of this series.

From a simple observation of two successive worlds (pre-Flood and post-Flood), something that was a FACT, they began to *speculate beyond what they saw*, until they had developed a theory of an unlimited succession of new worlds and their destructions.

## Confused blending of fact and theory

These people (originally from Babel on the plain of Shinar - see the previous chapter) inherited, along with all early civilizations, a scientific and technological culture, which included a knowledge of astronomy.

As they later migrated into Asia, the Americas and elsewhere, they blended their scientific prowess with their philosophies - to juggle and refine their theories. One such theory that emerged was the idea of cyclical destructions and rebirths.

The Maya in particular excelled in mathematics and astronomy. They studied the motions of the earth, moon, planets and sun in their cyclical orbits. But alongside this, they began to *speculate* a cyclic history of events on earth based upon this concept of cycles.

The Mayan solar calendar comprised 52-year increments composed into circles. The “circle of The Destroyer” was calculated as 104 cycles of 52-years, that is, 5408 years.

Concerning these Mayan cycles, there are two things that need to be said.

Firstly, with regard to astronomical calculations, it seems the Maya seldom made a mistake. Indeed, their calendar was more accurate than ours.

Secondly, ‘the circle of the Destroyer’ concept was initially theorised around 2000 BC in the Babel region of Mesopotamia, the center from which the Maya and others later migrated. With their astronomical calendar, the Maya refined this idea to fit into their calendar. But, unlike their calendar, which was based on FACT and observation, ‘the circle of the Destroyer’ theory was based *not* upon observation nor from any evidence. It was *no more than a philosophical theory*.

Here was an *imagined* cosmic history, which was based not on evidence but on philosophy.

By contrast, how more substantial is the evidence for events such as the Great Flood!

## Dating of Atlantis

One might ask also about the dating of Atlantis. The truth is, all we have for Atlantis is a legend. Yet, where is smoke, there is fire. Legends are usually based on a core of truth, even if the final story becomes garbled or embellished.

So two possibilities are worth noting, in regard to Atlantis.

Firstly, there are some similarities between the story of Atlantis and what we know concerning the pre-Flood world. It is possible that this story is a recollection of the highly technological world that was destroyed during the Great Flood.

Secondly, since the tectonic upheavals of the Flood there have been some violent readjustments as the earth's crust settles back to equilibrium. Such releases of stress have included some significant vertical droppings or raisings of land. (See *The Corpse Came Back*, chapter 19. <<http://www.beforeus.com/third.php>>) It is quite reasonable, therefore, to presume Atlantis to have been a real location which suffered submersion since the Flood.

As to the timing of the event, it has been suggested that Plato's account of Atlantis referred to a calendar period of 9000 time increments, which, according to another Greek writing were months, not years as translated in so many documents. Several astronomers have also supported the *month* interpretation for the 9000 number.

This would fit comparatively well with geological events presumed to have occurred in the Mediterranean region around 1500 BC. It has been suggested by some researchers that details in the Atlantis story are consistent with the geography of nations in the Mediterranean area around that time. Not understanding this fact could well have been why Plato located the event outside the Pillars of Hercules, in the Atlantic Ocean. For further information on this, see Appendix B.

## Datings of other nations pegged to Egyptian chronology

It is universally agreed amongst reputable historians of antiquity, that Egyptian chronology is the yardstick by which the histories of the other nations (such as the Babylonians,

Assyrians, Palestinians, Greeks and Hittites) are largely measured and brought into alignment with one another.

This being so, it is natural to ask, are the foundations of conventional Egyptian history able to sustain the elaborate structure being raised upon them?

The answer is a resounding NO!

### **Egyptian dates *before* the Flood?**

Now brace yourself for a shock. Our current conjectured history of Egypt is probably 600 to 800 years too long!

Some six to eight supposed “dynasties” never existed!

In case you didn’t know, inscriptions we dig up don’t carry a date, nor a ruler’s sequence number. It means we can easily get our dates wrong, even by hundreds of years.

The problem began in the early days of Egyptology. Modern archaeologists were giving highly exaggerated datings for the Egyptian dynasties. Dates like 6000 BC... 4000 BC.

Scholars built up a system of Egyptian dating that went back thousands of years earlier than is possible if one accepts the chronology in the *Intelligence Report*. Clearly one party was wrong – either the modern scholars (with their longer system), or the Bible (with its shorter dating system).

So why were the longer dates for Egypt accepted?

Simply because all the listed kings were placed one after another, in succession. This added thousands of extra years to Egyptian history.

These lists of pharaohs had been provided by 3<sup>rd</sup> century BC Egyptian priest Manetho in his *Aegyptica*.

### **Manetho’s exaggerated time period**

Herodotus vouches for the fact that at one time there were no fewer than 12 kings of Egypt reigning at the same time. However, Manetho made no allusion to this (Wilkinson, *Egyptians*, vol. I, p. 148), but rather made his Thinite, Memphite and Diospolitan dynasties of kings, and a long list of other dynasties, all successive!



The duration of all these dynasties, commencing with Menes, is so long, it passes all rational belief.

Virtually all of the ancient kingdoms – Egyptian, Babylonian, Phrygian, and so on - were *fond of exaggerating their antiquity* in competition with each other. It has been suggested that Manetho, who recorded Egyptian king-lists, was probably in competition with the contemporary Babylonian historian Berossus to exaggerate the antiquity of their respective nations.

In Egypt the method was to add up the number of years in the reigns of all the kings on their lists (even though several kings had reigned simultaneously in different parts of Egypt) and tot them all up to wildly inaccurate figures.

So when the Greek historian Herodotus visited Egypt around 450 BC, he was given by this method an authoritative date of 12,040 BC for the founding of Egyptian civilization.

Fast forward to our day...and the story gets interesting. It has a direct bearing on the 6,000 year claims for those “extraterrestrial” Sumerian texts...

**NOTE:** If our story appears to be deviating from UFO aliens for a time, please be patient, because we must necessarily establish the comparative age of certain documents that are an essential part of the UFO drama.

# 31

## *Dating shocks-*

# SCHOLARS IN CONFUSION

If you go outside tonight and scan the heavens, you may notice one star standing out brighter than the rest.

Do you know its name? That's right, Sirius. It is the brightest of the stars as seen from earth. And that blazing orb so far away in space has played a fascinating role in dating events on earth.

And this – believe it or not – has led to the sabotage of ancient documents... all in the name of “science”.

It may be dawning on you by now that there is a WAR being waged on this planet. It is a battle to the death between the TRUTH and an entrenched FAIRYTALE.

The *dating* of events is a *key part* of this contest.

In earlier chapters we have touched on some overwhelming evidence for a global Deluge which altered the surface of the whole earth about 4,350 years ago.

Yet, a popular notion is that Egypt had a continuous and uninterrupted civilization before and after this period. So throw out the worldwide Flood. It never happened. Or, not in 2345 BC.

Well, if you didn't know, the present chronology of Egypt is largely the product of Eduard Meyer of the Berlin School of Egyptology. (E. Meyer, *Aegyptische Chronologie, Philosophische und historische Abhandlungen der Koeniglich preussischen Akad. Der Wiss.* Berlin, 1904)

Meyer realised that the lists of pharaohs provided by the ancient chronologer Manetho were greatly exaggerated. It certainly did not correlate with the more precise information of the monuments.

The Egyptians did not keep clear records of eclipses and other astronomical events that could help in establishing a precise chronology.

But Meyer read that the Roman author, Censorinus (3<sup>rd</sup> century AD) had recorded that a Great Sothic Year had concluded in 140 AD. (Censorinus, *De die Natali Liber ad Q. Caerellium*, trans. D. Nisard. Paris: Hildesheim, 1965)

The Sothic Cycle was the number of years it took the star Sirius to pass from one heliacal rising (that is, first visible rising of the star before dawn) on New Year's Day to another such rising. This cycle took 1460 years.

So with 140 AD as a starting point, Meyer calculated backwards (using multiples of 1460), and concluded that Sothic cycles must have commenced in 1320 BC, in 2780 BC and in 4240 BC. This latter date of 4240 BC, Meyer called the first fixed date in history of which one could be absolutely certain... based upon the notion (presumed from some Egyptian texts) that the ancient Egyptians counted time by the heliacal rising of the star Sirius.

## Universities behind the times

However, the most reliable archaeoastronomers today (for example, B. Schaeffer, "Predicting Heliacal risings and Settings", *Sky and Telescope*, September, 1985, pp. 53-55; R. Purrington, "Heliacal Rising and Setting: Quantitative Aspects", *Archaeoastronomy* No 12, JHA, xix, 1988, S72-75) have abandoned this theory, and the Egyptologists have abandoned Meyer's date of 4240 BC in favour of another date, 3100 BC.

Despite this, it is Meyer's Sothic chronology of Egypt, basically, that is still the one found in the text books of colleges and universities. Meyer rearranged Manetho's lists of Pharaohs according to the Sothic rule. It was thought that he had thereby created so mathematically precise a history of Egypt that Egyptologists still claim to be able to pinpoint the very day certain events occurred, back as far as the 15<sup>th</sup> century BC. They believe these events to be "astronomically fixed".

The problem is that, whilst various Classical texts do make allusion to the Great Sothic Year, the Egyptian documents that refer to Sirius never do. The truth of the matter is that there is not the tiniest shred of evidence from Egypt to suggest that the Egyptians ever computed calendrically according to the Great Year of Sothis.

## 5 ways we have been misled

Here are some facts of which early Egyptologists were not aware:

### **Problem 1:**

Rulers were known by a title, as well as by a personal name. For example, it has now been discovered that Rameses II was not Rameses II, at all! He was most probably Rameses XLII – that is, the 42<sup>nd</sup> ruler called Rameses, which was rather a title, like Pharaoh. (Charles V. Taylor, *Creation Ex Nihilo*, September-November, 1987, p.9)

So where a ruler's title and name both appeared, Egyptologists had listed them separately, as though they were different pharaohs. Correcting this would shorten the list.

### **Problem 2:**

Then it was discovered that pharaohs regularly had as many as five, and even more, names. The Egyptologists had taken these and listed them one after another.

So, again, the chronology had to be shortened.

### **Problem 3:**

It was also discovered that other listed pharaohs ruled at the same time over different parts of Egypt. (*Ibid.*) Rulers sometimes appointed others as co-regent during their lifetime. This means that two “names” ruled concurrently.

Egyptologists have been adding many of these names on to a long list of what they thought were “consecutive” reigns.

What a mix-up! The dating was thrown into chaos. More shortening!

With such discoveries, the span of Egyptian history had to be progressively reduced. So that today it is commonly believed that Egyptian civilization began about 3000 BC.

Now take a deep breath. It turns out that even this is too long!

### **Problem 4:**

To add fuel to the fire, linguistic expert and university lecturer Edo Nyland of Canada has recently decoded and translated some 120 of the pharaohs' names. These appear

in his book *Linguistic Archaeology*. In a personal communication to the author, Ed reported:

“In doing my research I came upon some disturbing mistranslations by the ‘specialists’. I found two early pharaohs whose names could not possibly be correct, because instead of names, they were curses aimed at intruders to the tomb. When I pointed this out to an archaeologist, I was brushed off with: ‘All pharaohs’ names have been properly translated, the book is closed on that subject’”.

Do you see? If some pharaohs were *not* really pharaohs at all, but merely curses...

More shortening of the chronology? Oh, boy! But that’s not all!

### **Problem 5:**

Comparing documents on a generation-by-generation basis, Immanuel Velikovsky matched the history of Egypt with those of Babylon, Assyria, Israel, Greece and Persia, from roughly 1400 BC to about 330 BC.

His conclusion was startling: events of Egyptian history are described twice - and 600 years later they are repeated exactly, to the detail.

## **Boycott threat**

Velikovsky’s findings evoked an uproar.

His original publisher was threatened by astronomers and professors. They warned that if his books were published, there would be a boycott of the publisher's standard textbooks!

## **So popular history is too long**

The mistake lies not with history, but with the historians. This has led to a mistaken increase in the total year count.

As a result, dates are commonly accepted which ante-date the Flood. For example, the Great Pyramid construction is usually put at 2650 BC.

## **“Scholars” sabotage ancient documents**

Now at this point the *Turin Papyrus* enters the picture. This ancient document was prepared during the late 18<sup>th</sup> Dynasty of the Pharaohs and included lists of all the kings of every dynasty of ancient Egypt through to the 18<sup>th</sup> Dynasty.

This papyrus was found during a temple excavation in the 19<sup>th</sup> century. The King of Sardinia carefully preserved it and entrusted it to some “scholars” at Turin for translation. It arrived in perfect condition, but then something went wrong. The “scholars” destroyed or hid most of it. Why would scholars do that? Horror of horrors, it proved the “LONG dynastic” history of Egypt to be UNTRUE! *So to “explain” the “changed condition” of the papyrus, they accused the King of Sardinia of sending it “unwrapped”.*

The Palermo Stone contained a similar list. And while many “scholars” quote from “missing parts” of the stone, “unapproved researchers” can have access to only a few fragments. It is obvious that the stone was broken recently, since all inner edges of the fragments show recent fracture conditions.

## **Our Egyptian knowledge mostly guesswork**

W.B. Emery is one of the rare few who admit how limited our knowledge of ancient Egypt really is:

“Unfortunately,” he says, “our knowledge of the archaic hieroglyphs is so limited that reliable translation of these invaluable texts is at present beyond our power and we can only pick out odd words and groups which give us only the vaguest interpretations.” (W.B. Emery, *Archaic Egypt*. Penguin Books Reprint, 1984, p.59)

Yet, in most books we read, translations and conclusions are never stated as being theory; they are stated as firm fact.

## **Dating of early world history in chaos**

The truth is, Egyptologists have been contracting the Egyptian chronology for decades.

For instance, down Bobbin Head Road in Turramurra, Sydney, Australia, stands a memorial in the bush. It is close to the gates of the park leading down to Bobbin Head – and within walking distance of the Lady Davidson Hospital, where after World War I wounded or gassed soldiers could recuperate.

One such soldier, Private Shirley, used to walk to this spot from the hospital. Out of a rock in the bush he carved a pyramid, sphinx and other objects, as a memorial to his friends who had served with him in Egypt - but never returned!

According to a plaque fixed at the spot, he completed his work in 1926, featuring “the Great Pyramid and Sphinx dating back to the 4th Dynasty in 4700 BC”. (A colleague of mine, Bruce Price of Sydney, has photos showing this date on the original plaque.) However, by the time Bruce visited the park in 1996 - seventy years later - the date given for the 4th Dynasty was 2600 BC! The Egyptologists had themselves in seven decades contracted it by 2,100 years!

Okay, here is confession time. Until recently, the “experts” had me believing that Egypt sprang up around 3000 BC (and likewise all the other civilizations of great antiquity).

And since these all emerged after the Flood, then the dating for the Flood just had to be earlier.

How embarrassing! It now turns out that the scientific structure of Egyptian history is built on the framework of a mistaken chronology. The result of the artificial Sothic scheme is a vastly over-extended chronology of Egypt.

Such an Egyptian chronology, far from serving as a suitable gauge for the histories of other nations, only manages to throw one nation out of alignment with another. Due to this misalignment (especially for the period prior to the 9<sup>th</sup> century BC), archaeology is seldom able to bring face to face contemporaries from one nation to another right across the board.

This impediment of mis-alignment that the conventionally trained scholars have inherited has led them into trying all sorts of clumsy techniques to make their data fit.

Consider early Greek history, for example. In order to make the shorter Greek history align with the Sothic chronology

of Egypt, archaeologists have found it necessary to insert into Greek history a so-called “Dark Age” of about 300 years (c. 1200 to 900 BC). And have inserted Dark Ages in many other places as well.

The painful fact is, there is absolutely no archaeological evidence for the existence of these Dark Ages. (Peter James, *Centuries of Darkness*. London: Jonathan Cape, 1991. This book comes with a high recommendation, in the *Foreward*, from Colin Renfrew, Professor of Archaeology at Cambridge University.)

And since Egyptian chronology is the rule and the standard for the entire world history, *the history of the entire ancient world is consequently now in a most chaotic state.*

Adjustments and revisions of Egyptian history *will tend to considerably shorten human history in general.*

### **Vast ages from astronomy not viable**

But, someone asks, isn't it possible to establish vast ages for some civilizations on the basis of astronomical data? Unfortunately, no - due to the disruptions to the earth's axis in 2345 BC.

Any effort to construct a chronology earlier than that date on the basis of new moon, eclipse, or star observations, cannot be correct, because the order of nature was changed at that time.

*Attempts to date the Sphinx and pyramids of Giza by astronomical alignments to, say 10,500 BC, are futile for the same reason.*

### **A date for China**

The credible, self-consistent history of ancient China dates from no earlier than 781 BC. The period prior to that is unverifiable. Chinese literary records do, however, give dynastic epochs that are identical with dynastic epochs of the book of Genesis.

For example, it is told that a tremendous flood of devastating force occurred in approximately 2300 BC. The Chinese sacred book of the *Shu-king* tells of Fu-hi, who was “born of a rainbow” and bred and saved 7 kinds of animals to be



used as a sacrifice. The Epoch of Fu-hi began in 2944 BC (600 years before 2344 BC). From these details this is unmistakably speaking of Noah – even to the precise dates. (*Book of Shu-king*, translated by W. Gorn Old; also Genesis 7:2; 8:20; 7:6; D. Davidson and H. Aldersmith, *The Great Pyramid: Its Divine Message*. London: Williams and Norgate, Ltd., vol. I, 1936, pp. 438,439)

The establishment of China's first dynasty, the Xia dynasty in 2205 BC, marks the historical beginning of China's 4,000 years of unbroken dynastic culture and civilization.

There is nothing in the high antiquity of China to conflict with the conclusion that some 200 years after the Deluge, Noah's descendants arrived in northwest China. (Martin Anstey, *The Romance of Bible Chronology*. London: Marshall Brothers Ltd., 1913, p.103)

## A date for Sumeria

After Alexander the Great had defeated Darius in 331 BC at Gaugmela near Arbela, he journeyed to Babylon. While there he and his scholars learned about the 1903 years of astronomical observations from the Chaldeans of Babylon.

That placed the founding of Babylon at **2234 BC**, or about ten years after the birth of Peleg. This matter was recorded in the sixth book of *De Caelo* ('About the Heavens') by Simplicius, a Latin writer in the 6th century AD. Porphyry (an anti-Christian Greek philosopher, 234–305 AD) stated the same thing.

This is uncannily close to the biblical date for the Tower of Babel (c. **2244 BC**) a century after the Great Flood, from which sprouted the Sumerian culture and Babylon. The fact is that *history, in the sense of written records, harmonises fairly well with the Bible chronology.*

This is of tremendous importance in dating the Sumerian texts, which have been claimed as an authority for the belief that *extraterrestrials* "seeded" the human race. These Sumerian texts are *not* 6,000 years old, as previously claimed, after all!

## A date for Egypt

This may come as a surprise, but neither are Egypt's monuments much help in solving our dating dilemma.

This is because the monuments themselves do not begin their records before the 19th dynasty. As Anstey notes:

There was an older Egyptian Empire which may have come to an end about 1750 BC, and to it the pyramids belonged. But its duration can only be guessed. Canon Rawlinson thinks it may have lasted 500 years or so. This would bring us to **2250 BC**, as the date of the establishment of civilization in the form of a settled government in Egypt. (*Ibid*, p.95)

All authorities are agreed on this: however far we go back in the history of Egypt, there is no indication of any early period of savagery or barbarism there. Menes (Mizraim) came, dammed the waters and started building. (See Book 3 of this series)

Some scientists contend that the Great Pyramid tells the date of its construction (foundation). Its tubular entrance passage pointed to the north polar star in **2144 BC** at the same time that the pyramid apex pointed to Alcyone, the "pivot of the solar system", known anciently as the "Foundation star". (See N.D. Davidson and H. Aldersmith, *The Great Pyramid: Its Divine Message*. London: Williams and Norgate, Ltd., vol. I, 1936, p.215. Joseph H. Seiss, *The Great Pyramid: A Miracle in Stone*. New York: Harper and Row, 1973, pp. 83-85. Seiss gives the year 2170 B.C.)

The Byzantine chronicler Constantinus Manasses wrote that the State of Egypt, as he knew it, had already lasted 1663 years. Counting backward from his day in 526 BC, which was the time when Cambyses, king of Persia, conquered Egypt, the Egyptian culture, according to Constantinus, was founded in **2188 BC**, or about 56 years after the birth of Peleg.

About this time Mizraim, the son of Ham, led his colony into Egypt. This makes Egypt the second civilization to be influenced after the Tower of Babel. Manetho wrote that the Tower of Babel occurred five years after the birth of Peleg. One can only ask why Manetho included biblical events in the history of Egypt if Egypt wasn't a link in the Biblical saga.

## **A date for Greece**

According to the 4<sup>th</sup> century writer Eusebius, Egialeus, king of the Greek city of Sicyon, west of Corinth in Peloponnesus, began his reign in **2089 BC**, 1313 years before the first Olympiad in 776 BC. If Eusebius is correct, then this king started to reign about 155 years after the birth of Peleg.

Note that Babylon, Egypt, and Greece each spoke a different language. These ancient historians have unwittingly confirmed the truth of the biblical division of languages.

The Tower of Babel would have necessarily occurred before the founding of these other kingdoms. Nations geographically the closest to the event would have been founded first. This is exactly what these writers have described. First Babylon was founded, then Egypt, and then Greece.

## **Written history – about 4,000 years**

No verifiable dates for written records go back earlier than about 4,000 years, approaching our date for the Great Flood. Any earlier dates are based on questionable assumptions and are highly speculative. If one is determined to push everything back further, one has to speculate, without evidence. Keep in mind that our goal is to discover the **FACTS**. We want *verified* information.

## **This impacts on that Sumerian extraterrestrial “document”**

When I was a mere stripling, a wise man asked me, “How many legs does a sheep have, if you call its tail a leg?”

“Five!” I said, beaming.

“No, Jonathan, he replied. “The answer is four. A sheep still has only four legs. You may call its tail a leg, but that does not make it a leg.”

You may want something to be so, but that does not make it so.

With due respect, when Sitchin – or anyone else - claims a Sumerian document to be 6,000 years old, he is romancing. He wants it to be that old. But that doesn't make it so.

Neither is it the oldest document on earth. There is something older, as we shall see in chapter 33.

And this has a crucial bearing on the credibility of that “extraterrestrial” assertion – the claim that extraterrestrials came from the Planet Nibiru and interbred with primates to produce modern man. And that such a story must be correct, because the Sumerian document that tells that tale, is the “oldest” document in the world!

Meanwhile, speaking of time... ages... dating... I can hear someone asking the inevitable question, How on earth can all today's races go back a mere 4,500 years to the Flood? Wouldn't it have taken untold aeons for the variations to occur?

You'll probably agree that it's a good question. So it should be addressed here, because it comes up frequently. And although you will find the answer in two of my other books, I shall repeat it here...

**NOTE:** If our story appears to be deviating from UFO aliens for a time, please be patient, because we must necessarily establish the comparative age of certain documents that are an essential part of the UFO drama.

## 32

### *Origin of the races -*

# SO MANY RACES – HOW LONG?

Think about this...

The whole world is wiped out... except for a single group of survivors.

Then, 4,000 to 5,000 years later, all of today's races are on the earth – with red, yellow, black, white, brown skin... straight hair, fuzzy hair... Broad, flat noses, long, thin noses... Brown eyes, blue eyes.

How on earth could all these variations in the human family have come about in just the few thousand years since the Deluge?

To put it another way, if there were only eight people at the start, then where do, for example, all the colors come from and why are the races so different? For example, Australian Aborigines, the Chinese, and so on?

Frankly, that did bother me at one time. Was there enough time since the Great Flood to produce the varieties we see today?

The answer is yes. And to understand this, we just need to know a little more about genetics.

An obvious place to start is with *skin color*, for example. In case you didn't know, mankind has only one skin color. That color shows up as different shades in proportion to the *amount of melanin* in the skin. (Melanin is a colouring compound.)

Melanin protects our bodies by absorbing ultra-violet (UV) radiation from sunlight which falls on the skin.

Darker-skinned people have more melanin, which renders their skin more sunlight resistant. Thus they are better suited to

hotter climates. Lighter-skinned people are better suited to a cooler environment.

## Governed by two pairs of genes

Research has shown that there are 19 alleles for skin color, but for the sake of simplicity, let us suppose right now that there are only two genes.

John Mackay B.Sc. writes that “if a person from a pure white European background marries a person from a pure black Negro background, their children will be an intermediate brown colour. This brownish colour is called ‘mulatto’. If two MULATTOS marry, unlike their parents they DO NOT produce children which have the same colour. The offspring can be ANY OF NINE COLOURS, from pure white through to pure black.”

Thus “if we started today with one pair of middle-brown coloured people (similar to the mulattos), we could produce all the racial colours in the world, NOT IN MILLIONS OF YEARS, NOR IN THOUSANDS OF YEARS, BUT *IN ONLY ONE GENERATION.*” (John Mackay, *Ex Nihilo*, vol.6, no.4, May, 1984. Emphasis added)

Did you get that? In just one generation!

We here have only dealt with 4 alleles for color and have found there can be nine skin shades with those four alleles. Imagine the number of skin shades there can be with 19 alleles!

## How it works

A child receives half its genes from each parent. Let’s call these genes A and B. The genes have partners, a and b.

*Genes A and B* are good at producing melanin (which darkens the skin). Result: A person with two pairs of genes *AA and BB* will have *darker* skin.

Genes *a and b* both produce less melanin. Result: A person with two pairs of genes *aa and bb* will have *very light* skin.

A person with gene pairs *Aa and Bb* (let’s write it as *AaBb*) will have *medium-colored* skin.

And so on.

Now, *suppose both parents are AaBb* (medium-brown).

The mother gives the child two genes for skin color – one from type A or a, the other from B or b. The father likewise gives two genes for skin color – one from type A or a, the other from B or b.

So each of these middle-brown parents with *AaBb* can give his/her children any one of the following pairs of gene combinations: AB, Ab, aB or ab.

For example, suppose each parent passes on the AB combination to the new child. The mother gives the child AB. The father gives the child AB. Result: The child will be born with *AABB* – and thus will be *PURE BLACK*.

But if both parents pass on the ab combination (the mother giving the child *ab*; the father giving the child *ab*), then what? Result: The child will be born with *aabb* – and will be *PURE WHITE*.

**EVEN THOUGH BOTH PARENTS WERE MEDIUM-BROWN SKINNED!**

### **How color becomes permanent**

Notice that the *PURE BLACK* child is born *AABB* – that is, he has *no genes for lightness*. If a group of pure black persons is isolated, their offspring will be only black. These children will have *lost* the ability to be “white”.

Likewise, when *aabb* children marry their own type (pure white) and move away to interbreed only among themselves, they will produce from now on only white offspring. They have lost their ability to be black. They no longer have genes to produce a great deal of melanin.

If we started today with just two *MIDDLE-BROWN* parents, they could produce extreme racial colors (*BLACK* and *WHITE*), in a way that races would have *PERMANENTLY DIFFERENT* colors.

A fixed middle-brown color could also be produced. If the original middle-brown parents produce children of either *AAbb*

or *aaBB* and these offspring move away and interact only with their kind, their descendants will be a fixed middle-brown color.

## Reversing the process

Despite marked differences, the races would disappear if total inter-marriage were practised today. There would reappear a brown coloured majority, with a sprinkling of every other shade permitted within the genetic pool.

The genes for Chinese almond eyes, black skin or white, and so on, would still exist, but the combinations would be different.

Interestingly, you can find the characteristics of ANY race in EVERY race. For example, some Europeans have broad, flat noses, and others have short, frizzy hair, but on average Europeans do not have these features. The same sort of genetic recombinations that have produced skin color variations have produced other body variations – straight hair, wavy hair, eye shape, eye colour, body height, and so on.

It may be of interest to note a comment by Professor William C. Boyd, Professor of Immunochemistry at the Boston University School of Medicine:

We should not be surprised if identical genes crop up in all corners of the earth, or if the over-all racial differences we detect prove to be small. We do not know the total number of gene differences which mark off a Negro of the Alur tribe in the Belgian Congo from a white native of Haderslev, Denmark. Glass has suggested that the number of gene differences even in such a case is probably small. Besides a few genes for skin colour, he thinks that there may be a dominant gene for kinky hair and a pair or two of genes for facial features. He considers it unlikely that there are *more than six pairs of genes* in which the white race differs *characteristically* from the black. This estimate errs somewhat on the small side, in the opinion of the present writer. Probably, however, it is of the right order of magnitude, and any outraged conviction that the difference between the two races must be much greater than this, which some persons might feel, is likely to be based on emotional,



rather than rational, factors. (William C. Boyd (Professor of Immunochemistry at Boston School of Medicine), *Genetics and the Races of Men*. Blackwell's Scientific Publications, 1950, p.200 ff)

## **Genes for all races existed at the start**

The first man was designed with the best possible combination of skin-color genes for his perfect created environment. The Great Flood radically altered that environment.

Evidently, Noah's family possessed genes for both light and dark skin, dark enough to protect them, yet light enough to ensure sufficient Vitamin D.

## **All racial varieties could appear in just one generation**

From the above data it can be seen that all the known varieties of skin color could come from one pair of mid-brown parents IN ONE GENERATION.

In general, racial characteristics are recombinations of pre-existing, created hereditary (genetic) information. They have not evolved and they do not require a long time to become apparent.

You can be sure of this. There has been *no evolution of genes that did not previously exist*. All that has occurred is the *recombination* and degeneration of created genetic information.

This means that the differences did *not* take countless ages to produce.

## **After Babel**

It is now known from observation that:

- (a) a small population tend rapidly to vary to the utmost extent of their possible limits and then to remain stationary for an indefinite time.
- (b) When a few members of it shift to a new environment, wide varieties again appear, which become stable only with time.

The splitting up of a large group into many smaller groups who became isolated from each other would provide the ideal condition for the RAPID APPEARANCE of many different racial groups with distinct characteristics.

This is doubtless what occurred. There is overwhelming archaeological evidence for a common origin for *all* races on this planet. (Jonathan Gray, *Dead Men's Secrets*, pp.16-19. <<http://www.beforeus.com>>)

The scattering of mankind shortly after the Great Flood, when their language was suddenly confused, was the catalyst that produced the variations now seen.

Each of these groups migrated into areas which offered them new and different climates, as well as different diets from those they had been used to. As we noted, the global environment had drastically changed. From now on, it was unlikely that any two groups would find identical areas to move into.

## **Cold regions and hot**

So would such a change in climate, environment and diet have any effect on skin colors? Very little, actually. But there would be some effect.

Studies have been made on the relationship between skin color and health or diet in a given environment. So we can postulate the following influences.

Those who, after Babel, moved to colder regions but had darker skin, could suffer from vitamin D deficiency, such as rickets. The Neanderthals are a classic example of this.

By the way, Neanderthals were not emerging primitives. That's fiction. They had a skull capacity (with its inferred brain size) larger than that of modern man. Classic descriptions of so-called Neanderthal man were based in large part on the skeletal remains of a man suffering from severe osteoarthritis. He had degenerated. In fact, there are folk who would pass for Neanderthals, alive today. It has nothing to do with history or intelligence, but rather, health!

But back to our subject. The skin, as you know, produces vitamin D from sunlight. So any person with a darker skin is worse off in a cold region, because there is less sunlight. Because a dark skin is more sunlight resistant, it can produce less vitamin D.

So a colder environment, with less available sunlight (and not forgetting the available diet), would tend to favor those who inherited fairer skins.

Dark-skinned people in such an area would therefore tend to be less healthy and would have fewer children. This means that gradually the number of black people in any group going to a cold region would be outnumbered by the white.

Similarly, people with darker skins who went to sunnier or hotter regions would survive better – for one thing, getting less skin cancer. Gradually, the fairer persons would dwindle from the population and a black race would result.

But the bottom line is, such differences did not take countless ages to produce.

\* \* \* \* \*

This brings us back to the ancient book of Genesis, with its shorter dating of human history.

Since this particular document claims to be a true record of our origins - whether extraterrestrial or otherwise – it is now time to place it under close scrutiny.

The issue is: Are the *Sumerian texts* the originals... and by implication the more accurate source?

And was this *book of Genesis* simply a collection of “myths” copied from Sumerian texts which were thousands of years older?

What will the evidence reveal? Are you ready?...

# 33

***Genesis: who wrote it and when? -***

## THE GENESIS MYTH?

“In fifteen years I’ll have this book in the morgue,” declared Ingersoll, the noted atheist, holding up a copy of the Bible. Fifteen years rolled by. Ingersoll was in the morgue.

The atheist Voltaire said that in 100 years the Bible would be an outmoded and forgotten book, to be found only in museums. When the 100 years were up, Voltaire’s house was owned and used by the Geneva Bible Society.

Ironically, the Bible contains this prophecy about itself: “The word of our God shall stand forever.” (Isaiah 40:8) Yes, it makes the “outrageous” claim to be the Word of God. The writers claim to have been under divine direction as they wrote.

Critics, however, tell us that

(a) it was not written by the men whose names are linked to it; (b) that these men never really existed, but were invented by the deceivers who actually wrote the Bible. And that therefore: (c) the Bible is so much pious fiction, or worse - a forgery, the work of liars.

### **Books of Moses “written after 600 BC”?**

These critics assure us that the “books of Moses” were NOT written around 1500 BC, as the Bible itself claims, but much later, after 600 BC.

Says David Icke:

The Old Testament stories were written by the Levites after their stay in Babylon [606 to 536 BC], who mixed truth with fantasies, which became the foundations of the Old Testament. (David Icke, *The Biggest Secret*. Wildwood, MO.: Bridge of Love Publications USA, 2001, p.83)

## “Condensed from Sumerian records”?

Genesis was a much edited and condensed version of the Sumer records. (*Ibid.*)

Notice? The focus of attack is on the book of Genesis (“beginnings”). In particular, this is the book that the critics don’t like.

## “Impossible to write the Bible as early as 1500 BC”?

Such attacks are not new. A few years ago, the critics told us that Genesis, the ‘book of beginnings’, could *not* have been written as early as it says – because no ALPHABETIC WRITING existed at that time.

They assured us that the Hebrew tribe was primitive and the alphabet had not yet been developed in 1500 BC, at the time Moses was supposed to have written the first five books of the Bible.

Writing was unknown at that time, they said.

Therefore, the Bible stories could only have been handed down by word of mouth. In the handing down process, embellishments and changes probably occurred. Then those garbled tales were probably gathered up by Jewish scribes and compiled for the first time around the 6<sup>th</sup> century BC. So we cannot know the truth of events.

Such was the criticism of the mid-1800s. And on the surface it seemed valid enough – because at that time there was a lack of historical knowledge with regard to the period around 2000 BC.

Books of these 19<sup>th</sup> century critics are still in print. And their arguments are still cited by writers who are apparently unaware of more recent *evidence*.

## Archaeology’s verdict

Evidence? I hear someone ask, what evidence?

Evidence that writing WAS known in the time of Moses, that's what. Notice these four examples:

(a) Semitic alphabetic inscriptions have been found at *Mount Sinai*, from the early 2<sup>nd</sup> millennium BC.

(b) Other writings have since discovered throughout *southern and central Palestine* that go back to the 16<sup>th</sup> century BC and earlier. (Henry M. Morris, *Science and the Bible*. Amersham, Bucks, England: Scripture Press, 1988, pp.94-95)

Archaeological findings in Palestine show that as early as the patriarchal period the art of writing was widespread. Texts written in an early form of semipictorial alphabetic script have come to light at Lachish, Tel el-Hesi, Beth-shemesh, Shechem, Megiddo, Gezer and Tell el-'Ajjul.

(c) In the 1970s, the ancient city of *Ebla* in *northern Syria* was unearthed. It contained a massive 17,000 documents, all written prior to 2000 BC. In 1975, when Dr Matthiae and his team were excavating in the royal palace, they discovered a student's exercise tablet. The student had been practising writing the alphabet. Now this was an amazing find, because it was believed that the Hebrew alphabet did not originate until well over 1,000 years later. But here was discovered this ancient precursor of the Hebrew alphabet, from centuries before the time of Moses.

(d) And other great libraries just as old have been unearthed at *Ur and Nuzi in Iraq*.

So the critics were caught with their pants down. The early books of the Old Testament claimed to be written around 1500 BC. And archaeology confirmed that this indeed WAS possible.

So was shattered the argument that the Bible, written in alphabetic Hebrew, could not have been produced as early as it claims because those earlier Hebrews knew no alphabetic writing.

No informed scholar uses this argument any more.

In fact, writing was fairly common among the people. In the book of Judges (8:14) is related an incident in which *a boy* from Succoth "wrote down for him [Gideon] the officials and elders of Succoth, seventy-seven men."

## Judicial system not invented so early?

Not to worry. The attack switched to the system of laws written in the books of Moses. It was stated that such a highly developed judicial system could not have existed so early.

And then, of all the annoyances! In the ruins of Susa, a black stone monument was found. It was covered with 39 columns of inscriptions containing a total of 3,624 lines of laws. These had been collected and publicly displayed on a stone pillar by Hammurabi, a great Amorite king of the Babylonian empire during the 18<sup>th</sup> century BC, the time of the biblical patriarchs. (You've probably heard of Hammurabi by now?)

The critics licked their wounds.

## Dating fixed by period customs

But when were the Bible accounts first recorded? When did they originate? There were two conflicting claims: (1) The Bible itself dated the patriarchs Abraham, Isaac and Jacob at shortly after 2000 BC, with their biographies being recorded soon after. (2) On the other hand, critics assured us that "those garbled tales were compiled around the 6<sup>th</sup> century BC."

So who was right? The critics... or the book of Genesis? Let's see.

For starters, as we have already noted, texts began to come in from various scattered ruins which dated back to 2000 BC. Significantly, these described **life during the period shortly after 2000 BC**. And their verdict was shattering.

### *1. Customs of the period*

(a) *The Mesopotamian law code of Hammurabi* (unearthed in the winter of 1901-1902) showed the existence of **social conditions** during the first half of the 2<sup>nd</sup> millennium BC (2000 BC to 1500 BC), which, until this discovery, were not known outside the book of Genesis.

Within ten years, the Oriental scholar Alfred Jeremias was to point out that the background of the Genesis stories agreed in every detail with the civilization of that period as now discovered from the monuments. He admitted:

If Abraham lived at all it could only have been in surroundings and under conditions such as the Bible describes. (Jeremias, *The Old Testament in the Light of the Ancient East*. New York, 1911, vol.2, p.45)

**(b) *The Nuzi tablets (from around 2000 BC):***

From study of these tablets, G. Ernest Wright of Harvard University announced that Abraham's "life and times, as reflected in the stories about him, fit perfectly within the early second millennium, but imperfectly within any later period." (G. Ernest Wright, *Biblical Archaeology Rev. ed.* Philadelphia, 1962, p. 40)

Take, for example, these ***peculiar customs***:

- Both the cuneiform records and the book of Genesis show for that period – and that period alone – that it was the duty of a childless wife to provide her husband with a second wife to obtain offspring. (T.J. Meek, *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament*, 3<sup>rd</sup> ed., Princeton, N.J., 1969, p.220; compare with Gen.16:1-4)
- The oral will of a father was unchangeable, even if a preceding will of another kind existed. (C.H.Gordon, "Biblical Customs and the Nuzi Tablets", *The Biblical Archaeologist*, Vol. 30, 1940, p.8; Compare with Gen.27:1-33)
- An older brother could give up his inheritance by barter for other objects. (*Ibid.*, p.5; compare with Gen.25:29-34)

## **Fits no other period**

It was becoming increasingly clear that the Genesis story was told in such accurate details ***as only a contemporary could describe them***. Knowledge of such details was lost by the 6<sup>th</sup> century BC. It would be impossible for scribes of the 6<sup>th</sup> century BC to write in the flavour of the 2000 BC way of life.

Examination of the Code of Hammurabi, the Nuzi texts and others now discovered, revealed that the customs (the legal and social conditions) of the patriarchal period of Genesis ***fit into no other period*** of ancient history.

Hence, Professor W.F. Albright, the well-known archaeologist of Johns Hopkins University could say that they so "brilliantly illuminated many details in the patriarchal stories



which do not fit into the post-Mosaic tradition at all” that we can no longer deny “the substantial historicity of the tradition of the Patriarchs.” He also declared that “as a whole the picture in Genesis is historical, and there is no reason to doubt the general accuracy of the biographical details and the sketches of personality which make the Patriarchs come alive with a vividness unknown to a single extra-biblical character in the whole vast literature of the ancient Near East.” (Albright, *The Biblical Period From Abraham to Ezra*, Rev. ed. New York, 1963, p.5)

Archaeologist Horn agreed:

Archaeological discoveries show us that the historical setting is true to fact and that the events described did really happen. (Siegfried H. Horn, *Records of the Past Illuminate the Bible*. Washington, D.C.: Review and Herald Publishing Association, 1975, p.62)

Such discoveries dumbfounded the critics. The setting as given in the biblical descriptions agreed completely with the known facts. It showed that the biblical stories were trustworthy.

## ***2. Peculiar phrases and words***

Further shocks emerged from the discovery of the ***Mari texts from Mesopotamia***, written on over 20,000 clay tablets.

Concerning mule-sacrifice descriptions, the same three words for ‘colt’ used in the biblical Jacob's blessing were found in the Mari text, even in the same order.

Similarly the biblical phrase ‘the blood of grapes’ resembled an old Ugaritic expression ‘tree-blood’ which was used of wine. Such being the case, Jacob's blessing in the book of Genesis was based on a very old tradition.

If we take into consideration the fact that the Babylonian king Hammurabi conquered and destroyed the city of Mari in 1759 BC, according to the average reckoning, or in 1695 BC by the later estimation, there is no reason to doubt that, from a linguistic point of view, Jacob's blessing is from Jacob's own time.

### **3. Place names, personal names**

Other information stamping the book of Genesis as contemporary to the events were names of that period embedded in the text. For example:

**(a) *The original name for Jerusalem:*** One of the Ebla tablets (before 2000 BC) has a statement about the city of SALEM. Now this is most interesting, because Genesis 14:18 tells us that SALEM was JERUSALEM'S ORIGINAL NAME. Never before in secular history had this been confirmed.

**(b) *The 5 cities of the plain:*** Another tablet (Tablet No. 1860) speaks of the same 5 cities mentioned in Genesis 14:2 - and in the identical order and with the same kings ruling as mentioned in Genesis. (For example, Genesis says that the king of Gomorrah was Birsha, exactly the same as shown on the Ebla tablet.)

**(c) *Abraham and his family:***

Most intriguing of all are the personal names found on the Ebla tablets. They include AB-RA-MU (ABRAHAM), E-SA-UM (ESAU), and SA-U-LUM (SAUL). Present as well is a name never found before in ancient literature, save the Old Testament: DA-U-DUM (DAVID). Further, the name of a king, EBRIUM, who reigned about 2300 BC, bears a striking resemblance to EBER of the book of Genesis, who was the great-great-great-great grandfather of ABRAHAM the biblical progenitor of the Hebrews. (*National Geographic*, Page 736, December, 1978)

*Time* magazine, in discussing the discovery of these personal names, informs us that they provide "the best evidence to date that some of the people described in the Old Testament actually existed." (*Time*, October 18, 1976, page 63)

Also mentioned in both the Bible and the Ebla tablets are cities whose names reflect their founders, who were ABRAHAM'S relatives:

- PHALIGA (Peleg)
- TIL-TURAKHI (Terah)
- NAKHUR (Nahor)

- HARAN (Haran)

Furthermore, they mention “Ur in the region of Haran”, which the book of Genesis names as the city ABRAHAM left from originally.

#### 4. Vocabulary

Bible believers claimed that Moses (who was born in Egypt) wrote Genesis and the other “books of Moses”. But the critics said, No, they were composed much later, by 6<sup>th</sup> century BC Jewish scribes born in Babylon.

That brings us to the vocabulary test. And very soon we find ourselves having to face another question:

Why is it that the “books of Moses” show NOT a Babylonian influence, but abound with *Egyptian* words, *Egyptian* roots and *Egyptian* phrases, as would be expected of a writer who had come out of Egypt?

#### Crucial question: Which is older?

So the biblical account has no historical authority? It was a 6<sup>th</sup> century BC forgery? You’ve got to laugh, really.

Anyone who still churns out this tale is either unaware of the latest modern discoveries, or he is lying to you.

And now it is time to brace yourself for another shock: that *Genesis is the oldest* of the Flood reports of the Middle East.

Of this you can be certain: Genesis originated in a period as early as 2000 BC. It *includes archaisms* which indicate that it preceded the Babylonian and Assyrian versions of the Flood.

One of the greatest archaeologists of all time is Professor W.F.Albright. He points out that the archaic features contained in the Genesis record date it before any Mesopotamian version that is “preserved in cuneiform sources” (such as the Babylonian *Epic of Gilgamesh* and the Assyrian *Epic of Atrahasis*). (W.F. Albright, *Yahweh and the Gods of Canaan*. London: Athlone Press, 1968, p.86. See also: Clifford Wilson, *Crash Go the Chariots*. New York: Lancer Books, 1972, pp.45-51. Wilson, *The Chariots Still Crash*. Old Tappan, N.J.: Fleming H. Revell and Co., 1976, pp.129-140)

Again, I shall mention the tablets from Ebla, *dated to 2000 BC*. These *parallel those in early Genesis*, again showing that

the biblical stories did not stem from Babylonian legends originating around 700 BC.

If you are constructing a house, you will want your builder to lay the best foundation. You will also want him to use the best materials – not termite infested second-hand timber. And you will want the purest water you can obtain to come through your pipes.

This has relevance to our next chapter... go for the BEST!  
As Brad Sheed was about to remind Roland...

**NOTE:** If our story appears to be deviating from UFO aliens for a time, please be patient, because we must necessarily establish the comparative age of certain documents that are an essential part of the UFO drama.

# 34

*Genesis: compared with others –*

## CRITICS CONFOUNDED

Roland looked at his watch. “I should phone Angie,” he said. “Excuse me... please.” He pulled out his cell phone.

“Yes?”

“Hi dreamboat, are you okay?”

“Why?”

“I’ll be home soon if you need me.”

“Don’t bother.”

Roland tucked the phone into his pocket. “We can continue,” he said.

“Where were we?”

Brad Sheed poured another drink. “You were asking, *Is the Genesis account the second-hand one*, as the critics claim?

“Could we compare them?” suggested Roland.

“Okay,” said Brad, “let’s do that. We could mention, for starters, that the biblical book of Genesis tells a *simpler, more coherent* story.

“It does not bear the marks of the superstitious, the magical or the grotesque, which occur in the Babylonian and Assyrian versions. It is these latter which bear the marks of later distortions. You will find them to be clearly inferior to the Genesis account.

Roland straightened up. “Can you point to a specific example?” he asked.

### Genesis the purest version

“Sure. How about the *specifications of the Ark*?

“The Babylonian/Assyrian Deluge account gives the ship a rather flat description. In lines 57 through 61, the *Gilgamesh Epic* states that its floor space was one ‘iku’, a measurement

which has been translated to mean 3,600 square meters or approximately one acre.

“It reads, ‘One iku was its floor space, one hundred and twenty cubits each was the height of its walls; one hundred twenty cubits measured each side of its deck.’ This leads to but one conclusion – the boat was an exact cube!”

The engineer doubled up with laughter. “A cube?” he roared. “How naïve! I need a glass of water! You know what, Brad? Such a crudely designed cubic vessel would be a disaster. It would tend to keep turning with each gust of wind, as if caught in a gigantic whirlpool!”

Brad smiled. “Okay. Now contrast that with the description in the book of Genesis. It is described as having a ratio of six to one (300 cubits by 50). (Genesis 6:15) From a point of stability and rolling, that is about as perfect as can be desired.

“Some of today’s giant tankers have a ratio of seven to one. In modern engineering terms, the Genesis specifications are of perfect proportions. George Dickie, a Scottish architect, from specifications for Noah’s Ark *taken out of the book of Genesis*, designed the well-known battleship *Oregon*.

“As a flagship of the U.S. navy, it led convoys, visited almost every notable port in the world and met every test of seaworthiness, including a fierce typhoon.”

The archaeologist paused. “Just a moment. This should interest you. He reached across his desk and opened a file.

“Here’s what the editor of the *Los Angeles Times*, referring to the *Oregon*, said:

One of the surprising facts of history is that it took 2,000 years for the science of marine engineering to develop the highest type of sea-going craft, when the secrets of the true dimensions for the greatest carrying power, combined with the least resistance of the waves, rested all that time in the book of Genesis.

“You’re an engineer, Roland. In those measurements do you see wisdom?”

Roland nodded. “Then that would have to lift Genesis out of the realm of a fanciful tale and into the category of an up-to-date, reliable report.” (For more detail, see Jonathan Gray, *The Killing of Paradise Planet*, chapter 13. <<http://www.beforeus.com/first.php>> )

“You see, then, that it bears the stamp of a sophisticated and accurate document?” asked Sheed.

Roland nodded.

“Okay,” said Brad, “now there’s something else. The Genesis account also contains a *detailed family genealogy* extending from the time of the Flood down to the historical Moses.

“Now if a family was tenacious enough of its traditions to preserve its genealogy from Shem to Moses, wouldn’t you think it could also hand down its own account of so memorable an event as the Flood?”

“I guess so.”

“Another thing. The Genesis record is *straightforward, connected and concise*. The Babylonian/Assyrian texts read confused and cumbersome. On this point, notice what some other researchers have discovered.” Brad accessed another file. “Kenneth Kitchen of the University of Liverpool, observes:

The common assumption that the Hebrew account is simply a purged and simplified version of the Babylonian legend (applied to Flood stories) is fallacious on methodological grounds. In the Ancient Near East, the rule is that simple accounts or traditions may give rise (by accretion and embellishment) to elaborate legends, but not vice versa. In the Ancient Orient, legends were not simplified or turned into pseudo-history (historicized) as has been assumed for early Genesis. (Kenneth A. Kitchen, *Ancient Orient and the Old Testament*, p.89)

“Face it, Roland, if the law of cause and effect has any meaning at all – that is, that the effect cannot be greater than its cause – then there can be no doubt that the less accomplished writings of the Sumerians are merely corruptions of the original Genesis truth.

“I tell you, Genesis stands in a class by itself when compared with other versions for meaningful transmission of information.

“Comparing the Sumerian tablets with the Genesis, there are a number of important *differences*. Alexander Heidel has carefully analysed these. He concludes that even though there are definite similarities, these areas of agreement are apparently caused by the two stories having been based on the same *event*, NOT the same account. (Alexander Heidel, *The Gilgamesh Epic and Old Testament*, pp.224-258)

## **Historical accuracy compared to other records**

“Place Genesis side by side with the confused accounts of other nations and you'll be struck by an incomparable distinction, which lifts it out of the class of all other writings, and proclaims it, as it were, of another origin, and of another kind.

“One obvious difference is its *objective, historical character*. The religions of the ancient world did not even postulate a historical basis. You can take this from the greatest of Middle East archaeologists, Professor William Albright:

In Egypt and Babylonia, in Assyria and Phoenicia, in Greece and Rome, we look in vain for anything comparable. There is nothing like it in the tradition of the Germanic peoples. Neither India nor China can produce anything similar. (Louis Finlestein , ed. Wm. Albright, essay: “The Biblical period”, *The Jews, Their History, Culture, and Religion*. Vol.1, 3<sup>rd</sup> ed. New York: Harper and Brothers, 1960, p.3)

“In fact, Albright avers that the Table of Nations in Genesis 10:

...stands absolutely alone in ancient literature... [and] shows such remarkably “modern” understanding of the ethnic and linguistic situation in the modern world, in spite of all its complexity, that scholars never fail to be impressed with the author’s knowledge of the subject. (William F. Albright, *Recent Discoveries in Bible Lands*. New York: Funk and Wagnalls, 1955, pp.70ff)



“Because the Bible’s basic theme is so absolutely dependent on the facts of history, its chronology is in the strongest contrast with that of other nations. Chronologies of the nations have no beginning. They emerge from the unknown, and their earliest dates are hazy and uncertain. But from the very beginning, Bible chronology is defined with the utmost precision.

Egypt:	Beginning vague, hazy, uncertain..... later period KNOWN
Babylonia:	Beginning vague, hazy, uncertain..... later period KNOWN
Assyria:	Beginning vague, hazy, uncertain..... later period KNOWN
Phoenicia:	Beginning vague, hazy, uncertain..... later period KNOWN
Greece:	Beginning vague, hazy, uncertain..... later period KNOWN
India:	Beginning vague, hazy, uncertain..... later period KNOWN
GENESIS chronology:	<b>DETAILED FROM BEGINNING</b> ..... later period KNOWN

### **Not spoiled by “local” colour**

“It is interesting to note how nations commonly ‘beefed up’ a story for impact. Their various reports of the Great Flood illustrate this well. Whereas many tribal versions ‘relocated’ the landing place of the survival vessel to the nearest high mountain, to add impact to their Flood story, the Genesis record did not. It simply states that the Ark landed ‘upon the mountains of Ararat.’ (Genesis 8:4)

“This reference to ‘the mountains of Ararat’ is significant, since the Hebrews had no personal knowledge of that distant land. This factor testifies to the integrity of the biblical account.”

For the next couple of hours the two men bent over the two sets of documents, comparing one with the other. Then Brad stretched his back and eyed Roland.

“So you’ve examined them both. Now you tell me. Which is the original? Is it the Babylonian/Sumerian version?”

Roland scratched his arm. “Brad, how can I argue? That’s obviously inferior to the Bible account, when you compare.”

“Here’s something else to consider,” said Brad. “The *moral force* of the Bible story is almost completely missing in the Babylonian tradition. The Bible gives us history. The Babylonians changed a historical event into a legend.

“Internal evidence shows the book of Genesis to be head and shoulders above *every* other record of the Flood.

### **Superior to other ancient documents**

Roland straightened up. “What about the rest of the Bible?”

Brad leaned forward. “I think Francis Hitching said it well:

The grand sweep of the Old Testament is the finest record of ancient history existing in the world today, the most readable and the most secure in its description of long-buried events....

Compared with it, the records from Egypt and Babylon are fragmented and ambiguous. (Francis Hitching, *The World Atlas of Mysteries*. London: Pan Books Ltd., 1978, p. 168)

“And Sir Isaac Newton, who developed laws of motion and calculus, also concluded that: ‘There are more sure marks of authenticity in the Bible than in any [secular] history.’

### **Many authors or one?**

“What do you say to the claim,” pressed Roland, “that several different authors wrote the ‘books of Moses’? Critics claim that certain stories are occasionally repeated, and that the first book, Genesis, was the *work of many later editors*. Yet you said there was *one editor* - Moses.”

The archaeologist beamed. “I love the way you dig for the truth,” he said. “Yes, for many years the critics said that.

Actually, those imagined editors have even been given names. They're commonly termed J, E, P and D.

“But is archaeology exploding that myth! It can now be determined that one man, Moses, assembled the book of Genesis from nine original volumes, handed down progressively by his forefathers. The book itself contains those clues.

“You see, it has now been discovered that in the ancient Middle East a *title* phrase, known as ‘colophon’ or ‘Toledath’, tended to be placed *at the end* of each tablet, or series of tablets of a document.”

“You mean,” said Roland, “that the earliest written records did not place the titles at the beginning?”

“That’s right,” replied Brad. “A title was placed at the end of the last tablet, that is, the ‘last page’ of the record. That ‘title’ was a phrase summarizing the document’s contents or some striking feature. However that title (colophon) also served as a run-through line, much in the way that modern printers place chapter headings at the top of each page today.

“Thus at the foot of each tablet you would find the initial words or some summary words. This enabled a set of tablets to be kept in correct order. So at the foot of a tablet we might find: ‘Tablet 3 of IN THE BEGINNING’.

“Hence these rather strange duplications, or occasional abrupt breaks, wherever you see a reference to ‘*generations*’ in the book of Genesis.”

Brad Sheed opened the book of Genesis and pointed to examples. Roland Brown bent over the desk to see them... verses such as 2:4, 5:1, 6:9, 10:1, 11:10, 11:27, 25:19, 37:2.

“Wow!” exclaimed Roland.

“So there you have them,” replied Brad. “These then are the *links* between nine volumes which Moses assembled together into one new book, Genesis, which means ‘At the Beginning (of Things)’.” (Dr Charles Taylor, *The Oldest Science Book in the World*. Slacks Creek, Queensland, Australia: Assembly Press Pty. Ltd., 1984, p. 21)

“William F. Albright, reputed as one of the greatest archaeologists, states concerning Genesis and its four related books (and this is still valid), that ‘new discoveries continue to confirm the historical accuracy or the literary antiquity of detail

after detail in it... It is, accordingly, sheer hypercriticism to deny the substantially Mosaic character of the Pentateuchal tradition.’ (C.H. Dodd, *More New Testament Studies*. Manchester: University Press, 1968, p. 224)

“Millar Burrows of Yale University, pointed to the fact that ‘Mere legend or fiction would inevitably betray itself by anachronisms and incongruities.’” (M. Burrows, *What Mean These Stones?* New York: Meridian Books, 1956, p. 278)

## Evidence of just one author

Roland straightened his back. “You know, it all fits, now, Brad. My friend Al Coster is science lecturer at Thornton High School. He demonstrated to me how *a single numeric ‘fingerprint’* runs through all of the biblical books.”

Sheed nodded. “And that common ‘sevens’ interconnecting code right through Genesis is compelling evidence that the text comes from the same single source.

“The presence of that uniform code cutting across the different documents is hard for critics (who presume multiple authors) to explain.”

“Yeah, that sort of makes sense now,” said Roland.

“Oh, something else,” quipped Brad. “In 1980, a computer *analysis of the vocabulary* of these books was undertaken at the Hebrew University in Jerusalem. And you know what? The analysis showed that these five books must have had the same author. And also something else...”

## World’s oldest records

“What?”

“Getting back to those references repeated through Genesis as *‘These are the generations of...’* I mentioned that these are end-titles for the information which precedes them. Thus *‘these are the generations of Noah’* would refer to the record or history known or *possessed by Noah* which has just preceded that end title.”

“So what are you inferring?” asked Roland.

“You must surely see, these passages in the book of Genesis must constitute *the oldest documents in the world!*”

Genesis, it appears, was edited by Moses himself from nine original volumes, going at least back to Noah... and even earlier?" (See P.J. Wiseman, *New Discoveries in Babylonia about Genesis*, 1936. Republished by Prof. D.J. Wiseman in *Clues To Creation In Genesis*. Both published in London by Marshall, Morgan and Scott, a member of the Pentos group, 1977)

### **But are its dates reliable?**

"So might that suggest that the biblical dating is the most reliable of all?"

"Well," said Roland, "You did a pretty good job confirming the Flood date."

"Actually," said Brad, "much research has been done in this field. And, after testing the evidence, many a skeptic has admitted his mistake.

"As an example, the agnostic David Davidson comes to mind. Davidson was for many years Consultant Engineer for the City of Leeds, England. Hold on, I'll find that statement from a colleague of his, by the name of Aldersmith..... Ah, here it is:

After fourteen years of chronological research, Davidson reached [to him] the astonishing conclusion that Biblical dates were historically accurate, that the independently formed 'Babylonian and Egyptian chronological datings... confirm the chronological statements of the Hebrew books. (D. Davidson and H. Aldersmith, *The Great Pyramid: Its Divine Message*, Vol. 1. London: Williams and Norgate, Ltd., 1936, p.303)

"Noted archaeologist Siegfried Horn found that discoveries in the ruins of Hazor, Shechem and other cities likewise confirmed biblical dates. (Siegfried H. Horn, *Records of the Past Illuminate the Bible*. Washington, D.C.: Review and Herald Publishing Association, 1975, pp.19,20)

"Then there's Nelson Glueck, one of the greatest of all Middle East archaeologists. He swears:

It may be stated categorically that no archaeological discovery has ever controverted a Biblical reference. (Nelson Glueck, *Rivers in the Desert: History of Negev*. Philadelphia: Jewish Publications Society of America, 1969, p.31)

## Critics give up... others remain unaware

“And Professor Albright. After discussing the critics’ dating philosophy and the flawed reasoning that prompted it, he observes, ‘This is typical of the utter absurdity of much so-called ‘critical’ work in the Biblical field.’”

“Strong words!” exclaimed Roland.

Brad looked him in the eye. “It was not long ago that critical scholars thought that any who believed in the Bible were beneath notice, from a scholarly standpoint, because they refused to accept the impressive findings of the critics!

“Now the most eminent of all Middle East archaeologists speaks of the ‘utter absurdity’ of ‘much’ of the critics’ work.

Roland let out a sigh. “Brad, how could I have been so gullible? Here was I, a level headed engineer, swallowing the ramblings of critics without even looking at the evidence. It seems to me that many writers have not kept up with the discoveries.”

## How this impacts on the extraterrestrial theory

“Smart observation,” smiled the archaeologist.

Roland took another drink and spoke again. “You know, this vindication of the Genesis record does make Zecharia Sitchin’s Sumerian text appear a little suspect.”

Brad leaned forward. “So tell me,” he said, “in the light of this evidence, how should one regard that extraterrestrial origins theory based on that Sumerian text?”

“Well,” murmured Roland, “it appears now that the *Intelligence Report* – the Bible is the best you’ll get.... It’s probably *the standard by which we can safely judge all others.*”

# 35

*Genesis: the table of nations –*

## “INSTANT” SNAP-SHOT IN TIME

Roland drove toward Thornton with what the archaeologist called some “homework”. It was a print-out on something they had no time to discuss.

“Take this. You’ll find it interesting,” Sheed had suggested.

It was ten forty one when Roland pulled into his garage. He picked up the papers and went inside. Time for bed now. He’d go through it tomorrow.

As he laid it on the coffee table, he glanced at the title: “Table of Nations”.

\* \* \* \* \*

The Table of Nations? Essentially, it was a list of the very earliest nations, found in the biblical book of Genesis, chapter 10. And, as Roland was about to discover, it turns out to be by far the most complete listing of ancient tribes and nations that we possess. Did you know that?

Professor W. F. Albright, one of the leading authorities on archaeology, called it “an astonishingly accurate document.” (W. F. Albright, *Recent Discoveries in Bible Lands*. New York: Funk & Wagnalls Co., 1955, p.4)

### **Older than critics claim**

It is also one of the *oldest* documents in the world.

Yes, I know. That tired old critic’s tale is still being bandied about that it was not written until the 6<sup>th</sup> century BC - from old myths collected in Babylon.

Okay, how would you like to be a detective?

## Genesis impossible to write in 6<sup>th</sup> C. BC

Let's discover why this book of Genesis could never have been written in the 6<sup>th</sup> century BC. Why that is utterly IMPOSSIBLE!

We shall focus on this Genesis *Table of Nations*. If you are a little drowsy, why not stand up right now and inhale three long, slow breaths of air... stretch your arms... and then get yourself comfortable again. I want you to be fresh and alert for this.

Now, doesn't that feel good? Are you ready now?

For starters, we shall consider the *unique tribal names* mentioned in the Table of Nations. Many of those names are of obscure tribes that had disappeared from the historical scene many centuries before the 6<sup>th</sup> century BC. (It is only through modern discoveries that we now know these names once existed – and that they were recorded with such astonishing accuracy in the Table of Nations).

You see, the records of these tribes were written, and then lost as early as 1000 BC... and not re-discovered until modern times. And even the *names* of these tribes were *lost*.

By the 6<sup>th</sup> century BC they were *unknown. Forgotten.*

The Table of Nations, you understand, was written while these tribes were still known. This document is about as old as you can get.

A 6<sup>th</sup> century BC forgery, as the critics claim? Of course not!

But we've barely started yet. This Table of Nations makes a sweeping statement...

Firstly, bear in mind that, according to the book of Genesis "the whole earth [was] overspread" from the three sons of Noah. (Genesis 9:19) And the Table of Nations (chapter 10), concludes with this statement: "These are the families of the sons of Noah, after their generations, in their nations: and by these were the nations divided in the earth after the flood." (ch. 10:32)



You notice it states quite plainly something that we discovered earlier - that the *nations of earth are all descended from the family of Noah!*

### Critics find “errors”

Now I’ll play devil’s advocate and ask this question:

Since the Table of Nations claims to identify all the nations on earth, and their habitats, then why does it OMIT places like the Americas, eastern Asia and the Pacific? Why does it cover only the area bounded by the Atlantic coast of Europe, Ethiopia and Iran - but no further?

As a critic, I might assert that

(a) According to this Table, Noah’s descendants occupied ONLY the Mediterranean/Middle East region. The biblical writer thought (wrongly) that the area from Europe to Ethiopia to Iran was the whole world. So the Bible is mistaken.

(b) The rest of the world outside this area must have comprised OTHER nations that were not touched by the Flood. So the Flood was NOT worldwide, and therefore Genesis is wrong.

Oh boy! Sounds pretty bad for the Table of Nations and its claims... doesn’t it? So how can we know the truth, really?

Here is how. And this is a fascinating insight. The Table of Nations is *a snap-shot in time* – an instant picture of the nations as they were *at a particular moment in history* –at the time when the Table was written.

It bears within itself the ID of a document written *about 2000 BC*. It describes those tribes in existence soon after the Babel incident.

It also identifies the regions in which they initially settled, and the nations which had by that time developed from those first tribal settlements.



## **100% accurate**

Now I shall make a sweeping claim... without fear of it being successfully refuted:

Wherever its statements can be sufficiently tested, the Genesis Table of Nations has been found completely accurate (often where, at one time, it seemed most certainly to be in error).

It provides insights into the relationships between peoples that are *only now* becoming obtainable by other independent means.

Here are some specific features that testify to its age:

### **1. The small development of the Japheth races**

The Indo-Europeans (descendants of Noah's son Japheth) were great colonisers and explorers, spreading from north-western Europe to the Indus Valley at quite an early date.

But the Table views them as occupying only Asia Minor (Turkey) and along the immediate Mediterranean coast.

Yet, shift the TIME SETTING to just a few centuries later and such omissions would be inconceivable.

### **2. Sidon mentioned, but not Tyre**

From the 13<sup>th</sup> century BC onward, Tyre was a major city-state on the eastern Mediterranean coast, which made a considerable noise in the world, whereas nearby Sidon did not.

The omission of Tyre in the Table clearly implies that Tyre had not yet risen to importance – if she existed at all.

Evidently, this Table was written prior to the important Hebrew-Tyre exploits of 1000 BC – and even prior to the 13<sup>th</sup> century BC.

### **3. Sodom and Gomorrah said to be still existing**

Since these cities around 1897 BC were quite dramatically destroyed, it is inconceivable that a later writer would mention them and not make some attempt at informing the reader what had happened to them subsequently.

It is more reasonable to accept that he was writing prior to their complete disappearance.

### **4. The great amount of space given to the Joktanites**

If you were to pick up an earlier history book on the settlement of North America by the white man and his interaction with Indian tribes, you would meet with tribal names like Seneca, Cree, Ojibway, Mohawk, Cherokee and Huron.

But today only a few of these would have any meaning.

Evidently the Joktanites of Arabia were both numerous and important when the Table was written. But within a few centuries they were either insignificant or unknown.

So if a Jewish writer of the 6<sup>th</sup> century BC had strung off this list of names (even if that were possible), they would mean little to his readers.

When you compare this long list of Arab tribes in the Table with the sparse information concerning the line of Shem to Peleg (the ancestors of the Jews), it is difficult to argue convincingly that the Table was a piece of Jewish propaganda favouring their own ancestry.

It bears the imprint of a document written at a time when these now-forgotten Arabian tribes were important to its readers.

## 5. The discontinuance of the Hebrew line at Peleg

Since Abraham (born 1996 BC) was so important as the father of all Jewish people, it is unthinkable that a Jewish author who was recording the ancestry of the Jews, would have neglected to indicate where Abraham originated.

The Table lists off the ancestry of the Hebrew race only from Shem to Peleg – just 5 generations. And then stops dead!

Since Sodom and Gomorrah are mentioned in the Table, and since Abraham must have been a figure of some importance before the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, we can only conclude that the writer did not know of his existence.

And this can mean only one of two things. Either Abraham was not yet alive, or he had not yet achieved prominence.

The Table of Nations was written *that early!*

## 6. Jerusalem not mentioned

This Table concerns itself with the names of people, cities they founded, tribes they gave rise to, and territories they settled in.

Yet, while the Jebusites are mentioned, their capital city (later to be named Jerusalem) is totally omitted.

This is analogous to an early Briton listing the settlements of importance and leaving out London.

The inference is that the writer never knew about Jerusalem. He lived at a time BEFORE it gained relevance to his readers.

## From around 2000 BC

Well, those are just a few of many intriguing evidences that the Table of Nations is much, much older than critics have been willing to admit.

At the very latest, the writer of the Table cannot have lived much after the 20<sup>th</sup> or 19<sup>th</sup> century BC.

While the Bible is not primarily a history book, modern scholarship has found that when it does touch on history it is remarkably accurate. Increasingly, its stories are seen by leading

scholars as solid history, set in backgrounds as real as our own today.

Something else. The detailed Table of Nations could have been composed only if a sustained high degree of communication existed among all these peoples. This implies an early knowledge of geography.

So are we missing something in our school history classes?

### **The bottom line: which is older?**

Here, then, is the pivotal question: Which is older – the *Intelligence Report* (the Bible) or the Sumerian texts? Summarised, here's what the evidence shows:

1. According to ten independent physical witnesses (see chapter 27), catastrophe on a world scale *reshaped the earth's surface* and *re-set the clocks* just over 4,000 years ago. We have the same approximate dating from all parts of the planet. According to these witnesses, the Genesis timing for the *Great Flood* is correct. One of the witnesses even gives a precise date - which agrees exactly with the Genesis date of **2345 BC**.
2. According to five ancient, independent pagan European genealogies (see chapter 28), the *dispersion of nations* from Babel occurred *five* generations after the Flood. This agrees precisely with the book of Genesis.
3. According to the ancient, historical book of Jasher, the *dispersion of nations* occurred close to the birth of Peleg (see chapter 29). Again, this agrees with the book of Genesis. And the chronology in the book of Genesis dates Peleg's birth at **2244 BC**.
4. According to the Genesis chronology, the dispersed nations (which include Sumeria) did not spring up until after the Babel event, that is, *after 2244 BC*. There is *nothing in archaeology* which requires an earlier date for any nation. (see chapters 30 to 32) (For further information see Jonathan Gray, *The Corpse Came Back*, ch. 18. <<http://www.beforeus.com/third.php> >)

5. Therefore, the Sumerian texts (from that same Sumeria which arose *after Babel*), at the very earliest go back no further than **2244 BC** or soon after.
6. The information recorded by Noah, which was incorporated into the *Genesis document* (see chapter 34), dates *at least as early*.

So what does this do to the theory that Sumerian documents go “back almost six thousand years”? You judge.

### **And which is superior?**

Then just as important is the comparative quality of the two sets of documents.

1. The Bible’s *self-authentication code* (chapter 15) testifies to an origin from a Superior Intelligence – which the Sumerian texts lack.
2. The Bible’s *prophecies* of coming world history (chapters 9 to 12) – so impossibly fulfilled – further confirm a Superior Intelligence behind its claims.
7. The Genesis document demonstrates a superior *literary* standard, a superior quality of *scientific* information, a *moral force* and an *objective historical character* (chapters 33 to 35), which are lacking in the Sumerian documents.

The biblical account was evidently not copied from any Babylonian or Sumerian sources. In its own right it is supported by numerous independent witnesses.

Consequently its report of origins – whether concerning mankind or the so-called “aliens” – has to be the correct one.

### **Best source concerning aliens**

You can be sure, then, of this: the Bible is *the safest source* to consult if you want to know the identity of the aliens, the “space brothers”, ETs, or whatever you choose to call them.

Now – are you ready for this? Here comes a truly *shocking* discovery concerning alien abductions. Take a deep breath...

## **Part 5:**

# **FINAL POWER PLAY**





## 36

*Incredible safety in a name -*

# HALTING A UFO ABDUCTION

If only Angie and Roland had known! It might have saved them all the trauma. But they didn't.

Here comes a most amazing discovery concerning alien abductions. Did you know, there is a group of human beings which, by and large, is notably exempt? But, before revealing who they are, let's learn how this startling fact was discovered.

One alien abduction research group in particular deserves credit for the discovery.

It was CE-4, mentioned in an earlier chapter. Each of the dozen or so Florida-based members of CE-4 is also a trained field investigator for MUFON (Mutual UFO Network). MUFON is unquestionably *the most respected clearing house in the world* for UFO reports. CE-4's president, Joe Jordan, also serves as a state section director of MUFON.

Due to the enormous number of abduction victims in the Florida region, CE-4 initiated its own research independently of MUFON. They began probing for patterns or other factors that may have been overlooked by other UFO researchers.

They drew a blank until their research turned in a spiritual direction. Clark had a belief in God, but it went no further than that. Jordan was a devout New Ager.

"Neither of us had ever even considered a spiritual origin of the phenomenon," recalls Wes Clark. "We had a hunch we were onto something." ("A Letter to the *Mufon UFO Journal*," <[www.alienresistance.org/ce4mufonletter.htm](http://www.alienresistance.org/ce4mufonletter.htm)>, August 1, 2003)

Their investigation took in spiritual groups such as Buddhists, Jews, Muslims... and agnostics. At first it bore no result. All appeared to have experienced abductions.

They studied more case histories.

And there emerged a puzzling trend.

It had to do with a group who were Christians.

## **Two categories**

And here, the researchers ran into a puzzle. They found that some Christians were abducted – and some left alone. And the question arose – Why?

Where to go from here?

Further investigation turned up confirmation that Christians fell into two categories.

1. The first type was those had given mental assent to Christian ideals or morality, but did not necessarily apply these personally to their lifestyle – either because they hadn't learned to, or didn't want to.

The researchers found in this group some who regularly claimed *abduction*.

2. However, the other type of person had given his life over to following Jesus Christ, the author of Christianity, the one whom the Bible claims as the Creator of the universe. This type of Christian applied biblical/Christian principles in his daily life.

The researchers found that this group was notably *exempt from abductions*.

In an attempt to get to the bottom of this, the CE-4 researchers enrolled in a Bible study course. This was decided upon simply as a means of practical research, and not from a pre-existing belief in Christianity.

This led them, inevitably, to find information concerning a spiritual battle being waged between the angelic forces of Lucifer (Satan) and those of the Creator. They discovered that the Bible provided answers concerning the nature of this spiritual battle.

This enabled them to perceive the difference between the Christians subject to abduction and the group that was not.

Group 1: The researchers described a Christian of this group as a “talk the talk” Christian. This type of person seems unable to discern spiritual things. Thus he remains open to spiritual attack from alien entities.

Some of these *regularly claim abduction*.

Group 2: This other type is the “walk the walk” Christian. He looks for a spiritual reality in the world around him. This would lead him to view abduction experiences as a spiritual attack. As a result, he would deal with them in a unique manner – by calling on the authority of Jesus Christ to intervene.

This class of Christians are *left alone* by the abductors. Very few born-again Christian believers show up among abductees. (“UFOs and Alien Abductions,” <[www.christianinformation.org/ufo2.html](http://www.christianinformation.org/ufo2.html)>, December 20, 2002) It’s as though the ETs tend to avoid this group.

This intriguing reality had been more or less ignored by many UFO researchers.

## **Abductions... halted???**

Then, to their astonishment, came a discovery that abductions can be halted!

Florida resident Bill D. was lying in bed when his abduction began. It was Christmas of 1976 – and late at night (a typical time for abductions).

Earlier that evening, looking out through his living room window, he had seen some anomalous lights over the forest to the north. A police helicopter, he thought. It must be searching for drug runners, or something.

The dogs had been agitated and several hours later they were still barking. He turned in for the night.

Kept awake by the barking dogs, he just lay in his bed, wanting to sleep. Suddenly he felt his body being paralysed. He couldn’t even cry out. Nothing was visible but a whitish grey, like a fog or mist. But he sensed that someone or something was in his room. His wife remained asleep.

Suddenly, he was being levitated above the bed. Then he sensed that he was being suspended by what felt like a pole pushed into his rectum.

He was overcome with terror. But he couldn’t scream.

What happened next was astonishing. Here is a copy of the direct transcript from his interview :

I thought I was having a satanic experience, that the devil had gotten a hold of me and had shoved a pole up my rectum and was holding me up in the air.... So helpless, I couldn't do anything. I said, 'Jesus, Jesus, help me!' or 'Jesus, Jesus, Jesus!' When I did, there was a feeling or a sound or something that either my words that I thought or the words that I had tried to say or whatever, had hurt whatever was holding me up in the air on this pole. And I felt like it was withdrawn and I fell. I hit the bed, because it was like I was thrown back in bed. I really can't tell, but when I did, my wife woke up and asked why I was jumping on the bed. (Interview with CE-4 Research Group, August 1996, cited in "The Premise of Spiritual Warfare," <[www.alienresistance.org/ce4premise.htm](http://www.alienresistance.org/ce4premise.htm)>, March 7, 2003)

An abduction being stopped? This was the first such report these experienced field investigators had ever heard. And here was a man who did it by just calling on the name of Jesus!

It should again be pointed out that such escapes were experienced only by persons who were strictly *living* their beliefs.

Although other researchers had identified the spiritual nature of abductions, none had ever looked so closely at this aspect.

Rita Elkins of the *Florida Today* newspaper extensively interviewed Jordan and Clark. The resulting article in her paper drew other experiencers to the surface. Here was one response:

Recently I read the *Florida Today* account of your research. I'm especially interested in the 'religious component' that you seem to be discovering in some UFO abduction cases. Back about 1973 my wife had a strange experience in the middle of the night. At the time we knew nothing about UFO abductions, so we had no category in which to place it other than extremely 'lucid nightmare.' It has many of the abduction 'components.' The point is that she stopped the entities and the whole experience with the name of 'Jesus.' ... It's vital to get this information out. ("CE-4 Case Files," <[www.alienresistance.org/ce4casefiles.htm](http://www.alienresistance.org/ce4casefiles.htm)>, August 2, 2003)

As the investigation spread wider, other similar reports were documented. Clark recalls:

As the number of cases mounted, the data showed that in every instance where the victim knew to invoke the name of Jesus Christ, the event stopped. Period. The evidence was becoming increasingly difficult to ignore. (“The Premise of Spiritual Warfare,” <[www.alienresistance.org/ce4\\_premise.htm](http://www.alienresistance.org/ce4_premise.htm)>, March 7, 2003)

After the *Florida Today* article also appeared online, the Internet news journal *CNI News* took it up.

When Europe’s most high-profile and respected UFO journal, *The Flying Saucer Review*, published it, responses came to CE-4 from all over the world. These included dozens of reports of abductions being halted in the name of Jesus Christ.

Not only did researcher Jordan speak with fellow directors of MUFON. He also got in touch with several of the leading abduction researchers in the United States.

Each requested anonymity. But *every single one of them* told Jordan, off the record, that they had cases of abductees halting their experiences in the name of Jesus Christ.

You ask, why would they suppress such findings?

One reason would be fear of damage to their credibility.

Jordan, himself a New Ager when he began his investigations (he is now a Christian), explains that most UFOlogists share New Age beliefs. They “go from one thing to another looking for development of a higher consciousness... Any place but in traditional religion.” (“Spiritual warfare? Some Look to Bible for Answers to Alien Abductions,” <[www.flatoday.com/space/explore/stories/1997b/081797b.htm](http://www.flatoday.com/space/explore/stories/1997b/081797b.htm)>, January 6, 2003)

One can understand that these researchers did not want their pre-existing belief system challenged. It should also be understood that with the abduction phenomenon at plague proportions, a “specialist” can make a good living.

However, it appears that other forces are also busy. Many “preventions” simply go unseen, unrealised (and unthanked).

Evidently, the Creator has *not* just delivered humanity over to the Legion of Lucifer for whatever they so choose to do with us.

It is also apparent that the real Jesus Christ is not really on good terms with the UFO phenomenon at all! One commentator has related the following UFO account: “A friend of mine had a UFO appear to him on one of their sacred mountains. It came in over his house and he said ‘I challenge you in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ--and it disappeared.’”

### **A power in this name?**

You might wonder. What is there about Jesus Christ that “spooks out” these aliens? Why does the mention of Jesus’ name affect the UFO beings so badly? Why be afraid of a name that is so often ignored, ridiculed, or used as a swear word in present day society?

If Jesus is a fantasy, then why do aliens (as well as séance spirits) “let go” of their victims when Jesus’ name is called upon? Answer that.

We have noted that the messages coming from these “space brothers” often aim at discrediting the Bible record of Jesus Christ. These entities frequently assert that Jesus is not the Rescuer of all the human race. Rather, that he was but one of several good religious leaders who have appeared on earth. Or sometimes they claim he is a UFO-naut like them.

All their energy seems focused on undermining the Bible and Jesus as man’s Savior and claiming instead that they themselves are the rescuers.

It is hard to shake off the impression that these aliens *do* really believe that Jesus is the One he claims to be. If he is their Creator and they themselves are deceivers, then they certainly have a *motive* to discredit him.

### **Compare the difference**

Before physical abductions, targeted victims are not asked if they want to be abducted. The time from appearance of an

alien to teleport is just a few seconds. Numerous folk have told their captors that “you have no right to do this.” The response they always receive is “we have every right.” That is, if they do receive an answer instead of a blank stare from cold black eyes.

As James Neff observes, “They are coming in and violating human will -- with little or no respect for the person, their emotional state or being, much the way we deal with lab rats (which is equally unnerving to me).” (James Neff, in response to Ted Twietmeyer, “Abduction Research Results Facts,” <[www.rense.com](http://www.rense.com)>, April 17, 2005)

We have noted that many abductees eventually stop fighting abduction and instead become passive and controlled.

On the other hand, it is noteworthy that repeatedly folk who become *practising* Christians, whether they be criminals, or simply broken-hearted, or abused, suddenly become full of new life, as new people. They describe it as like being “born again”. The transformation can be rapid.

This is a far cry from the transformations seen in the lives of ET abductees. We noted the depression, the emptiness, the mental illness, even suicides, that often result. Not to mention the physical deterioration that often sets in.

But rather than controlling people against their will, the message that Jesus taught on earth was one of liberation. The theme of his ministry was one of love, forgiveness and acceptance.

Come to think about it, wouldn't you like to live in a world where these virtues rule? The truth is, most people would.

Many, however, don't want what they regard as the “religious baggage” that goes with it. Why? Because they think of Christianity as just another religion.

However, the issue is not about religions. The UFO debate is *not* just about a religious viewpoint. It is about a *spiritual battle*.

This is a conflict of epic proportions. And of such importance that not a single person alive on this planet should ignore it.



The Bible records eyewitness reports that Jesus, when walking the streets of this planet, *used to stop* demon possession and free people from it. He claimed unlimited power.

Now think about this. Today we have evidence that abductions are *today being halted* by calling on Jesus' name. Might this suggest that he is indeed still alive and powerful?

It has been written of those two UFO researchers from CE-4:

Jordan and Clark didn't start out as 'Bible pounders with a point.' In fact, quite the opposite. They were just looking for truth like everyone else, and what they have found will cause the UFO/abduction phenomenon to never be viewed in exactly the same way again. It was the research they did and the data they found that made believers out of them. ("The Premise of Spiritual warfare," <[www.alienresistance.org/ce4premise.htm](http://www.alienresistance.org/ce4premise.htm)>, March 7, 2003)

Going by the mountain of evidence, it would seem far better to have a "close encounter" with the power of Jesus than with a Lucifer Legion gangster posing as an alien.

All right, what else should we know? Ask these contactees...

# 37

*The Jesus feud -*

## ETs AND SPIRITISM TODAY

The trumpet rose slowly from the table and dipped into a horizontal position. Eerily, it began spinning with a soft whir and moved around the room, stopping at intervals in midair. Then it paused in front of Victor. His heartbeat started to race.

Victor Ernest's family had been involved with spiritism for several generations.

When his seven year old sister died, the whole family began to attend séances at nearby Bemidji, Minnesota.

Some séance meetings involved a metal trumpet, made of aluminium or sheet metal. This stood upright in a damp saucer on a table in the middle of the room. As the medium went into trance, the trumpet would rise slowly, dip and start spinning and moving.

When it stopped in front of you, that meant you were invited to ask a question of the contact spirit.

### **Spirits preach morality**

Victor recalls:

The spirits I encountered at séances were, for the most part, very moralistic. They encouraged us not to smoke or drink or do anything else that would harm our minds and bodies. Ministers were told to preach morality, good manners and civic pride. I knew ministers who actually had spirit messages taken down by their secretaries and then used them from the pulpit! (Victor H. Ernest, *I Talked With Spirits*. Wheaton, Illinois, Tyndale House Publishers, 1972, p.38)

In his frequent role as an “angel of light” (2 Corinthians 11:14,15), Satan is ingeniously active in promoting ethical and humane projects – whose final culmination is chaos and rottenness.

## **A pretense of Christian ideas and words**

Some Christians are deceived by the spirits' praise of the ethical Christ. Spirits in séances say, "Live a good life; follow the steps of the master; learn the principles of Jesus, the great psychic and greatest medium of all."

Like many non-Christians, spiritists respect the Bible as far as it is useful to them.

And it is even possible for people afflicted with demons to confess who Jesus Christ is.

In séances, meditation plays an important role. God is referred to as Light. Jesus may be mentioned frequently. Hymns may be sung. Messages may contain a smattering of Bible passages.

In Spiritism, the Legion of Lucifer has perfected a masterpiece. Clothed in a religious garb, it is designed to allay suspicion and create a false security. The religious camouflage is so subtle that an uninstructed person might almost imagine that the spiritistic teaching differs little from Christianity.

One way for Satan to make his innovations more acceptable to Christians is to 'Christianize' them, cloaking them in a Christian disguise, thus making them more effective in influencing Christians.

## **Reject the idea of a Savior from sin**

Nevertheless, there is a Grand Canyon of a difference.

The Legion of Lucifer *endorses the ethical teaching* that ignores the need of a Deliverer. Christians who only emphasise conduct will give no trouble to Satan, at all. They will struggle and fret through life, trying hard to do good works and totally missing the key – their need to be rescued from their sins (wrongs).

The spirits often talk about an ethical Jesus, but *never* about the Deliverer who died *a sacrificial death for sin*.

That is a big difference.

Because the messages use sacred words and come from a spirit, many unwary people are lulled into trusting them as messages from God.

You will discover that some of spiritualism's teachings are similar to the beliefs of Buddhism, Zoroastrianism, Theosophy, and other religions. Spiritualism holds up the rosy prospect of becoming gods over individual realms.

### **“We’re on Satan’s side”**

Just 41 years after the birth of modern spiritism, a Norwegian spiritist periodical admitted its origin:

Spiritism is the serpent in Paradise offering man to eat of the tree of knowledge of good and evil.” (*Spiritten*, December 15, 1889, p. 2) Moses Hull, a spiritist lecturer, concurred: “A Truthful snake.... In answer to the question, ‘Who, then are we to believe – God or Satan?’ I answer, ... Satan, he has ever been truthful; that is more than can be said of the other one.... It was not the devil, but God who made the mistake in the Garden of Eden.... It was God, and not the devil, who was a murderer from the beginning. (Christian Edwardson, *Facts of Faith*. Nashville, TN.: Southern Publishing Association, 1943, p. 308. In later years Spiritism has changed its face, but not its heart, by professing Christianity, which has enabled it to enter into many churches.)

Huh?

### **Dangerous impulse**

Mrs S. and a friend had visited a Christian service with the aim to turn on satanic power. Some days later, she rang the pastor to state that she had been frightened by the Bible message she heard there.

After that meeting, she had received a strong impulse from her contact spirit to leap into the Mississippi River. She overcame that urge, but the next impulse was to take an overdose of sleeping pills. Which she did.

For several days, Mrs S. had hovered near death. Upon her recovery, she learnt that her friend had been committed to a mental hospital. This prompted her to phone the pastor.

Fortunately some very brave persons who were mind controlled by the Legion of Lucifer have, after escaping from spiritist slavery, spoken out.

And their testimonies are dynamite!

### **“She’s ashamed of me!”**

Mrs Whitney was a rather stout woman. She wore a full, dark dress that hung loosely from her neck to her ankles. Her hair was drawn up tightly on top of her head. And if you looked into her face her eyes would reveal a far away expression.

She was deep into spiritism, guided by a spirit that told her what food to buy, how to cook it, how and in what order to wash her dishes, how to arrange her home, and the procedure to follow in her housework. It even selected her clothes and told her how she should wear them – clothes that made her look as though she were demented.

But she was convinced that God was guiding her.

One day the spirit said to her, “There is just one more thing you must do for me. Then you will be mine fully. Tomorrow I want you to take a hatpin and pierce your eyes. Stand in front of the mirror. I will show you exactly how to stick the pin into your eyeballs.”

Mrs Whitney got the hatpin and placed it on the dresser beside her bed, ready for the instructions the next day, happy to know she would then belong wholly to God.

That afternoon her daughter made a comment that shocked her: “Mother, you are so different now.”

“Different? How am I different?”

“You’re different in every way. I used to love to bring my friends home. But now I am ashamed. It’s the way you dress and act. And even your face looks different!”

She’s ashamed of me! My child is ashamed of me! The mother was heartsick at Florence’s words. But why should she be ashamed of me? I do everything the spirit tells me. So she should see I’m getting closer to God every day. Yet she’s ashamed to let her friends know I am her mother!

Retiring to her bedroom, Mrs Whitney stared into the mirror. She couldn't see anything different. How was she different?

Then suddenly she saw herself as her daughter, and others, must have seen her. The insight horrified her.

Do I really look that way? No wonder Florence is ashamed of me! Why would the Lord make me look so queer? But – could it be that I am deceived? Oh, no!

“Who are you?” she demanded of the spirit.

“I am your guiding spirit.” The answer came soothingly.

“Yes, I know. But who are you?”

“I'm your best friend.”

“Are you the Holy Spirit?”

“No.”

“Are you Jesus?”

“I told you I am your best friend.”

“But are you Jesus Christ?”

“No!” the spirit snapped.

“No? Then who are you?”

“I said I am your guiding spirit.” This time the answer came in a scream.

### **The “Jesus” challenge forces an admission of identity**

“In the name of Jesus Christ I command you to tell me who you are.”

***“The devil.”***

To say that Mrs Whitney was shocked is to put it mildly. She was unnerved, nearly crushed.

“Don't try to get away from me!” the spirit warned. “I have chains about you that you can never break.”

And from that day the woman began to experience harassment of a frightening kind. She would feel hands push against her as she walked. Other times she would be tripped up. When lying in a hammock in the garden, she would be dumped out onto the ground.

Mrs Whitney felt desperate. But she was among those fortunate ones who broke free. And how that happened is a long story. However, she testifies that it was only when she made a determined effort to pray, reaching out to Jesus, that the spirit finally left her alone.

Then she became a completely changed woman. And how different she looked! Neatly dressed, with combed hair in a becoming style. No longer that wild look in her eyes. Instead, a kind, pleasant expression that made people want to be with her. (Theresa A. Whelpley, *Unmasking the Spirits*. Washington, D.C.: Review and Herald Publishing Association, 1977, pp. 43-49)

### **Spirit confesses, “I am Satan”**

Elsie England, a former spiritist, tells her experience:

“As a young girl, barely able to spell out words I played with my grandmother’s ouija board. On one occasion, after I had tired of amusing myself by questions that were speedily answered, I asked who was answering the questions. Quickly the name ‘Satan’ was spelled out. But because I did not know that was a name for the devil I just laughed to myself at the funny name – but I never forgot it.”

“I had always been considered a psychic. I could read fortunes from cards and tea leaves, and considered myself unusually gifted. Never once did I consider that I was on the devil’s playground, for I was actually a very religious child and wanted to obey the Lord.

“As time went on, I progressed to actual séances of spiritism, and the medium at the séances I attended always claimed she drew her strength while in a trance directly from me.

“The medium was a housewife by the name of Kitty Henn. Her husband, Max, acted as host and led in the hymn singing, which supposedly ‘put her under’.

“The eight or ten of us who attended would sit in darkness and quietly sing, until we would hear the characteristic sigh and heavy whispering sounds coming from Kitty.

“Following this, the spirits would come in strongly, particularly the ones we knew as the guides, who were usually,

supposedly, Indians. Black Hawk, Kitty's favourite guide, grunted as we supposed Indian chiefs did, and announced himself, 'Me Blackie Hawk.'

"Our group, some of whom were public school teachers and other professional people, would sit in the dark for several hours communicating. Actually, much of the conversation with the spirits was pure twaddle meant to please those present. Nothing profound was discussed and I lost my patience many times because things like lost keys and house sales were delved into at great length. I could not understand people who had passed to a better place and who were 'so happy' there paying such undue attention to petty things such as lost keys.

"All manner of spirits came to my husband and me when we went to Kitty's – people who had died natural deaths and others who had committed suicide. These always came in whispering, 'Please pray for me,' which told us they had committed suicide. Their messages were usually brief, expressing their joy on the plane where they found themselves....

### **Questions about Jesus discomfort the spirits**

"Only one thing really troubled me. On the couple of occasions when I asked a spirit if it had seen Jesus, there was great, almost shocked, silence, and the medium immediately lost contact with her spirits and had to be sung back into her trance. I quickly realised that there was something wrong with mentioning the name of Jesus at a séance, but I had no idea why."

Elsie English states that the spirits finally moved right into her home in New York City and she had constant communication with them, until her spectacular conversion to Christianity. (*Ibid.*, pp. 23-29)

### **"Our leader is Lucifer"**

Edwardo Dingaoson had just a month earlier moved into a pagan New Guinea village. He was a missionary.



One day, while he was some distance from the village, a messenger brought an urgent request that he return home.

Arriving home, he found Sima, a 19-year-old domestic, lying on her mat, terrified.

The reason for her fear was that voices were coming from her body.

“What’s going on?” asked Edwardo.

A deep voice responded, “We are spirits and we have taken possession of this girl. We do not want her to study the Bible with you as she has been doing.” They claimed to be five spirits.

Earnestly, Dingaosen and his wife prayed for the demons to depart, but they continued to torment the girl. Day after day they afflicted her. They would not even let her eat. Naturally, this caused excitement in the village and people came to see her.

One villager asked the spirits, “Do you have a leader?”

“Yes,” came the answer.

“What is the name of your leader?”

A husky voice responded, “His name is Lucifer.”

### **“We were cast out of Paradise”**

Another villager asked where they came from.

“We were originally in Paradise,” was the response. “But we chose to follow Lucifer and were cast out of heaven. For a time we went to other worlds, but now we spend all our time on earth. Wherever our leader tells us to go, we go.”

Then they were asked, “Are you happy?”

Five voices almost shouted, “No!”

The spirits said they were going to leave Sima, but would be back with more spirits. The girl was then thrown against the wall. A few minutes later she became normal. Then, for the first time in six days, she ate and began to recuperate from the terrifying experience.

Four days later she was thrown violently to the floor as spirits again took control of her body.

Dingaosen appointed a day of fasting and prayer. He invited the villagers to come and witness the power of God.

Joined by a few Christians from a neighbouring village, Edwardo and his wife ate nothing all day or night. They prayed constantly.

As midnight approached, the spirit voices issuing from Sima's mouth began cursing. Then they cried, "We cannot stay longer. The good messengers are too strong for us."

Then there was peace. Sima had been delivered from the Legion of Lucifer.

It is worth noting that although the Lucifer Legion does have considerable power, they can go only so far. The heavenly messengers loyal to the Creator apparently have greater power imparted to them than Lucifer possesses.

The good news is that numerous persons all over the world who have experienced this trauma of encounter with spirits are managing to escape.

## **Violent reactions to commands in the name of Jesus**

From case histories, it appears that spirits will frequently mention Jesus, if it will help their agenda. But for a person to pry with questions about Jesus evokes discomfort on the part of a Luciferian spirit.

However, the most violent reaction occurs when a contactee commands the spirit in the name of Jesus. This provokes anger and fear. Spirits are known to confess, when challenged, that they serve Satan (Lucifer) and that Jesus is their enemy.

## **In the author's own family**

"I want you to come into practice with me," said Fred Gray to my father Les. Fred was a leading Sydney spiritualist doctor.

"I'm sorry, Dad, I cannot," was Les' response. "You say that your healings are done under spirit direction. I cannot join you in that. I have decided to live as a Christian."

“Very well. If that’s your final word, then here’s mine. Because you refuse to work with the spirits, I warn you that from this day onward, they will haunt you wherever you go.”

They moved to Christchurch, New Zealand. One moonlit night shortly after this, as my parents lay awake in bed, a sound very much like someone carrying a sack of empty bottles on his back was heard coming along the street. It stopped at the gate. The gate opened. The sound continued down the footpath beside the house, and paused at their bedroom window. Then it travelled through the open window and stopped at the foot of the bed.

For a moment my mother lay frozen, her eyes wide open. The moon was shining full, but she saw nothing.

Within seconds my father felt unseen hands around his neck, choking him.

He gasped, “Jesus, save me!”

And the grip was loosed. But the next morning finger bruises showed on his neck.

I have received reports from others with similar experiences.

### **They can “shape-shift”**

It was noted in an earlier chapter that, out of the mouth of a human, an alien spirit can speak with his own voice.

Also, through a human’s body (or apart from a human’s body) they can appear visible.

They can “shape-shift” ... or manipulate the mind into creating an impression of appearing human.

Marj Beasley was a spirit medium in Indiana for 35 years.

People would come hundreds of miles to have her divine for them and to invoke the spirits (as they hoped) of their relatives and friends.

Photographs were taken of her while under the influence of spirits. And the faces of these spirits could be seen in the photographs.

One afternoon while her mother was with her in the kitchen, the apparition of an Indian chief appeared and stripped

her of all her outer garments and hosiery. She said it was done so quickly that for a moment she did not know it until her mother gasped in horror.

The spirits would appear sometimes as horses, *serpents*, cats and dogs. When she commanded them in the name of Jesus to leave her, they would snarl at her and show their terrible teeth.



### **The snarling serpent**

A lady who had been a New Ager turned to Jesus and decided to burn her old anti-Christian books. As the smoke and flames ascended up the chimney, a snarling *serpent* showed itself in the fireplace. (Evan Sadler, *Hope International NZ Ltd. Newsletter*, February, 2005, p. 2, and in a phone conversation with the author in April, 2005)

### **The spirits oppose Jesus as the Savior from sin**

Former spiritist Victor Ernest relates that his family gathered frequently before bedtime to find out what the spirit world might reveal to them.

Then one day he did something dangerous! Out of curiosity, he bought himself a copy of the King James Bible. It cost him \$4.98.

He started reading. And with amazement he saw this statement: “*Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God...*” (1 John 4:1)

He thought, “So this must mean there are good spirits and bad spirits.” He read on: “...*because many false prophets are gone out into the world.*”

As it turned out, the very next séance he attended was a question and answer trumpet séance. Each attendee was allowed three questions.

As the trumpet floated through the air to rest in front of him, he directed his first question to the control spirit. In fear and trembling, he asked if the spirit believed that Jesus was the Son of God.

The spirit answered smoothly, “Of course, my child, Jesus is the Son of God. Only believe as the Bible says.”

He had never heard a spirit affirm this. He had heard it said in séances that Jesus was a great medium, or a Judean reformer, and that he was now an advanced spirit on a higher plane.

Before long, the trumpet came back to him. He was anxious to make each question count. Now, falteringly he asked, “O thou great and infinite spirit, do you believe that Jesus is the Savior of the world?”

“My child, why do you doubt? You have been this long with us. Why do you continue to doubt?” Then the spirit began to quote Scripture about believing.

## **Violent reaction to Jesus’ crucifixion and blood**

Ernest remembers:

When the trumpet returned for my third and last question, I reviewed what the spirit had said. ‘O spirit, you believe that Jesus is the Son of God, that he is the Savior of the world –

do you believe that Jesus died on the cross and *shed his blood for the remission of sin?*

The medium, deep in a trance, was catapulted off his chair. He fell in the middle of the living room floor and lay groaning as if in deep pain. The turbulent sounds suggested spirits in a carnival of confusion.

We all rushed forward to help him. The control spirit had prepared us with instruction about how to revive a person in such an emergency, and we massaged the pulse areas until he revived like a person who had fainted.

I never went to another séance. I had tested the spirits and found they were not of God. (Victor H. Ernest, *I Talked With Spirits*. Wheaton, Illinois, Tyndale House Publishers, 1972, p.32)

As Ernest later observed, “I was never told by the spirits who sends them, but as they oppose the truth that Jesus is the Savior from sin, it is obvious that they serve the master of sin, Satan.”

## **Physically attacked after resigning**

Victor Ernest did a complete U turn, to become a Christian minister.

Because the influence of demonism continued strong among his relatives, Ernest moved with his wife Alice and their children in 1949 to Oregon. He testifies that when he spoke on demonism in special meetings,

...the demons I had once welcomed into my body in séances attacked my mind and vocal cords.

Sometimes my memory would go blank; other times my throat would constrict and I couldn't speak. As soon as I prayed for help through the power of Jesus' blood, the attack ceased and I continued. These assaults continued sporadically for thirteen years before my spiritual defences were built up to keep demons from penetrating my body. As my spiritual armor became strong, I was able to help others assailed by spirits. (*Ibid.*, p.59)

## **Why are these aliens obsessed with Christianity?**

You might well wonder why it is that the aliens have a single-minded obsession to undermine the Bible's account of the only "One" who appears to be able to stop them – Jesus.

What is motivating them?

UFO researchers Ankerberg and Weldon ask:

... how credible is it to think that literally thousands of extraterrestrials would fly millions or billions of light-years simply to teach New Age philosophy, deny Christianity, and support the occult.... Why would they consistently lie about things which we know are true, and why would they purposefully deceive their contacts? (John Ankerberg and John Weldon, *The Facts on UFOs and Other Supernatural Phenomena*. Eugene, OR.: Harvest House Publishers, 1992, p. 13)

Ankerberg and Weldon have hit it on the head. The denial of Jesus Christ's claims and a desire to reshape religious views is a common thread that runs through UFOlogy.

Doesn't it seem incredible that space travellers are *so interested* in Christian ideas?

## **Intelligence Report says he "deceives the world"**

As the *Intelligence Report* warns us, Satan "deceives the whole world." And his agent "deceives them that dwell on the earth by means of those miracles which he had power to do." (Revelation 12:9; 13:14)

Believe it! The occult is not what it purports to be!

Spiritualism – or spiritism – is an ancient religion. It is recorded that early in the history of Israel Moses warned his people against seeking information FROM THE SPIRIT WORLD: "Do not turn to mediums or wizards; do not seek them out, to be defiled by them: I am the Lord your God." (Leviticus 19:31)

The Legion of Lucifer has one obsession, which it pursues ruthlessly: that is, to enslave every person on this planet and cut them off from their only source of rescue.

\* \* \* \* \*

Roland glanced at his watch. He wanted to be home early today. It was Angie's birthday.

He pulled up the driveway...



**38***Mind programming -***ABSOLUTE POWER**

“What the...”

Quickly, Roland leapt out. He grabbed Angie. In shock, he dropped the petrol can and the matches. He literally dragged her away onto the lawn.

The car exploded in flames.

“Are you out of your mind?” he glared.

She slapped his face and pushed him. He staggered backwards.

Angie was pronounced insane. His heart tearing apart, Roland reluctantly agreed to let her go for treatment. “We don’t know,” said Dr Watters, soberly. “You’d better prepare yourself. It might be two years... or forever.”

\* \* \* \* \*

Roland now realised that he and Angie were victims of a war. It was a conflict that affected every person on this planet, to some extent. Indeed, there could be no doubt that a cosmic battle was being waged over our future.

**The true enemy**

The underlying cause of our global troubles is:

- not rich versus poor
- not America versus terrorism
- not Israel versus the Arabs
- not evolution versus creation
- not religion versus atheism.

These are no more than a smoke screen. The major and deadliest drama being enacted, behind these and behind

everything else, is a relentless war behind two major personalities – Lucifer (Satan) and one known as Jesus Christ.

This is not some will-o-the-wisp imaginary feud between mythical characters. One of the key moves in this feud was an event in REAL TIME in history – the crucifixion of Jesus. This feud touched history at a *defined geographical location* and at a *definite moment in world history*.

This is a REAL feud. And it is to be fought to the DEATH.

## **The issue we face**

What is the big issue, then? An extraterrestrial civilization from a dying planet coming to take Earth's resources for their survival? An alien race in cahoots with government leaders to share futuristic technology in return for favors? A galactic federation concerned about our aggressive attitude and advancement into the space age?

Oh, do come on. Our enemy is the earth-bound Legion of Lucifer. They are ruthless. They have raised up powerful organizations and pitted them one against another. Global corporate leaders...military machines... religious isms... political unions... each of them with a direct connection to global commerce. The great deception is in place.

## **2 opposing forces**

The war is not just reptilians versus humans, as one popular writer assumes. It is much bigger than Icke realises. The conflict is in the spiritual realm, between that “dragon”, or “serpent” named Satan (Revelation 12:7-12; Genesis 3:15) and the Creator of everyone on earth. The Legion of Lucifer have a consuming hatred of God. They hate His revealed messages. They hate the human race.

These evil entities claim to support and protect the minds and the destiny of the people. In fact, they use, and sickeningly abuse, the people for their own horrific ends. They treat the mass of the people with utter contempt.

Human sacrifice has always been a delight to them... whether ceremonial or by organized war. The people are just

cattle to be used to advance the agenda of global control and mastery. And at the end of it all, they would like to destroy the human race... just to spite the Creator.

Satan himself, as the Prince of the power of the air (Ephesians 2:2), has been using that power to broadcast negative thoughts and attitudes with rather dramatic results. Electronic devices, including over 500 communications satellites, fill our airwaves with smut, sex, and filth of every kind. Between sending stations and receiving devices (computers, satellite television, satellite radio, cell phones, and so on) are the airwaves, filled with impulses of pornography, violence, and unspeakable graphic displays. Using this power of the air, he has been leading the human race down a degenerate path until now, when weapons of mass destruction as well as environmental problems, have placed us on the very brink of self annihilation.

### **Mind control program**

Adolf Hitler commissioned his henchman Heinrich Himmler to study individuals of the Nordic race who had undergone multi-generational abuse. (This is abuse carried on within the same family for several generations, as with grandfather to son, to grandson.) Hitler's interest was that such victims are more open to outside suggestion. The Nazi leader's aim was to prepare them to rule over regions in his planned New World Order.

Individuals who have suffered trauma are more receptive in taking orders, without being aware they are mind controlled.

Hitler's plan in placing such individuals in positions of extraordinary power, was that as a master puppeteer he would pull invisible strings to their minds, controlling what they said and did. His aim was to produce puppets with no conscience, no expression of soul.

Witnesses have testified of similar government mind control programs in operation today. First the victims experience a trauma that is literally too horrible to comprehend. This leaves them feeling total helplessness, beyond their power

to escape. Those who ultimately emerge from these programs do not relate to anyone else's pain, except as it gives them pleasure.

Were you aware that there are leaders today wielding power who think and behave in this precise manner? Can you guess who is controlling their minds?

When the master communicates ideas by means of telepathy, the contactee is not even aware it is happening. He thinks it is his own mind at work. Believe it. Many leaders in government, as well as economists, philanthropists and religious leaders are "unknowingly" doing the bid of the masters.

## **The real dark overlords**

Early in 2005, a commentator nudged close to the truth:

George Bush serves as a lightning-rod diversion to distract people's attention away from the actual hidden evil demons that are manipulating our planet through wars, finance, false religion, and a reconditioning of our mental faculties.

To confuse George W. Bush with these individuals, or to transfer their tendencies onto him, is to make a very grave error in analysis. George Bush did not start our current war; George Bush did not rig the past two elections; George Bush does not believe he's led by God (he doesn't even believe in God, but rather bows to an occult Skull & Bones diety); George Bush is not a conservative, and George Bush is not enemies with Osama bin Laden, Saddam Hussein, or even Al Gore and John Kerry. It's all a con-job because these individuals are all on the same team, and they're all serving the same masters in one capacity or another. And what is their ultimate goal as they sell their souls? Answer: to preserve the controlling elite's status quo, and subsequently their positions of subservient power within it.

George Bush is merely a puppet; a figurehead; and an implementer. The biggest decision he makes each day is what kind of cereal he's going to eat for breakfast. (<http://69.28.73.17/thornarticles/dark.html>)

Why should Satan have to “rob, kill and destroy” all by himself if he can incite men into savaging one another?

## **The agenda for mind programming**

Is it possible that some people are being “programmed” for something too horrible to contemplate? That is entirely possible. The likelihood that the world is heading for a final “showdown”, is being discussed in many areas, including military and ecological.

If the Lucifer Legion know their time is short, they might well be programming men and women to obey when a signal is given... a signal which they will be programmed to obey, but are at present unaware of.

As early as three decades ago, UFO researchers J.Allen Hynek and Jacques Vallee suspected that there “might be a conditioning process” going on. (J. Allen Hynek, *Today's Student*, April 3, 1978) They hinted that UFO entities were deliberately programming human observers with false information in order to hide their true nature and purpose.

As a showdown approaches, the battle is in full swing for the control of mankind and the earth.

## **Play “good guys” and “bad guys”**

The Legion of Lucifer operate a central planning strategy for some to pose as the bad guys, while others will pose as the good guys.

From the outset, Lucifer assigned to each of his legion a part to act. His agents were to be sly, artful and cunning. Some were to act the part of good, charismatic personalities, defending noble ideals. Others were to play the bad guys.

This propaganda has been disseminated for years now, that there are good AND evil forces in their ranks. (“Good” ETs are Greys. “Bad” ETs are known as Blues or given some other label.)

The media has been flooded with what amounts to a campaign blitz. First arouse panic and fear. Then offer the solution: the world will be saved from imminent destruction by

evil ETs, through the intervention of good ETs! Having the Blues play the role of evil aliens, and pitting them against the good aliens, will set the stage to welcome them as friends, benefactors and saviors. Following this, Lucifer himself will personally stage his last, crowning act in the drama – which we shall cover in the next chapter.

### **Identical *modus operandi* in spiritism**

Precisely this same delusion of “good guys” / “bad guys” is propagated in spiritism. As an ex-spiritist recognises:

In contrast to the high moral and ethical tone of the séances in our home, I attended some where the spirits were blasphemous and sensual. Spiritualists call them earthbound demons, and they served to reinforce our conviction that the spirits at our séances were truly from God.

Only later did I realize that the blasphemous séances were another subtle trick of Satan to convince us that there were “good” spirits and “bad” spirits, and that we were indeed communicating with God at our séances. For all evil spirits are demons, fallen creatures serving Satan. Even the spirits who told us to improve ourselves morally and spiritually were doing so to gain our allegiance for themselves and keep us from God himself. Even mediums are often unaware that they are dealing with the kingdom of Satan. (Victor H. Ernest, *I Talked With Spirits*. Wheaton, Illinois, Tyndale House Publishers, 1972, p. 38)

These so-called “good” and “bad” spirits serve the same master, Lucifer, and serve him well, each giving their respective followers a sense of goodness and of guidance without dependence on any Creator; as well as a sense of power and self-fulfilment in defiance of the Maker’s directions.

### **Many “conflicting” ideologies invented**

Overall, the master deceiver promotes two parallel operations. His cronies incite crime, drugs, pornography, violence, or political unrest. Simultaneously they cleverly promote different religions in a plan to seduce spiritually

aspiring people away from the Creator's rescue plan. Doctrines of one group have been set up in direct opposition to those of another group. Their intention: to breed disharmony, distrust, confusion, war and arrogance.

A proliferation of religions was engineered to get the people of Planet Earth going in all different directions... whether to Hinduism, Buddhism, Freemasonry, the New Age, Evolution, UFOism, Humanism, Atheism, Spiritism, Satanism, Romanism, Agnosticism, Gnosticism, Astrology, you name it.

It matters not if the various groups have conflicting ideas, as long as potential victims find one of them attractive. Creating conflict will enable the Legion of Lucifer to *divide and rule*.

### **The reason why**

Another reason for setting up counterfeit religions is survival. These religions provide severe competition against the spread of the good news about the Creator's rescue plan – thus extending Satan's time.

But the main reason for his promotion of these ideologies is so that he can be worshipped undercover as a god. This gives him great satisfaction. They are an avenue whereby Satan now receives worship, just as if he were a god.

The tragic part is that most writers on aliens and the occult, along with their followers, are blind to the fact that the Legion of Lucifer has created these movements, as well as the opposing organizations that fight them.

One way to make his New Age more acceptable to Christians is to "Christianize" it in certain ways. It's a big game.

And they're smart. Remember, Lucifer and his crew were once in heaven. Thus they possess a great deal of divine knowledge. They use this advantage to enhance their deceptive power.

Since a certain portion of New Age teachings (as well as teachings of all the religions they've set up) are undoubtedly truthful – for example, some of the holistic health ideas – many are drawn into the trap.

## **The evolution-extraterrestrial recipe**

To reinforce their campaign of deceit, the Legion of Lucifer masterminded the theory of evolution, which falsifies the history of the earth and the origin of man. Now they are adding to that the myth of wars between planets.

Their aim from the start has been to sabotage the Creator's status in the eyes of the population... so as to contaminate, confuse and degrade this planet and its inhabitants.

One of the worst serial killers in American history, Jeffrey Dahmer, explained the thoughts that helped shape his character. He did not believe there were eternal consequences to his actions. Notice his explanation:

If a person doesn't think there is a God to be accountable to, then – then what's the point of trying to modify your behaviour to keep it within acceptable ranges? That's how I thought anyway. I always believed the theory of evolution as truth, that we all just came from the slime. When we, when we died, you know, that was it, there is nothing.... (Jeffrey Dahmer, from an interview with Stone Phillips, *Dateline NBC*, November 29, 1994)

The Legion of Lucifer's deceptive re-writing of the history of the universe, so as to impose an alternative vision of man's future, appears to be paying off. Folk who don't want God and don't want anyone else to love Him either, have put out so much libellous mis-information against the Creator, His *Intelligence Report* and those who follow His principles, that it is easy to become confused. I meet confused folk everywhere.

Granted that many New Agers, psychics and others are quick to accept Jesus as one of their own, yet they choose to ignore Jesus' clear teaching that the Bible is the Word of God and literal history – especially with regard to the origin of the earth. You will notice that there is a great hostility toward such a belief.

## **What's the solution?**

You ask, how can one really know the truth? Here are some suggestions:



1. Empty yourself of all preconceived ideas.
2. Look around you at the astonishing design in nature - and ask yourself if it wasn't carefully thought out by a Supreme Intelligence who loves beauty.
3. Say a silent prayer to that Creator, asking that if He really exists and cares about you, that He will put His Spirit within you.
4. Get yourself a personal copy of the *Intelligence Report* (the Bible) and read it - especially the first four books of the second section (called the New Testament). Give them the benefit of the doubt. Take them at face value. And just see if something wonderful doesn't burn in your heart. Don't be surprised if you discover an up-to-date, living power in their message.
5. Be willing to do what those four books (Gospels) suggest you do. Not only your present happiness, but your future security may well hinge on it.

You are reading these practical tips from a scientist who did just that – only to discover a freedom, a peace and a quality of life he never knew before.

It's time to start living, Jack!

# 39

## *A showdown looming -*

# CAN YOU SURVIVE IT?

Yes, it's coming.

The great increase in sightings and abductions in modern times indicates that both the forces of good and evil are PREPARING FOR A FINAL SHOWDOWN. This is being discussed in many areas, including military, ecological and theological.

If you are knowledgeable, you can sense it. Something very cataclysmic is poised to happen. It seems like forces are building toward some stupendous event which has the potential to destroy earth and its inhabitants.

Some observers sense that we may be living at the end of time. In fact, Jesus himself listed a proliferation of signs to watch for, including sightings of amazing things in the sky.

The *Intelligence Report* has alerted us to the coming huge increase in demon activity as we approach the end of human history. (1 Timothy 4:1; Revelation chapters 6 to 18) It says demons will control world leaders. (Revelation 16:14) Dependence on these unseen spiritual forces will increase even as scientific knowledge is increasing.

Indeed, demon activity is very much to the fore in Western countries today. And as the world draws nearer to the climactic confrontation between Lucifer and the Creator, we are experiencing intense intrusions from the spirit realm into the physical world.

This is in pursuit of their diabolical plan to drag today's world toward disaster – just as they did immediately before the Great Flood. At that time, they degraded the human race until there was no remedy. Are the Legion of Lucifer again setting mankind up for destruction? Of course they are!

It is important for us to be aware of this. Much of what occurs in the world has other-world significance.

If you only knew, the Legion of Lucifer are the cause of much, if not most, of the calamities now happening in the world, including natural disasters.

It is impossible for our minds to conceive the horrors that await this world in the near future. Lucifer loves nothing more than to destroy and kill, because he obsessively HATES the Creator who made us.

In this contest, both sides know “crunch time” is coming. Both are saying that some will be saved and some will not.

But whose version of coming events are you to believe? They cannot both be right.

A wise person will choose carefully. The consequences will be final.

## **Their plans for the earth**

When you see it brought in, you will not like the changes the aliens have in mind for the society in which we live.

It was Hitler who said, during World War II, “If I go down, I will drag the whole world down with me.”

Knowing that their days are numbered, the Legion of Lucifer will embark on a slash and burn program to take as many down with them as possible – just to spite their enemy, Jesus.

Aware that *his reign of terror is about over*, Lucifer is preparing for the final battle. This is WHY we see his efforts intensifying, with an increase of activity in the spiritual paranormal world, as well as greatly increased reports of UFO and alien sightings and encounters.

Lucifer knows that the Creator has set a time limit. The drama is racing to its climax.

The Creator has an agenda for a beautiful new earth, with no more hatred, pain, sickness, or death. A world in which those who choose will live in harmony with one another, in harmony with all nature, and in harmony with their Creator.

## **Deception is the game**

The star rebel knows that to deceive the population, is to render them unprepared for the closing events, so that they will be annihilated.

A major part of the Lucifer Legion's plan is to bring the world into a new order. To achieve this, they must weaken the sovereignty of nations – particularly those that present the greatest obstacle to the Lucifer plan – nations such as the United States of America.

They know that infiltration behind the lines as well as into the highest government circles will be easier than overt military invasion.

The mind controlled human agencies preparing for this takeover are operating out of the highest places in the Federal Government. They're cooperating with 'spirit guides and mediums' and using astrology and numerology. The spirit guides are telling them what to do, and the entire thing is being orchestrated at the highest spiritual levels. Every base has been covered. They've thought of everything.

The peak of the Lucifer Legion's strategy will be one great unifying religion under their auspices. Although supposed to embrace all faiths, yet it will be noticeably intolerant of biblical Christianity.

However, when this event becomes a *fait accompli*, it will draw into Satan's grasp most of the Christian and religious world.

## **Lucifer's trump card**

A UFOlogist has linked a location in Israel which has been the focus of many UFO sightings with a biblical word for "eastward" associated with the coming of the Messiah. May this be a clue as to why the Legion of Lucifer is using UFOs? Is there an important connection between the UFO flap and the prophecies of the Second Coming? Is Jesus' prophecy concerning false christs applicable here? "Watch out that no one deceives you," He said. "For many will come in my name,

claiming, 'I am the Christ,' and will deceive many.'" (Matthew 24:4,5)

Finally, Satan will pull out his trump card.

Countless times the Lucifer Legion have stated their goal is to help mankind, to warn them of coming disasters. Often mention is made of the coming of the Master, the Messiah, the second time, to save planet Earth.

The demonic genius is building up this event in the minds of millions, programming them to accept his possible masquerade as Jesus Christ.

The devil has scored a major publicity victory by inspiring the media to paint him as a loathsome, ugly, horned fictitious myth. So people will be easily fooled when they see a real, brilliant being resembling their idea of Jesus Christ. If they reject the idea of Satan's existence, they will assume all miraculous and wondrous manifestations are from God. Even if they do believe in Satan's existence, the visit of an angelic being can make them want to believe it is from God.

You can expect Lucifer to make an appearance as the most dazzling being earthlings have ever seen, masquerading as "a messenger of light." (2 *Corinthians 11:14*) His appearance as the Cosmic Christ will be the last great act to captivate the world before divine intervention brings his reign of terror to an end.

This grand counterfeit will so closely resemble the real, that only the advance knowledge given in the Bible will prevent deception. He will probably demonstrate dramatic healing power and quote freely from the Bible, often repeating the words spoken by Jesus in Palestine.

Most Christians will hail him as Jesus. Lucifer's angels will work frantically to communicate to New Agers that the Cosmic Christ has arrived. They will convince the Muslims that the long awaited Imam Mahdi has come. They will telepathically impress the Buddhists that Jesus Christ is the fifth Buddha. And they will convince the Hindus to believe that Jesus is the incarnation of Krishna.

Lucifer finally achieves what he has always craved – to be openly worshipped as a god. "I will make myself like the Most High."

Unaware that they are targets of the secret invasion, millions will fall down and worship him as the Savior of the world. By the time they awaken to the truth, it will be too late.

There is a biblical warning against being impressed by supernatural phenomena. (*Deuteronomy 12:32–13:1-3*) And the genuine Second Coming is described, so none need be deceived:

*For as the lightning comes from the east and flashes to the west, so will be the coming of the Son of Man [Jesus]....They shall see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the sky, with power and great glory. (Matthew 24:27,30)*

## **Preparing to resist defeat**

Lucifer is now preparing to resist his inevitable capture and defeat. Manipulating mankind into a controlled state of deception, is a part of that preparation.

He is using humanity's most basic nature and desire – the lust for power and money. Through a string of wars, through government and religious takeovers, the Lucifer Legion has been placing into power those who are most motivated by greed and a desire to control. They are being put to the task of preparing the earth to resist Lucifer's enemy – the returning Jesus Christ.

The increase of high tech weaponry, obsession with the Star Wars programme, the great money pit called NASA, almost every aspect of the Shuttle programme, the United States Strategic Command, the Air Force Space Command, the Army Space Command and the Naval Warfare Systems Command are but part of the known projects preparing for a war in space.

It is a well-documented fact that many of the defensive weapons and monitoring satellites in orbit around our planet are positioned to detect and defend against aggression coming in from outer space and not up from the planet's surface.

The Legion of Lucifer – unknown to its human puppets - is wiring the world to resist the Second Coming.

For humans to unite against the Lucifer "reptilians", as David Icke suggests, certainly sounds noble. But it is futile.

Human beings will never be able to improve themselves...and throw off such forces. These alien entities are smarter, more experienced, as well as stronger.

### **No need to fear**

With Satan patrolling the earth as a hungry lion, seeking whom he might devour (*1 Peter. 2:8*), and the earth so close to self destructing, we might conclude that the battle is a losing one.

But nothing could be further from the truth. God is still on His throne, and Lucifer and his mob are only a small (though troublesome) part of the spiritual realm.

Let me give you two super reasons why you can take heart...

# 40

*The power is with you -*

## INVINCIBLE MESSENGERS

“Quick, inside! The mob is coming!”

High in the Andes mountains of Peru, a mission station was under attack. The fury of the mob was such that it was certain they would demolish the buildings and kill their inhabitants.

The whole besieged group, using its only weapon, knelt together on the dirt floors of the huts and prayed.

Suddenly, without warning, the mob scattered and fled.

The next day one of the missionaries asked a local why they had disappeared.

“Why,” came the answer, “when we saw all those soldiers about the compound, we just ran. You would have been scared too!”

In my files are numerous recorded incidents of this nature, from all over the world.

There is definitely something going on here.

One of the promises in the *Intelligence Report* is: “...*the Angel of the Lord protects those who reverence him and rescues them.*” (Psalm 34:7)

Now let me give you two good reasons why you should never be afraid...

### **(a) An ultimate means of rescue**

Firstly, in His love and compassion, our Creator has provided an ultimate means of rescue: (a) victory over our frustrating failures now; (b) rescue from the penalty of final death.

We may seek substitutes. But there is no way to bypass the appointed Deliverer and rescue ourselves. The whole world will have to deal with Jesus Christ, like it or not.

And really, what’s so bad about that?



## **(b) The power on your side - now**

Do you feel a little hopeless... alone? Do you fear that the opposing forces are too strong?

Cheer up. There is invincible help available to you. Two thirds of the heavenly host are still loyal to the Creator. And as long as this spiritual war continues, they are His messengers to earth. Although unseen, they are directly engaging the enemy.

Remember this. Not all the angels fell sway to Satan's lies. Only a third went with him. (*Revelation 12:4*) That leaves two-thirds who remained true to their Maker. In general, we don't hear much about them, except for vague Hollywood concepts where an angel touches the life of some troubled individual before going back to heaven to be assigned a new mission of mercy.

But does the *Intelligence Report* reveal anything about the angels? ...their duties? ...what they look like?

Indeed, it does. Plenty.

For one thing, it informs us that they were witnesses to the creation of the earth. (*Job 38:6-7*)

Let me share with you seven things I have discovered about this powerful army:

### **1. They outnumber the rebels 2 to 1**

They comprise a huge spiritual army, unseen by human eyes, that far outnumbers Lucifer and his dark troops.

And this has always been so.

Elisha was a biblical prophet of the 8<sup>th</sup> century BC. When confronted with a Syrian invasion that threatened Judah's national existence, Elisha's servant grew frightened. Elisha prayed that his servant's eyes might be opened so that he could see the many heavenly beings that fought on their side. (*2 Kings 6:17*)

“Then the Lord opened the eyes of the young man, and he saw. And behold, the mountain was full of horses and chariots of fire all around Elisha.”

How many of them are there? Hundreds of millions. (*Revelation 5:11*) They are said to be “innumerable”. (*Hebrews 12:22*)

## 2. They are more powerful than we

We are informed that they are greater in power and might than human beings. (*2 Peter 2:11*)

To illustrate how they “excel in strength” (*Psalm 103:20*), a single angel struck in one night the whole Assyrian army of Sennacherib, on the outskirts of Jerusalem. (*2 Kings 19:35*)

So what are these messengers doing? What part do they play in the BIG PICTURE?

## 3. They serve as messengers

Incidents are recorded in history as well as in the *Intelligence Report*, in which they have fulfilled the role of messengers. Actually, the word “angel” means “messenger”.

## 4. They patrol the earth

While this planet remains hijacked by the Lucifer Legion, there are angels who constantly patrol the earth, reporting back to heaven. (*Revelation 5:6; Zechariah 4:10; 12 Chronicles 16:9*)

## 5. They can take human form

History is replete with examples of angels appearing in human form. So is the Bible.

Abraham, Lot, Hagar, Moses, Manoah, Gideon, Elijah and Rhoda, are just a few ancient figures who had first hand encounters with angels.

Paul advises his readers to remember to practise hospitality toward strangers, “for thereby some have entertained angels unawares.” (*Hebrews 13:2*)

In the heart of a severe northern winter, the wood ran out for a widow with two children. She gathered them to the table and they prayed for help.

Soon after, there was a rap on the door. When she opened the door, there stood a man with a pile of chopped wood in his arms. He came in, dropped the wood on the floor, and proceeded to load the fireplace.

The woman and children just stared in astonishment, not daring to speak. Without a word, the stranger lit the fire, arose, smiled and walked out through the door.

The mother immediately rushed to the door. He had vanished. And left no footprints in the snow.

If we are to credit numerous reports by sane, responsible people, such things are happening by the thousands in just about any place you like to name.

How do you explain it? The *Intelligence Report* (the Word of God) identifies them as angel messengers.

## **6. They protect those who accept the Creator's rescue plan**

Various biblical passages strongly suggest that each individual follower of Jesus (and each child) has an angel who watches over him or her.

A guardian angel is commissioned to protect each person who accepts the Deliverer's rescue offer. (*Acts 12:6-15; Matthew 18:10; Psalm 91:11-12; Hebrews 1:14*)

In the year 2000, I conducted a seminar series in the Solomon Islands. Here Kata Ragoso's family were headhunters when they learned about the Creator's plan of rescue. And they accepted it.

When World War II broke out, Kata Ragoso and his friends were called to work for the Allied army.

They worked faithfully, and did every sort of service that was asked of them. But one thing they refused to do: They would not work on the biblical holy day, the Sabbath, except to save lives.

One day a captain asked Kata Ragoso to do some work on the Sabbath. The tall, dark fuzzy-haired man said, "Sir, I cannot do that. This is the Sabbath of the Lord."

That answer by a simple Solomon Islander made the captain so angry that he knocked Kata Ragoso unconscious. When he revived and got up, the captain demanded, "Now do as I told you."

Kata Ragoso was firm. "Sir, I am sorry, but I cannot disobey my Lord."

The captain ordered him whipped. With his back bleeding, Kata Ragoso was made to stand before the captain again.

“Will you do as I told you?”

“No, sir. I am sorry, but I cannot.”

“Then you shall be shot.”

The captain stood Kata Ragozo before the firing squad. “I will count to three,” he instructed the soldiers. “When I say, ‘Three’, *fire!*”

The soldiers got ready, and the captain began to count. “One!” he said. “Two! Th---” He could not say, “Three!”

He started over. “One! Two! Th---” But his tongue refused to speak.

Almost crazed, he tried the third time. “One! Two!” He could not speak at all, nor could he for a day and a half afterward.

Kata Ragozo was thrown into the stockade. It was secured with a padlock, and the key was kept in the office.

Kata Ragozo's fellow believers were sorrowful at this treatment of their brother. But they did not try to take him away by force. They had read the New Testament account of Peter's rescue from prison in the first century.

“We must pray,” they decided. “When the moon comes up over the mountain tonight, we will meet and pray that the Lord will deliver Kata Ragozo, as He once delivered Peter from prison.”

That night, in the moonlight, a tall man entered the stockade with a bunch of keys. He put a key in the padlock, turned it, and opened the gate.

Standing in the light of the moon, he called in a loud voice, “Ragozo!”

“Yes, sir!”

“Come here!” Kata Ragozo came.

The tall man took him by the arm and pulled him out. He shut the gate and locked it.

“Follow me,” he said.

When they came near to the beach, the tall man stopped and said, “Go on down to the beach. There you will find a canoe. Take it and go home.”

Kata Ragoso kept walking. And soon he saw the canoe, with paddles ready. He turned to thank the man who had taken him out of prison. Lo! No man was there.

Evidently, angels still open prison doors.

Now let me tell you about Harald Hokland, a supplier of Bibles in Norway. Hokland had to descend a very dangerous mountain trail to reach families in the valley. At one steep, dangerous place he stopped to pray that an angel would go with him. He safely reached the valley.

At the first cottage he met a man and his wife, who, it seems, had been watching him as he came over the mountain.

“Where is your friend?” they asked.

“What friend?” he replied.

“The man who was with you.”

“But there was no one with me. I was alone.”

“Is that possible?” they exclaimed in surprise. “We were watching you as you came down the track and it really seemed to us that there were two men crossing the mountain together.”

Now across to Central America... Guatemala, to be precise.

Feliciano Barrientos was eating supper in his hotel. A man walked up to the table and asked him if he was the itinerant book seller who was visiting the area.

“Yes,” he replied.

“How much are your books worth?”

“[so many] quetzals,” was his answer.

“How many have you delivered today?”

“Fourteen,” was Feliciano’s response.

The stranger next queried Feliciano as to when he planned to leave, what town he would visit next and what road he would take.

In his friendly manner, Feliciano told the man what he wanted to know, and then added that although he travelled alone, heavenly angels were his protection. And even though that region might be a bit wild, he felt that he was always safe, since he was working for his Maker.

When the visitor had departed, a hotel employee immediately approached Feliciano with the news that that man was a well-known thief and murderer.

“I suspect he asked you all those questions,” said the attendant, “because he intends to do you harm on your journey. Why not have a good night’s sleep then go to a different town from the one you told him?”

Feliciano thought deeply about the matter. Then he committed the situation to his God and claimed the biblical promises of a safe escort. He would make the journey as planned.

After an early breakfast the next morning, Feliciano returned to his room, again spent some time praying about the matter, then started out.

About a mile and a half on his way, he saw ahead of him two men sitting by the roadside. Both were armed with large machetes, apparently ready to attack him.

Coming closer to them, he sent up another prayer for protection. He reminded God of his personal commitment to Him, and that he had a wife and children at home depending on him. He continued forward, confident that he was not alone.

As he passed by, the two men both sprang to their feet. Then they promptly sat down again. He spoke to them kindly and continued on his way.

Three days later, Feliciano met one of the men – the very one who had asked him so many questions in the hotel dining room that other evening.

“Sir,” he enquired, “Why did you tell me you travelled alone? That morning when you passed my friend and me by the road, we saw two large men dressed in white, carrying arms, and you were walking between them!”

“Yes,” responded Feliciano, “those were two heavenly angels who always accompany me in my work.”

## **7. They call themselves “fellow servants”**

You have probably heard of that famous biblical book of prophecy, known as Revelation? It records that when an angel

revealed the future of world history to the first century apostle John, he was so overcome with awe that he fell down to worship the messenger. But the angel responded, “*See thou do it not: I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God.*” (Revelation 19:10)

It may seem strange to think of angels as fellow servants, if we think of them at all. Mankind tends to consider those to be greatest who have the most power. However, we might do well to note what Jesus told his disciples:

*Whoever will be chief among you let him be your servant.*  
(Matthew 20:27)

That puts a new light on the task that the Creator has assigned the angels. As ministering spirits, theirs is a high ranking job, and one that we should be very grateful they perform.

## **Prophecies: how the drama will end**

The book of Revelation not only tells us how the drama began, but also how it will end.

Why trust these prophecies? In some earlier chapters, we saw a sampling of the hundreds of biblical prophecies that have been fulfilled. These give us good reason to be confident that the Bible’s remaining prophecies will just as truly come to pass. The word is that, in the coming showdown, all of the angelic host will be involved. This final event will seal the fate of Lucifer and his followers.

At this time Jesus Christ will personally return to this earth. He will, out of the wreck of the old, bring forth a new world in which all who are willing to accept rescue will live forever... *in a world without fear.*

If the Bible – the *Intelligence Report* - is literally true, then you can trust its word concerning what lies ahead. The prophecies speak of a final judgment upon the world. And those who don’t want the Creator’s rescue offer? Well, their decision will be honored. They will not have a place in the new world.

## **The bad and the good news**

Our planet is ablaze with hatred. The only thing that will save this world is the Creator's love in action, through His appointed Deliverer. It is one's individual choice, whether to accept the specified rescue. To reject God is to forfeit existence.

The good news is His immeasurable love toward His creation. His authority is absolute. And those who will accept His help will be protected – so there is no need to fear the Legion of Lucifer or their agents, even in government.

Power is offered to you, not only to withstand these evil entities, but, more importantly, power to live a life of serenity, joy and constant victory over all obstacles – whatever they be.

You need only commit yourself to a genuine, unconditional relationship with Him, and that power – limitless spiritual power – can be yours.

Just wishful thinking? Not at all! It's a concrete reality. And thousands testify that they are achieving it... now. And enjoying life to the full.



# EPILOGUE

Both Angie Brown and Bill D. were totally helpless.

Protection was available. But Bill had the key ...and Angie didn't.

The evidence that has emerged is so specific that this much should be crystal clear:

- (a) There is a Creator who wants us to know more than the fact that He simply exists.
- (b) He wants us to be aware that we can know and trust Him.

And with such knowledge and power at your disposal, not only do the alien deceptions explode like a puff ball... but you can also claim physical protection.

Just ask Bill D. and thousands of others.

Now... isn't that really neat!

# APPENDIX A

## HEBREW AND GREEK ALPHABETS AND NUMERIC VALUES OF EACH LETTER

### The Hebrew Alphabet.

Alef	א = 1	Tet	ט = 9	Pei	פ = 80
Bet	ב = 2	Yod	י = 10	Tzadi	צ = 90
Gimel	ג = 3	Kaf	כ = 20	Kof	ק = 100
Dalet	ד = 4	Lamed	ל = 30	Reish	ר = 200
Hei	ה = 5	Mem	מ = 40	Shin	ש = 300
Vav	ו = 6	Nun	נ = 50	Tav	ת = 400
Zayin	ז = 7	Samech	ס = 60		
Chet	ח = 8	Ayin	ע = 70		

## The Greek Alphabet.

Alpha	$\alpha = 1$	Nu	$\nu = 50$
Beta	$\beta = 2$	Xi	$\xi = 60$
Gamma	$\gamma = 3$	Omicron	$\omicron = 70$
Delta	$\delta = 4$	Pi	$\pi = 80$
Epsilon	$\epsilon = 5$	Rho	$\rho = 100$
Zeta	$\zeta = 7$	Sigma	$\sigma = 200$
Eta	$\eta = 8$	Tau	$\tau = 300$
Theta	$\theta = 9$	Upsilon	$\upsilon = 400$
Iota	$\iota = 10$	Phi	$\phi = 500$
Kappa	$\kappa = 20$	Chi	$\chi = 600$
Lambda	$\lambda = 30$	Psi	$\psi = 700$
Mu	$\mu = 40$	Omega	$\omega = 800$

# APPENDIX B

## DATING OF ATLANTIS

The following discussion was published many years ago in a book titled *The Atlantis Hypothesis*, pp. 124-125:

“... the location most often theorized [for Atlantis] was the Azores, which fit most closely with Plato’s description. The Pillars of Hercules to which he referred may be a reference to Gibraltar. Furthermore, the Azores, of volcanic origin, consist of the same geological formations mentioned by Plato, namely red, white, and black rock, and contain hot and cold springs.

“Although small volcanic islands may have risen and sunk within recent times, however, it has never been proved that a large island mass has existed in recent geological times in the vicinity of the Azores. Cores from the bottom of the Atlantic near the Azores show evidence of vulcanism of a pattern characterized only by land volcanoes. This may more reasonably suggest small volcanic islands than a large land mass that sank.

“The main problems in solving the Atlantis riddle are the time factor and the size of the island described by Plato.

“First, the time factor: Plato dates the disaster that destroyed Atlantis 9,000 years before Solon's time, or 12,000 B.C. A high culture could have existed at such an early date, but Plato’s dates do not conform to other evidence.

“The Atlantis Plato described is very similar to a Mediterranean type of culture not noticeably different from that readily understood by Solon and Plato. There is also a mention of a war between Atlantis and the Greeks, and the descriptions of chariots and galleys. The 9,000 years is perhaps not an exaggeration but an error in dating.

“Second, if we are considering an island-based empire in the Mediterranean, the size of the island or islands constitutes a further problem.

“Many authorities have reasoned that if Plato's Atlantis was based on historical fact, it referred to the island-based

Minoan sea-trading empire of Crete. The difficulty in this thesis was in reconciling the statistics given by Plato with the geography of Crete and its associated islands.

“The size of the plain, as given by Plato, was three thousand by two thousand stadia, or roughly 340 by 230 miles. This plain is much larger than the plain of Messara in Crete, or of any plain on mainland Greece.

“The ditch was stated to have been 10,000 stadia or 1,100 miles long, and was divided into 60,000 lots of land, each one square mile in area. The leader of each lot was required to furnish for the war between Greece and Atlantis one sixth of a war chariot, two horses and riders, one light chariot, a foot soldier with shield, a charioteer, two heavily armed men, two archers, two slingers, three stone shooters, three men, and four sailors to man the ships, of which there were 1,200. According to this formula, the military forces of Atlantis would have comprised 1.2 million men, an army far larger than any Bronze Age civilization could have possibly mustered.

*“But what if Solon had erroneously translated the symbol for 100 as 1,000? The two symbols in Cretan script are almost identical. (Dr. Angelos Galanopolous, a Greek seismologist, first suggested this error in translation as a means to resolve the problem of dates.) Instead of 9,000 years, we would have 900 years before Solon. The disaster would have occurred about 1500 B.C. If the size of the plain were reduced by a factor of ten, to 34 by 23 miles, it would approximate closely the size of the plain of Messara on Crete.*

“It has been reckoned that the Royal State of Atlantis, and the Citadel, or Capital, refer actually to two islands; the larger would be Crete and the Island of the City would be Thera. Again, reduced by a factor of ten, the dimensions given by Plato fit Thera almost exactly.

“Reduced by ten, the 60,000 lots become 6,000; 1,200 ships become 120 ships, and the size of the army is reduced to 120,000 men, which would conform with the kind of military power exercised in the Mediterranean in the second millennium B.C.

“These figures would seem to make sense in connection with the Minoan sea empire of Crete, with its capital city on Thera. Further, it has recently been found that around 1500 B.C., a colossal volcanic eruption occurred on the island of Thera, which completely destroyed the center of the island. The ensuing tidal waves, earthquakes, and deposits of volcanic ash wrought havoc throughout the entire Mediterranean basin, Egypt, the Palestine coast, Turkey, and mainland Greece, and virtually destroyed the civilization of Crete.”

\* \* \* \* \*

### **A fourth-hand account**

From our distance in time it is impossible to be certain as to the authenticity of the Atlantis legend or the precise time of the destruction of this legendary kingdom. However, there are reasonable grounds for placing the event (assuming it occurred) within the post-Flood era.

Plato told the story of Atlantis, an island “beyond the Pillars of Hercules” (Gibraltar), which sank suddenly below the sea about 9,000 years earlier.

Plato wrote his story around 360 BC. He received the story *fourth-hand*, before writing it down. Plato’s version is the sole source of the account.

About 600 BC, an Egyptian priest told it to the Greek Solon (638-559 BC). Solon told it to young Critias (his grandson) when he was a ten-year-old boy. Young Critias eventually retold it to his friend Plato.

### **Alternative dates for Atlantis**

If there was a tenfold discrepancy in the translation of the Egyptian scripts by Solon, then the symbol representing 100 was rendered as 1000. The same sort of confusion in modern times is seen in the contrast between the American billion (a thousand million) and the English billion (a million million).

This cutting of all figures used in Atlantis to 1/10 of their value, would enable Atlantis to fit into the Mediterranean.

(Plato, confused by the exaggerated figures of Atlantis, was forced to place Atlantis outside the Pillars of Hercules because it would not fit into the Mediterranean.)

Immanuel Velikovsky makes this pertinent observation:

Critias the younger remembered having been told that the catastrophe which befell Atlantis happened 9,000 years before. There is one zero too many here.... Numbers we hear in childhood easily grow in our memory, as do dimensions. When revisiting our childhood home, we are surprised at the smallness of the rooms – we had remembered them as much larger. Whatever the sources of the error, the most probable date of the sinking of Atlantis would be in the middle of the second millennium, 900 years before Solon, when the earth twice suffered great catastrophes.... (Immanuel Velikovsky, *Worlds in Collision*. London: Sphere Books, Ltd., 1978, p. 152)

Whether or not Velikovsky's final conclusion is correct, his reasoning is plausible.

According to Robert Charroux, "Constant Basir, referring to the *Melpomene* of Herodotus, mentions someone who, in 2350 BC, visited both the mainland of Atlantis and a maritime Atlantis." (Robert Charroux, *The Mysterious Unknown*. London: Transworld Publishers, Ltd., 1975, p. 119)

An ancient history book, the *Oera Linda Boek*, dating primarily from AD 803, but added to for 500 years, bears this postscript: "written in Liuwert (Ljuwert) in the 3,499<sup>th</sup> year after Atland (Atlantis) sank, or 1256, the year of the Christian reckoning." This placed the sinking of Atlantis in 2244 BC. (Alec Maclellan, *The Lost World of Agharti*. London: Souvenir Press, 1982, p. 186)

The Egyptian priest claimed that Atlantis existed (and perished) before the beginning of Egyptian civilization. This could adequately explain the excessively early date given for Atlantis' destruction.

In Chapter 31 we arrived at a date for Egypt's founding which is very soon after that given in the *Oera Linda Boek* (above) for the destruction of Atlantis.

On the other hand, it should also be borne in mind that "all the ancient kingdoms were fond of exaggerating their antiquity

in competition with each other.... The Egyptian method was by adding up the number of years in the reigns of all their kings, as preserved in the king-lists; as several kings had reigned simultaneously in various parts of Egypt on many occasions, this totting-up led to wildly inaccurate figures; the Greek historian Herodotus, visiting Egypt a mere 150 years after Solon, was given by this method an authoritative date of 12,040 BC for the founding of Egyptian civilization.” (Francis Hitching, *The World Atlas of Mysteries*. London: Pan Books, Ltd., 1978, pp. 138-139)

\*\*\*\*\*

### **Other dating questions?**

If you have further dating questions, you might want to acquire my book *The Great Dating Blunder*. (Not yet in print, but available as an e-book from [http://www.beforeus.com/shopcart\\_e\\_books.html](http://www.beforeus.com/shopcart_e_books.html)) This is eye-popping information – revealing how bankrupt are the conventional dating systems.

\*\*\*\*\*



# APPENDIX C

## “SONS OF GOD”

In the Bible, the term “son/s of God” is used in two ways:

**(a) Physically** For example, in the genealogy of Luke chapter 3, each man is called the “son of” his earthly father, and so on, back to Seth who is termed “the son of Adam”. Then in verse 38 Adam is called “the son of God”. That is because Adam had no earthly father. His only father was God, who created him and gave him dominion over this planet Earth.

If the same situation pertained when God created other worlds (Hebrews 1:2; 11:3), then one would expect the first men (the “Adams” of those worlds who had no other father but their Creator) to likewise be termed “sons of God”.

When we ask the question, “Why did God create this world?” the Bible gives us this answer, “He created it not in vain, he formed it to be inhabited” (Isaiah 45:18).

If God created this earth “to be inhabited”, then why did He create other worlds? Did He create them “in vain”, or “to be inhabited”? Does it make sense that God created the countless other worlds (many of which have recently been discovered orbiting their own stars, i.e. orbiting other suns, just as we do), does it make sense that He would create so many other worlds just to be DEAD worlds?

This does bring to mind some events mentioned in the book of Job, where a series of heavenly council meetings was convened, in which the “sons of God” assembled (Job 1:6; 2:1) – and into the council meeting from one of the worlds (this planet Earth) came Satan.

Remember, Satan had overcome Adam and Eve, who then fell under bondage to him. (“Of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage.” 2 Peter 2:19) This enabled Satan to take over Adam’s dominion as ruler of planet Earth.

This is why Satan was able to represent Planet Earth in this council meeting. (Job 1:6,7; John 12:31; 2 Corinthians 4:4)

And Satan remained the “prince of this world” until Jesus invaded this planet and overcame him. Since then, it is Jesus who represents us in heaven.

We might ask concerning these “sons of God” who attended this council meeting mentioned in Job, Could they be the representatives of those other worlds gathered, as it were, in a “united nations assembly” of the whole universe?

Now notice what happened when this planet was created and added to the universe of God. According to Job (Job 38:7), “...the morning stars sang together, AND all the sons of God shouted for joy.”

We now ask, in the Scripture, who are called “stars”? Answer: the angels (Revelation 12:4,9). In fact, the name of the fallen angel Lucifer means “day star”. (See Isaiah 14:12, margin).

Job says there were “stars” AND “sons of God”. (ch.38:7) So if the angels are the “stars”, then what about “AND the sons of God”? It is inferred that there is some other group!!!

Evidently angels (whether fallen or faithful) are NOT called “sons of God” (Hebrews 1:5). This suggests that the “sons of God” who married “the daughters of men” in Genesis 6:2,4 were NOT fallen angels. Again, those “sons of God” married. Angels do not marry (Mark 12:25).

Something else to consider. Successful interbreeding between angels and humans would have been – we must face it – a virtual impossibility. Firstly, angels were not created with the organs of propagation. And secondly, chromosomes and genes must BOTH match up, which is extremely unlikely – and does not occur even between animals and humans of the same planet!

**(b) Spiritually:** The Scripture says that when individuals enter into a spiritual relationship with Jesus Christ, those persons receive “power to become sons of God” (John 1:12). Through the merits of Jesus they are adopted as “sons of God” (Galatians 4:4-7). “Now are we the sons of God” (1 John 3:1,2).

When the Bible speaks about the sons of God, it means the spiritual followers of God (Exodus 4:22,23). “For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God” (Romans 8:14).

From all this, it appears evident that the expression “sons of God” applies nowhere in the Bible to angels, but always to humans (or to their counterparts on other worlds) who look to God as their Father and serve Him.

Placing Genesis chapter 6 into this setting, we do know that after Cain murdered Abel and after Seth was born, two distinct lines of humans multiplied – the line of Seth who worshipped God (the “sons of God”) and the line of Cain who served Satan.

Later, the Sethites, attracted and seduced by the ways of the Cainites, intermarried with them – and the human race became so corrupted and violent that it appeared there would soon be no one left to serve God and thereby provide a faithful lineage through which the promised Deliverer would be born into the human race. This is when God stepped in and brought the Great Flood.

It should be noted here that this earth is the “lost sheep” of the universe which the Deliverer was to redeem. The Bible suggests that the rest of the Creator’s universe remains loyal to Him. By contrast, this planet is a very unattractive place. One could say that until rebellion is finally eradicated from this planet, that we are quarantined.

So, who are those alleged ETs supposedly visiting earth from other worlds?

There is considerable evidence that suggests they are none other than Satan’s host who were cast out of heaven and are confined to this planet.

And they are lying to us. In a sense, they are extraterrestrials, but they were cast out. They are not here as they claim, by choice, to help us.

There is also evidence that a great final showdown is looming between the forces of heaven and these fallen angels.

## The Book of Enoch

This book is sometimes cited in support of the idea that “sons of God” intermarrying with “daughters of men” really means “fallen angels interbreeding with humans”.

The Book of Enoch is believed to have been written around 200 BC to 100 AD. It is a non-biblical book. No early book written by the prophet Enoch (3379 to 3014 BC) is known. However, Enoch’s name has been appended to this later book.

One should be extremely careful about accepting this book as an authority, since it contains some gross absurdities.

For example, it states that ancient giants were “300 cubits” (**525 feet**) tall. While one admits that gigantism was once a common or widespread feature of mankind (see Jonathan Gray, *The Lost World of Giants*. <<http://www.beforeus.com/giants.php>>), can you force yourself to believe that **men were the height of a 52 story building**? On this account alone, the Book of Enoch must be rejected.

A different translation of the Book of Enoch says those giants were even taller – “3,000 ells” (7:1-6) (R.H. Charles, *The Apocrypha and Pseudeipgrapha of the Old Testament*, vol. II. Oxford Press, 1997 ed.) At one ell to 45 inches or 114 centimeters (Random House *Webster’s College Dictionary*), 3,000 ells would be 133,000 inches or 11,250 feet – that is, **over 2 miles high!**

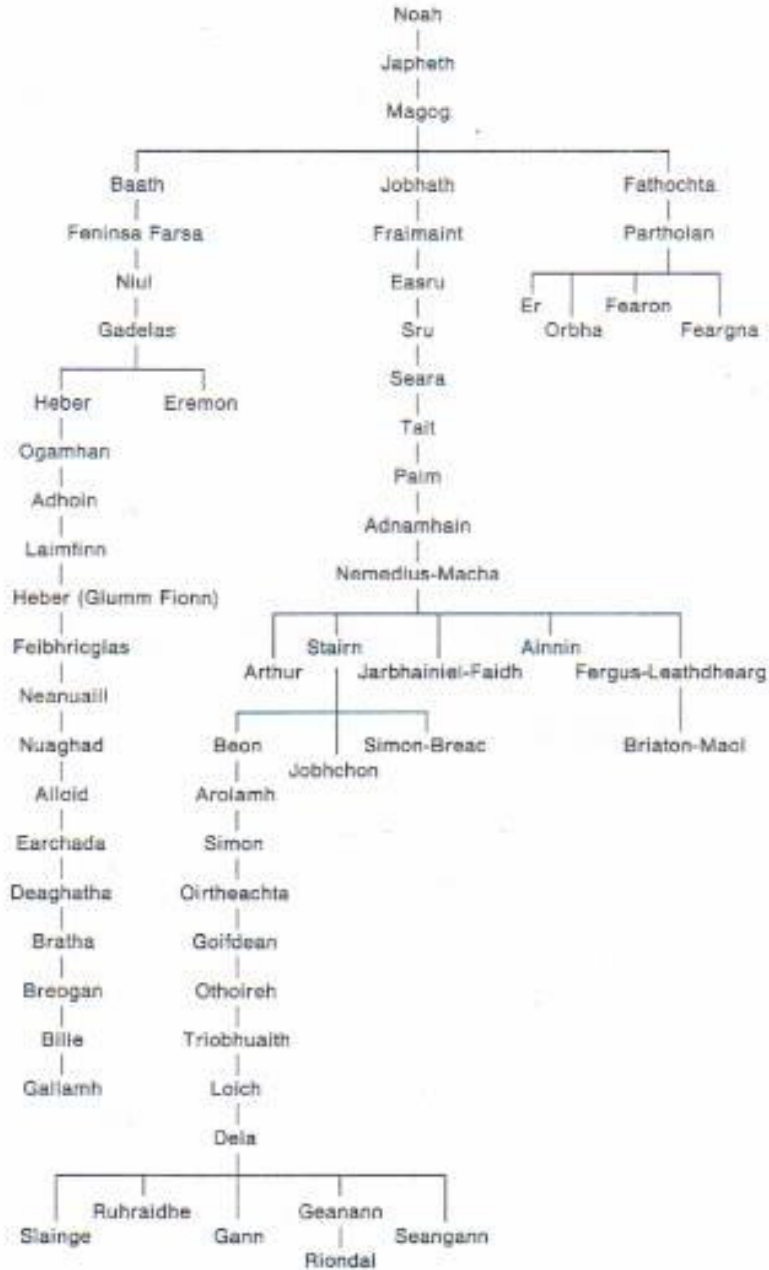
Numerous other problems exist concerning this book:

- Parts of it contradict other parts
- It contains scientific errors
- It also contradicts the Bible

Just because the biblical apostle Jude quoted from a part of the Book of Enoch does not mean he endorsed the whole as factual. Paul similarly quoted from pagan writers to drive home his message to people who had faith in those writers. But he did not endorse their whole pagan philosophy.

# APPENDIX D

## EARLY IRISH GENEALOGY



*(Bill Cooper)*

# APPENDIX E

## ARCHAEOLOGY AGAIN CONFIRMS BIBLE ACCURACY

What is a *pim*? That is what translators asked themselves when they were finishing the King James Version of the Bible back in the 17th century. They had never heard of the term outside of the Bible and had to guess as to its meaning - which turned out to be wrong.

In 1 Samuel 13:20-21, they translated the Hebrew term *pim* as “file”. It seemed to make sense at the time. The text reads: “But all the Israelites went down to the Philistines, to sharpen every man his share, and his coulter, and his axe, and his mattock. Yet they had a file for the mattocks, and for the coulters, and for the forks, and for the axes, and to sharpen the goads.”

It was only when archaeology came to the rescue in the last century that the term was finally understood. Archaeologists digging at various sites in Israel - such as Gezer, Timnah, Ashdod and Ekron - found small stone weights inscribed with the word *pim*. They realised the word *pim* referred to a weight used in monetary transactions - about 8 grams of silver, or two thirds of a shekel.

The New King James Bible, utilizing the new discovery, corrected the verse in question. In this version 1 Samuel 13:21 reads, “and the charge for a sharpening was a *pim* for the plowshares, the mattocks, the forks, and the axes, and to set the points of the goads.”

This discovery authenticated the Bible's historical validity, since these weights were only found in the strata from the ninth to the seventh centuries BC, after which new sets of weights were adopted. It tells us that the account of 1 Samuel was written close to the time of the actual events, as the term *pim* fell out of use not long after that.

Archaeologist William Dever mentions the discovery of the *pim* weight as evidence of the historical accuracy of the Bible.

Archaeology still provides an invaluable service. Countless hitherto enigmatic passages have been clarified ... The translation of 1 Samuel 13:19-21 was pure guesswork until archaeologists brought to light small stone balance weights inscribed in paleo-Hebrew with the word *pim*, which we now know designates a silver shekel fraction of about 7.8 grams (.28 ounces). (*Biblical Archaeology Review*, May/June 1990, p. 55)

So thanks to archaeology, we again have confirmation of the accuracy of this amazing book known as the Bible!

# APPENDIX F

## THE BIBLE: SCIENTIFIC VALIDATION

### Objection

There is no scientific “proof” validating the Bible.  
(The definition of "scientific" means that the evidence can be reproduced under laboratory conditions.)

### The challenge

Copies of the *Bible numerics report* were submitted to over 500 of the best known centers for agnostic or atheist beliefs, including universities and centers of learning conducted by non-Christian organizations. This challenge was issued: "Disprove the report and its data OR produce any other text written by men that will contain any of the same phenomena!"

ONLY one condition was stipulated: the phenomena MUST be from inherent factors of the language and not "contrived" by manipulation. In other words, the phenomena must occur in a natural feature of the language in which it was written.  
(Translations are unable to maintain such phenomena.)

All evidence for numeric structure of text will qualify as "scientific" in the sense that it can be repeated, and we invite such scrutiny.

No one has been able to meet the challenge.

With the “sevens key” provided in Genesis 1:1, you can proceed to analyze the whole Bible.



Consider that there are in excess of three million words or twenty million characters in the 66 books of the Bible. And bear in mind that the "evidence" would be null and void, in most cases, if EVEN ONE CHARACTER WERE DELETED, CHANGED OR ADDED!

Here are the results of a complete Bible investigation and analysis:

1. The NUMBER of WORDS in the VOCABULARY will divide evenly by SEVEN.
2. The NUMBER of WORDS that begin with a vowel will divide evenly by SEVEN.
3. The NUMBER of WORDS that begin with a consonant will divide evenly by SEVEN.
4. The NUMBER of WORDS that begin with each letter of the language's alphabet will divide evenly by SEVEN.
5. The NUMBER of WORDS that occur more than once will divide evenly by SEVEN.
6. The NUMBER of WORDS that occur only once will divide evenly by SEVEN.
7. The NUMBER of WORDS that occur in only one form will divide evenly by SEVEN.
8. The NUMBER of WORDS that occur in more than one form will divide evenly by SEVEN.
9. The NUMBER of WORDS that are nouns will divide evenly by SEVEN.
10. The NUMBER of WORDS that are not nouns will divide evenly by SEVEN.
11. The NUMBER of LETTERS in the vocabulary will divide evenly by SEVEN.
12. The NUMBER of LETTERS that are vowels will divide evenly by SEVEN.
13. The NUMBER of LETTERS that are consonants will divide evenly by SEVEN.
14. The NUMBER of PROPER NAMES will divide

- evenly by SEVEN.
15. The NUMBER of MALE PROPER NAMES will divide evenly by SEVEN.
  16. The NUMBER of FEMALE PROPER NAMES will divide evenly by SEVEN.
  17. The TOTAL NUMERIC VALUE OF ALL THE WORDS will divide evenly by SEVEN.
  18. The NUMERIC VALUE OF THE VARIOUS FORMS in which the words occur will divide evenly by SEVEN.
  19. The NUMBER OF WORDS THAT ARE FOUND in the Bible will divide evenly by SEVEN.
  20. The NUMBER OF PROMISES FOUND in the BIBLE will divide evenly by SEVEN.

There is a term called a Google (sometimes spelt as Gugle), which is ONE followed by 100 Zeros. (Some definitions enlarge on this and claim that Google is a BILLION TO THE BILLIONTH POWER!) GOOGLEPLEX is a GOOGLE to the power of GOOGLE.

Let's illustrate the immensity of this figure, say, in terms of years. Suppose we had a mountain the size of Mount Everest that was solid DIAMOND - and a bird came ONCE A YEAR and MADE ONE PECK against this mountain. IT WOULD TAKE A GOOGLE NUMBER OF YEARS TO ERODE THAT MOUNTAIN TO SEA LEVEL!

Now let's apply this to the Bible numerics phenomenon. Going through the 20-point list above, what are the odds of these features in the Bible occurring by accident? Well, by the time we get to just Point 9, the odds of the listed phenomena occurring by chance have already blown out to GOOGLEPLEX.

## **The uniqueness of the pattern**

One feature of Bible numerics is the cross-over feature – where the sevens pattern becomes complete only when all of the books

of the Bible are placed together. Here is an example. The NUMBER OF MALE PROPER NAMES could not hold true UNLESS Moses is mentioned ONLY ONE TIME in the final book – the Book of Revelation!

## **Objection**

The writers of the 66 books conspired to achieve this total result.

## **Answer**

There is ONLY ONE POSSIBLE WAY FOR THE WRITERS TO WRITE THEIR BOOKS AND ACHIEVE THE PHENOMENA OF HAVING WORDS THAT ONLY THEY USED. And that would be that each and every one of the writers write his book LAST!

## **What about other holy books?**

This numeric pattern cannot be found in other holy books, such as the *Koran* or the *Apocrypha*.

If you add the Apocryphal books to the Bible, as one religious group does, the numerical pattern of the Bible as a WHOLE is thwarted. Not one of the phenomena, such as Number of Proper Names, Number of Words in Alphabet, and so on, remains when these books are considered.

For that matter, not one of the apocryphal books contains ANY numeric pattern phenomena of any ascertainable sort! It is our opinion that this clearly refutes any claim by any religion that these books are from God. The fact that these books do not contain even ONE of the numerical phenomena is sufficient evidence that these books should not be considered Scripture.

# APPENDIX G

## ARMENIAN MEMORY OF TOWER OF BABEL

The Armenians can trace their history right back to Togarmah, son of Gomer, who was son of Japheth, son of Noah. Armenia was recognised even in ancient times as the region surrounding the mountains of Ararat, in what is today eastern Turkey.

Armenian historian Serppaulu Tavaukdjian, in his book *Exiled* records:

“About 2,300 years before Christ Haig the son of Togarmah went with the rest of the descendants of Noah to find a new home for himself and his posterity in the land of Shinar. Here the people, for fear of another Flood, attempted to build the tower of Babel. Haig and his sons distinguished themselves by their wisdom in planning and by their diligent work in the building of this tower. But when image or idol worship began to be practised among the brethren this was repulsive to them and therefore they left the plains of Shinar and returned to the home of their nativity, the land around the mountains of Ararat. Belus, the leader in idolatry in Shinar, when he learned that they had withdrawn from his authority, pursued them with a large force of armed men. Haig, learning of the proposed attack, mustered all the male members of his family who were able to fight and all others who were willing to cast their lot with him, armed them as best he could, and set out to meet the enemy.

“He charged his little army to attack that part of the enemy’s force where Belus commanded in person, ‘For,’ said he, ‘if we succeed in discomforting that part of the army, the victory is ours. Should we, however, be unsuccessful in our attempt, let us never survive the misery and disgrace of defeat, but rather

perish. Sword in hand, defending the best and dearest right of reasonable creatures – our liberty.’

“The battle was joined. After a bloody conflict, Belus fell by an arrow discharged by Haig and soon his army was dispersed.

“Thus the Armenians fought their first battle for freedom of conscience. Among their own people, they call themselves after their hero, Haigs (Haigs), and their country Hairasdan (Hayastan). Haig, when he died, was succeeded by his son Amenag.”

Another Armenian author notes that:

“The descendants of Togarmah were led away from the idolatry in Babel by a brave man called Haig, even before the general dispersion at the confusion of languages. According to this story, Bele, one of the leaders in the apostasy on the plain of Shinar, marshalled his forces to pursue the fleeing ‘house of Togarmah’. Haig encouraged his outnumbered band to fight for liberty. His strategy was to make a concerted drive to the very centre of the attacking host so as to strike down Bele himself. This tactic proved successful. One of Haig’s own sons felled Bele, and the pursuing host retreated in disorder. Haig then led his people to their homeland at the foot of Mt Ararat. And the ‘house of Togarmah’ called themselves Haiks after their victorious hero.” (Marie Abelian Egitlchanoff, *Terror By Night and Day*, 1980)

The legend tells that AMENAG, son of Haig, succeeded his father as leader of the Haiks. It is believed that the name ARMENIA comes from this prince.

In the earliest days of recorded history, the Armenians occupied basically the same territory as today.

The biblical record has little to say about any historical events not affecting Israel. Armenia escaped much of the empire building that kept the Tigris-Euphrates valley and Palestine in constant turmoil. Armenian folklore and secular history picture a proud and independent people remote from other ancient nations.

Even when conquered, unlike others, they largely maintained their identity. They established their own villages and towns and married people of their own kind.

Political fortunes altered the boundaries of nations without regard to the people living there. By the dawn of the 20<sup>th</sup> century Armenia as an entity had ceased to exist. The territory once belonging to the “house of Togarmah” had been carved into three principal sections. The western part belonged to the Turkish Empire, the northern part along the Caucasus mountains became one of the republics under Russian rule, and the eastern part bordering the Caspian Sea had long been under Persian control.

# INDEX

- Abductions 17-18,28-36,62-63,237-238,245,262-263,379-385  
 Abraham 352,353,355,372  
 Age of geological features, nations, documents, etc., see Dating  
 Agnosticism 158,408  
 Alexander the Great 109-110,115,129,132,146,149,315,338  
 Aliens  
 - brought DNA to earth? 72-73  
 - not space travellers 57-63,198,218-220  
 - from parallel dimension 57-63  
 - physical appearances 232-237,396-397  
 - can shape shift 59,230,232-235,285,396  
 - their claims 25-26,62-63,75,187,235,249-250,283,384  
 - their messages 48,243-244,259-260,384,387,388  
 - prophecies of 154,244  
 - inspire written works 78,188-189,250-251,274-275  
 - pose as 'good and bad guys' 236,407-408  
 - coldness of heart 252  
 - deceptive 32-33,61-63,75,239-241,251,272-274,283,286-287,400,407-409,413-414  
 - create numerous religions 408-409  
 - link with spiritism 227-251,387-400,407  
 - impersonate the dead 233,237-242  
 - abductions by, see Abductions  
 - use the power of sex 284-287  
 - attitude toward the Bible 48,80,106,187,189-190,252,284  
 - affected by name of Jesus 379-386,391,394,397-399  
 Alphabet 350-351 See also, Alphabets  
 Alphabets, Hebrew and Greek 178-179,184,427-428  
 Amarna letters 92  
 Ancestry, see Genealogies; Origin of life  
 Ancient astronauts, see Astronauts, ancient  
 Ancient technology, see Technology, ancient  
  
 Angels  
 - loyal 232-234,249,395,419-424  
 - rebel 201,205,232-236,247,395 See also Lucifer; Aliens  
 Anunnuki 20,272,275-277,279-280,283  
 Apocrypha 181,444  
 Archaeology verifies Bible 81-97,317-320,439-440  
 Ark, Noah's 358,359

- Armenians 307,445-447  
 Art, see Drawings  
 Astrology 408,413  
 Astronomical dating 331-332,337  
 Astronauts, ancient 20-24 See also Aliens  
 Atheism 158,391,408  
 Atlantis 328,429-433  
 Avitar 231  
 Axis of earth tipped 290-291,300
- Babel, Tower of 272,309,319-322,326,327,338,340,346,347,374,445-446  
 Babylon 94-98,129,136-152 See also Sumeria  
 Belshazzar 97-98  
 Bible (see also Daniel; Ezekiel; Genesis; Isaiah; Jeremiah; Revelation)  
 - central to UFO debate 80,106,188-189,247,274,279-280,286  
 - an Intelligence document 80-81,90  
 - and the critics, see Critics  
 - accuracy of transmission 156-165  
 - authentication code 172-185,441-444  
 - numbers in 176-185  
 - tampering with text impossible 173  
 - can be accepted literally 89  
 - confirmed by archaeology, see Archaeology  
 - confirmed by prophecy, see Prophecy  
 - and science 179
- Big Bang 66  
 Big Picture 219-221,223  
 Blue Book 56
- Book of  
 - Daniel, see Daniel  
 - Enki, see Enki  
 - Enoch 437  
 - Ezekiel, see Ezekiel  
 - Genesis, see Genesis  
 - Isaiah, see Isaiah  
 - Jasher, see Jasher  
 - Jeremiah, see Jeremiah  
 - Revelation, see Revelation
- Buddhism 158,379,389,408,414-416  
 Bush, George 156,200,405-406



- Canaan, conquest of 92-93  
 Cattle mutilations 16  
 CE-4 13,189,368,372,385  
 Cell 66-69  
 Chances, law of, see Law of Probability  
 China, dating of 328-329,337-338  
 Christianity 62-63,188,189,251,309,311,380, 385,388,394, 399,413  
 Chronologies 89,92,328-340,361-362,365-366. See also  
     Genealogies  
 Code  
     - Genetic 65-69,72-73,75-78  
     - Biblical 172-185,441-444  
 Condon Report 56  
 Cosmic Christ 414  
 Cover-up 72,326  
 Creator, see God  
 Critics 89,90,92,93,97-103,128,196,349-351,355-357,363-  
 364,367,368,370  
 Crop circles 52-55  
 Cycles theory 326-327  
 Cyrus 93,129,139
- Daniel, authenticity of 94-98,128-134  
 Darwin, Charles 103,197  
 Dating  
     - of nations pegged to Egypt 326,336-337  
     - of China 337-338  
     - of Egypt 328-339  
     - of Greece 337,339,340  
     - of Sumeria 281-282,284,338  
     - of Atlantis 327-328,429-433  
     - of the Great Flood 290-303  
     - of axis recovery 290-293,301-302  
     - by astronomy 337-338 See also Sothic chronology  
     - of ice 291-294  
     - of glaciers 294-296  
     - of inland lakes 296  
     - of river deltas 297  
     - of waterfalls 297-298  
     - of coral reefs 298  
     - of trees 298-300  
     - of deserts 300  
     - of population increase 301-302 See also Races; Table of Nations

- of Great Pyramid 335,336,339
  - of Sphinx 336
  - of book of Daniel 92-94,128-131
  - of book of Genesis 349-374
  - of books of Samuel 368-374
  - of Table of Nations 363-369
  - of book of Enki – see Dating of Sumerian documents
  - of Sumerian documents 259,281-283,288-289,322,334, 335,362-364,373-374
- David 98-100,177,354-355
- Dead Sea Scrolls 164-166,168-169
- Death
- reason for 213-214,223-225
  - condition in 241-242
- Degeneration 321
- Deliverer, prophecy of 222-224
- Demonology, see Spiritism
- Depleted uranium 147-150
- Designer 65,75
- Devil, did God create? 201-203 See also Lucifer
- Dimension, fourth 57-63,228-229,273
- Discs, see Dropa
- Dispersals 316-318,322,374,445-446
- DNA 65-69,72-73,75-78,178-179,196
- Dragon, see Serpent
- Drawings 22-24
- Dropa discs 20-22
- Drosnin, Michael 167
- 
- Ebla 350,354-357
- Eden 173,216,247,281-284
- Egypt
- High civilization 85
  - Mythological beginnings 325,326,329,361-364
  - Practical rather than theoretical 325
  - Dating of 325-335
  - Dating of other nations pegged to 328,336-337
  - Exodus of Hebrews from 86-89
  - Prophecies of 118-127
- Einstein, Albert 203
- Enki 13,20,212,260,272,274,276,283,317,319 See also Sumerian documents
- Enoch, book of 437

- Epic of Creation 260,275  
 ETs, see Aliens  
 Europe, divided nations of 133-134  
 Evolution 70-75,102,195-197,211,224,250,268,278,293,294,  
 312,320,321,346,409  
 Exodus 86-88  
 Extraterrestrials, see Aliens  
 Ezekiel, book of 107-125,187-188
- Fall
- of Lucifer 200-208
  - of mankind 212-216
- Fiery furnace 94-95  
 Flight, ancient 21-22  
 Flood, Great
- reason for 222,260-262
  - the event described 264
  - events of 263-271,278-280,364-365
  - global 263-271
  - Lucifer's version of 272,276
  - Sitchin's version of 276
- Flying saucers, see UFOs  
 Forgeries, see Hoaxes  
 Fossils
- do not prove evolution 72-73
  - suggest a global Flood 263,266-271
- Free will 206-208,223
- violated by aliens 384
- Freemasonry 408
- Genealogies 305-313,358,438. See also Chronologies  
 Genesis, book of
- age of 349-375
  - superiority of 358-367
  - authorship of 365-368
- Genetic information 68-70,72-73,76,346  
 Genetic manipulation 221-222  
 Glaciers, see Dating  
 Gnosticism 158,408  
 God
- not disproved by science 77
  - where from? 77
  - ability to communicate 78,188-189

- desire to communicate 78
- an astronaut? 188
- one of us? 72-74
- a personal Being 199
- does not enjoy destroying 222
- loving 204,206-207,219-220,222-223,225-226,261-262
- See also, Rescue plan
- justice of 222

Golden age 211,212,223

Gomorra 138,139,150,350,355,371,372

Government responses 43,46,56,63,415-416

Great Pyramid, date of 335,336,339

Greece, dating of 337,340

Habiru 93

Ham 306-308,310,312,313,324,325

Hammurabi 352,353

Higher criticism, see Critics

Hijack of Planet Earth 206

Hinduism 157,158,217,242,306,319,408,414

Hitler, Adolf 134,156,158,301,404,412

Hittites 90,93

Hoaxes 37-51

Humanism 408

Ice, see Dating

Information, genetic, See Genetic information

Ingersoll 349

Intelligence Report, see Bible

Iraq war 149

Irriducible complexity 69,70

Isaiah, book of 118,119,138-139,149-151,165-166

Islam 158,242

Japheth 306,307,309-312,445

Jasher, book of 322

Jeremiah, book of 118,139,144-148

Jericho 85-87,306

Jerusalem 48,93,100,112,116,141,158,172,355,365,373,419

Jesus Christ 380,382-386,388,391,394-399,403,414-417, 420,424,425

Jordan crossing 84-85

## King lists

- Babylonian, see King lists, pre-Flood
- Egyptian 332-335
- pre-Flood 281-282

Koran 443

Languages 317-322,340,446

Law of Probability 66,69,77,442

Life, origin of 66

Light, garments of 212-213

Lions' den 94-96

Lost Book of Enki, see Enki; Sumerian documents

Lucifer 201,203-208,212,214,216-221,223,225,228,242-243, 245-247,251,252,260,272,274-277,287,391-395,399-400,403, 404,407-409,411-416,418,424

Manetho 329,331,332,339

Mari 354-355

Masoretes 167

Maya 24,317,324-328

Meditation 388

Meier, Eduard 48-51,187 (not to be confused with Meyer, below)

Men in black 46

Messiah, see Deliverer

Meyer, Eduard 331-332 (not to be confused with Meier, above)

Migrations, see Dispersals

Mind control 32,35,195,242,245,273,404-409

Miracles 89,90

Moses 86,89,99,164,174-176,346-348

MUFON 51,188,368,383

Muslims, See Islam

Mutations 70-72

Nations, Table of, see Table of Nations

Natural selection 71

Neanderthal Man 338

Nebuchadnezzar 94-97,107-109

Nefilim 279-280

New Age 30,48,62-63,158,195-196,232,244,245,249,251, 252,274,284,379,383,397,399,408,410

New Earth 412-413

New World Order 134,158,404,413

Nibiru 20,275,279-280,283

Nifilim, see Nefilim

Nimrod 270

Noah 305-308,310-313,365,366,374,445

- ancestor of all races 305-313

Nostradamus 156

Number seven 175-186,441-444

Numbers in nature 175-176

Numeric values 178-180,427-428

Nuzi 351,353

Occult, see Spiritism

Ordman, David 173

Origin

- of universe 65-66

- of information 68-70

- of life 66,72

- Ouija board 232

Ouija board 232,392

Panin, Ivan 178-180,184-185

Peleg 322,338-340,372,374

Phoenicia 106

Pim 439-440

Planet X, see Nibiru

Planets, inhabited 197-198

Probability, law of 66,69,74,444

Programming

- mind, see Mind control

- genetic, see DNA

Project Blue Book 56

Prophecies

- by aliens 154,237

- by psychics 153,155-156

- in Bible 103-104,106-152,157-158,196,413-414

Psychics 57-59,62-63,155,156,229,242,392,410

Pyramid, Great, date of 335,336,339

Races, origin of 342-348 See also Table of Nations; Dating – of population increase

Red Sea crossing 86-88,102,104

Reincarnation 251

Religions, why so many 408

Reptilians, see Serpent  
 Rescue plan for mankind 106,222-226  
 Revelation, book of 424  
 Rips, Eliyahu 172  
 Roman empire 128,130-133  
 Roswell incident 37-48  
  
 Sacrifice, human 277,403-404  
 Sacrifice, Messianic 225  
 Saddam Hussein 147-148,405-406  
 Samuel, books of 440-441  
 Satan, see Lucifer  
 Savior, see Deliverer  
 Science  
   - and the Bible 184,440 See also Archaeology  
   - and God 77  
 Séances 205,227-252,387-400  
 Second Coming 414-416  
 Seeding of life 72-73  
 Septuagint 142,181  
 Serpent 216-218,234,247,275,396-397,403  
 Sevens code  
   - in nature 175-176  
   - in Bible 172-184,441-444  
 Sex, an alien weapon 284-287  
 Shakespeare 169,219  
 Shape shifting 59,230,232-235,285,396  
 Shem 306,307,310,312  
 Showdown, future 405-407,411-416  
 Sidon 115-117,371  
 Skipping code 172,174  
 Skull and Bones Society 405  
 Snake, see Serpent  
 Sodom 138,139,150,350,371,372  
 Solomon 98,100-101  
 Solutions 380,410,425  
 Sons of God 279-281,434-437  
 Sothic chronology 331-332,336,337  
 Sound waves produce designs 53  
 Space men, see Aliens; Drawings  
 Spirit world, statements on 195,215  
 Spiritism 227-251,387-400 See also Aliens

Spiritual war 196,201,204-205,208,218-226,228,252-253,  
381,384,402,403,412

Spiritualism, see Spiritism

Spores 72

Star wars 197-198,205,219-222,252-253

Suffering, cause of 207-220,253

Sumerian documents

- age of 259,260,281-283,287-288,324,340,362-364,  
373-374
- fictional 361-362
- from the Lucifer Legion 274,281

Sumerians

- sudden appearance of 284
- date of 281,284,324,338
- mythological beginnings 325,326,329,361-362
- practical rather than theoretical 322,325
- and Anunnaki 20,275-277,279-280,283

Table of Nations 309,310,362,368-373. See also Races

Technology, ancient 19-22,222,327

Tel Amarna tablets, see Amarna

Telepathy 405-406

Theosophy 158,389

Torah 172-173

Totara Pa 314-315

Tower of Babel 272,309,318-320,322,326,327,338-340, 346,347,374

Tyre 107-116,382

UFOs 16-19,25,28,37,57-61,63,197,198,218

- in Bible? 186-189,250,279-280

See also Aliens; Spiritism

Uranium, depleted, see Depleted uranium

Velikovsky, Immanuel 265,268,297,334,433,434

Voltaire 349

Weight measurement 440-441

Witchcraft 232 See also Spiritism

Yahweh (YHWH) 102,107,116,122,173

YHWH, see Yahweh

Zoroastrianism 389



## BOOKS, DVDS AND OTHER RESOURCES

*by Jonathan Gray*

### BOOKS

#### **ARK OF THE COVENANT**

*The Shocking Truth, Hidden for 2,000 Years! -*

For some 800 years, the Ark of the Covenant was the most sacred object in the world. In 586 BC it vanished. 2,500 years later, American amateur archeologist Ron Wyatt claims to have found the Ark of the Covenant. He was promptly ordered by the host government not to reveal certain information. Jonathan Gray set out with a briefcase full of objections against Wyatt's claims. However, intense investigation, repeated visits to dig sites, and privileged viewing of evidence and artifacts left him totally convinced. This information he shares in his book. ***Paperback, 597 pages 39.95 USD***

#### **DEAD MEN'S SECRETS**

*Surprising Discoveries in Lost Cities of the Dead*

Seafloor, jungle and desert sands give up a thousand forgotten secrets. Technology that vanished! Could this lost super race have beaten us to the moon, developed computers, and nuclear war? In Part One, the author presents startling information about this super civilization that was wiped out - what wiped it out? Part Two documents evidence for this lost super race and their descendants. Who mapped Australia thousands of years before it was "discovered"?

***Paperback, 373 pages \$39.95 USD***

#### **THE ARK CONSPIRACY**

*Cover-ups, Betrayals and Miracles*

The cloak-and-dagger story behind the discovery of Noah's Ark and the attempts to suppress the news. Why some people reject the discovery. Solid evidence that this is the 'real' Noah's Ark. A true-life thriller - archaeology at its most exciting. ***Paperback, 192 pages \$27 USD***

**STING OF THE SCORPION**

*Astrology Exposed - The Truth Behind Star Names and Signs*

Ancient civilisations believed that a serpent - which represented the devil - took control of the world. They believed a virgin's baby would fight the serpent defeat him and bring peace, life and happiness to mankind.

The pictures on the sky map were used to describe the story and NOT to tell people's fortunes through the stars. The NAMES of the stars, as well as the star sign pictures told that story.

***Paperback, 118 pages \$18 USD***

**CURSE OF THE HATANA GODS**

*A Stunning Real-life Adventure in the Pacific*

One of the most isolated islands on earth is Rotuma, ancient home to a race of GIANTS. But Rotuma shielded a sinister secret, for which there was no scientific explanation. They called it THE CURSE OF HATANA. The evidence for the ANCIENT GIANTS and the incredible story of a face to face encounter with the CURSE are included in this book.

***Paperback, 96 pages \$15 USD***

**SINAI'S EXCITING SECRETS**

Things are happening at Mount Sinai in Arabia... a new top secret radar base; Bedouins digging up graves. New information and photos can now be revealed to the world. A compilation of data by John Keyser, Jonathan Gray and Mary Nell Wyatt. Spiral bound. ***76 pages \$20 USD***

**DISCOVERIES: QUESTIONS ANSWERED**

Did Wyatt lie about the blood? Did Gray "seriously edit" an Admiralty letter to prove a Red Sea land bridge? What's behind the "Answers in Genesis" Standish attack on the discoveries? Did scientists prove 'Noah's ARIC' to be a fake? Over 260 questions. Certificates, private letters and facts never before revealed. Input by numerous people. Our most explosive publication ever! Spiral bound. ***340 Pages \$57 USD***

**THE LOST WORLD OF GIANTS**

Were there really humans 12-15 feet tall? Discovered! – tools, artifacts and houses of ancient giants. Up to 97 giant discoveries all over the earth, and now ACTUAL PHOTOGRAPHS! Also, amazing reports of long-lived humans. “Killer” facts that shake the evolution theory! ***84 Pages, \$18 USD***

**THE BIZARRE ORIGIN OF EGYPT'S ANCIENT GODS.**

A 4,000-year-old scandal that affects our society today. Would you like to know why the most popular man in the world was executed? How a beautiful woman impersonated someone else, so as to be queen? Discover the advanced technology used by ancient Egyptians to make a “dead” man come “alive”. **78 pages, \$18 USD**

**64 SECRETS STILL AHEAD OF US.**

64 ways in which an earlier, forgotten science and technology was superior to our own. Learn of secret formulas that could revolutionise modern aviation, construction and medicine – advanced secrets we once knew and have forgotten. All together under one cover – a companion to Dead Men’s Secrets. **94 pages, \$18 USD**

**THE KILLING OF PARADISE PLANET.**

Secrets of that forgotten world BEFORE the Great Flood. Book 1 of a trilogy. What if everything in YOUR life changed suddenly in 24 hours? Astonishing city 6,000 feet under the Pacific Ocean. Elephants and tropical palm trees suddenly entombed in ice. Could you really live to be hundreds of years older? **192 pages. \$29.95 USD**

**SURPRISE WITNESS.**

What happened DURING the Great Flood, step by step. Book 2 of a trilogy. Fossil evidence of men, women, children and animals FLEEING. 30,000 volcanoes erupt. Waves 700 feet higher than New York’s Empire State building sweep the globe. What discovery has frightened paleontologists out of their wits? **216 pages. \$29.95 USD**

**THE CORPSE CAME BACK!**

Forgotten secrets of our earth SINCE the Great Disaster. Book 3 of a trilogy.

For the first time, see world history knit together in a way that makes sense. Mysterious civilizations in jungles and deserts. Boats found inside mountains and other odd discoveries. Do preserved racial genealogies REALLY trace back to Noah? **308 pages, \$ 29.95 USD**

**THE DISCOVERY THAT’S TOPPLING EVOLUTION**

The scientific bombshell that is set to devastate evolution. You are about to discover skeletons in locked cupboards, bones in forbidden places and secrets hidden under the carpet. You won’t believe in the immensity of the multi-million dollar cover-up. **217 pages – 37.00 USD**

**UFO ALIENS – THE DEADLY SECRET**

Are governments covering up hard core evidence of “other world” visitors? What about crashed UFOs and alien bodies? Did aliens really bring civilization to Planet Earth? Or is there some other explanation?  
**461 pages – 39.95 USD**

**STOLEN IDENTITY: JESUS CHRIST – HISTORY OR HOAX?**

The secret that could wreck the careers of many high profile “professional” people. Did Jesus Christ never really exist? Why are the stories and teachings of Jesus Christ, Krishna and Buddha so remarkably similar? **496 pages – 39.95 USD**

**THE DA VINCI CODE HOAX**

And the secret that men will kill to protect. Was Jesus as “God” decided by a church-and-state vote to consolidate power in the 4<sup>th</sup> century? Were some “secret books” left out of the Bible? Did Jesus Christ marry Mary Magdalene and have children? **364 pages – 37.00 USD**

**NEWSLETTER****REGULAR NEWSLETTER*****Quarterly Update International Newsletter Subscription***

All recent developments, discoveries and new materials are announced in this quarterly newsletter. Plus other significant archaeological finds around the world, and news of other important world developments relating to the coming New World Order.

**4 Issues, \$25 USD (or 15 English pounds)**

**NEWSLETTER BOOK - Volume I*****Spiral bound Book (Issues 1 to 10) of Update***

Covers all discoveries in which Jonathan and his associates are involved, with extra information including: ancient giants, dinosaurs, mysteries of ancient South America, surprises in the Grand Canyon, etc. Scores of photos, maps, and diagrams. **Spiral bound, \$47 USD**

**NEWSLETTER BOOK - Volume 2 (Issues 11 to 20)** Includes INDEX to all topics in Issues 1 to 20. **Spiral bound, \$47 USD**

**NEWSLETTER BOOK – Volume 3 (Issues 21 to 30)** **Spiral bound, \$47 USD**

**NEWSLETTER BOOK – Volume 4 (Issues 31 to 40)** Includes INDEX to all topics in Issues 1 to 40. *Spiral bound, \$47 USD*

**NEWSLETTER BOOK – Volume 5 (Issues 41 to 50)** *Spiral bound, \$47 USD*

## **CD ROM**

### **ARK OF THE COVENANT CD ROM**

This fully interactive CD-Rom takes you to the Virtual Interpretive Centre of the Ark of the Covenant discoveries. Join an introductory tour or view the exhibits yourself. Try the internet on-line conference. This CD-Rom is crammed with hundreds of photos and illustrations, over 1 hour of video, and screeds of text – most of which has never been seen in the world. Also contains information on four other major discoveries including; Noah's Ark, the Red Sea, etc. *Macintosh/PC \$40 USD*

## **DVDs *(\$30 each)***

### **SURPRISING DISCOVERIES 1**

*Stunning ancient technology and secrets of the past*

Seafloor, jungle and desert give up some amazing forgotten secrets.

### **SURPRISING DISCOVERIES 2**

***Part 1: Found Inside the Big Boat***

The search for the lost Ark. Discovered... a giant ship in the mountains.

Surprising objects recovered.

***Part 2: Into the Forbidden Valley***

When an archaeologist entered the “Valley of Eight” in search of Noah's grave, he little knew the dangers awaiting him. A misfortune becomes a blessing. *1 hour \$30 USD*

### **SURPRISING DISCOVERIES 3**

***The Lost Cities of Sodom and Gomorrah***

My night in the eeriest ghost town on earth. Cities deep in ash and sulphur balls that rained from the sky. Shock from the past. A furnace by day, scary by night. *1 hour \$30 USD.*

**SURPRISING DISCOVERIES 4*****And the Sea Will Tell (Red Sea crossing)***

Runaway slaves trapped by a superpower's well-equipped army - and the army vanishes! In search of Pharaoh's lost army... a grim discovery on the sea floor. **1 hour \$30 USD.**

**SURPRISING DISCOVERIES 5*****Ark of the Covenant***

A man dies... A government walks a knife-edge... Evidence of the long lost shrine of the Ten Commandments has surfaced...

Lost for 2,500 years... then the SEARCH. With movie footage never before seen in the world: Underground tunnel systems; Garden of Gethsemane; the Crucifixion site; Jesus Tomb; and a simulated flyover of objects inside the cavern. Why is there political pressure to keep the discovery underground? Will the Ark play a role in coming events under the New World Order? **2-3 hours \$30 USD**

**SURPRISING DISCOVERIES 6*****Strange Signs in the Sky.***

From the glories of distant galaxies...

... to the CODED MESSAGE of the ancient sky maps.

What were the ancients trying to tell us? **NOT ASTROLOGY!**

Why does a MAN tread on SCORPIO's head and fight with the SERPENT for the CROWN?

Why does VIRGO hold a CHILD in her arms called IESU?

Why did some ancient sages follow a star to a precise spot on earth?

What did they know? How were they so sure what they would find?

An amazing SIGN seen over the North Polar star NOW ... and linked to a prophecy. **75 mins, \$30 USD**

**SURPRISING DISCOVERIES 7*****Secrets of ancient South America***

Into the unmapped jungle of the Amazon headwaters... where savages shrink human heads.

Up into the dizzy heights of the Andes mountains to the lost city of women, ancient Inca fortress in the clouds.

And the strange floating islands of Lake Titicaca a vertical two miles above sea level.

See what happens when a high civilisation turns its back on divine law... AND more! **1 hour. \$30 USD**

**SURPRISING DISCOVERIES 8**

***In a Coffin in Egypt***

Mysteries and wonders of ancient Egypt. Into the secret tunnels of Sakkara. Deep under the desert sands, a mysterious tomb.

Joseph's Canal and Joseph's grain pits.

The incredible story of a vanishing mummy... and prophecies to make Nostradamus look pale. **81 minutes. \$30 USD**

Jonathan Gray c/o John Paige  
P.O.Box 30  
Serpentine. Vic. 3517  
Australia.  
Tel: + 61 (0)3 54 378246  
Fax: + 61 (0)3 5437 8424  
(delete "0" for internationalcalls)  
Email: graysales@bigpond.com  
www.surprisingdiscoveries.com

**New Zealand**

Surprising Discoveries  
P.O. Box 785  
Thames 3540  
New Zealand

